



WHITNEY'S MODERN LANGUAGE BOOKS.

FRENCH.

A FRENCH GRAMMAR. With Exercises and Illustrative Sentences from French Authors. 12mo, 442 pp.

PRACTICAL FRENCH. Taken from the author's larger Grammar, and supplemented by Conversations and Idiomatic Phrases. 12mo, 304 pp.

GERMAN.

A COMPENDIOUS GERMAN GRAMMAR. 12mo, 303 pp.

BRIEF GERMAN GRAMMAR. 16mo, 143 pp.

GERMAN READER. 12mo, 523 pp.

GERMAN-ENGLISH DICTIONARY. 8vo, 900 pp.

GERMAN TEXTS. Edited by Prof. W. D. WHITNEY.

Lessing's *Manna von Barnhelm*. Annotated by W. D. WHITNEY, Prof. in Yale College. 16mo, 138 pp.

Schiller's *Wilhelm Tell*. Annotated by Prof. A. SACHLEBEN, of Charleston, S. C. 16mo, 199 pp.

Goethe's *Faust*. Annotated by WM. COOK. 16mo, 229 pp.

Goethe's *Iphigenie auf Tauris*. Annotated by Prof. FRANKLIN CARTER, Williams College. 16mo, 113 pp.

Schiller's *Maria Stuart*. Annotated by E. S. JOYNES, Prof. in University of South Carolina. 16mo, 222 pp.

Lessing's *Nathan der Weise*. Annotated by H. C. G. BRANDT, Prof. in Hamilton College. 16mo, 158 pp.

WHITNEY-KLEMM GERMAN SERIES.

By WILLIAM D. WHITNEY, and L. R. KLEMM.

RUDIMENTS OF GERMAN. (*In Preparation.*)

GERMAN BY PRACTICE. 12mo, 305 pp.

ELEMENTARY GERMAN READER. 12mo, 237 pp.

HENRY HOLT & CO, PUBLISHERS, NEW YORK.

PRACTICAL FRENCH

*Taken from the Author's Larger Grammar,
and Supplemented by*

CONVERSATIONS and IDIOMATIC PHRASES

BY

WILLIAM DWIGHT WHITNEY



NEW YORK
HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY

F. W. CHRISTERN

BOSTON: CARL SCHOENHOF

PC2111
.W55
1887

COPYRIGHT, 1887,
BY
HENRY HOLT & CO.

PREFACE.

THIS volume is the outcome of the author's experience as a teacher of French during many years. The design had in view in it has been to furnish a text-book which should combine the advantages of practice and theory in a higher degree than others now existing. To this end, the most important facts of the language have been grouped and arranged in a series of Lessons, in an order suggested by practical convenience, each Lesson being accompanied by sufficient Exercises. The general plan, while not unlike the method followed in many grammars, is so far accordant especially with that of the widely used and valued "Conversation-Grammar" of Otto, that it may fairly be said to be founded upon the latter—though no more than that, since both text and Exercises are entirely new, and deviations from the older plan not only numerous, but of much importance. As one example among many, a more systematic course is followed in the important item of the learner's introduction to the verbs: all the principal forms are learned and practised, one after another, before any complete paradigm is set forth; and the commonest and most useful of the irregular verbs are worked in by degrees, before they are taken up as a body. It is believed that the method here adopted of presenting and teaching the irregular verbs has decided practical advantages over any other, and lightens, as much as it is possible to lighten, this heaviest burden in French grammar. In the Exercises, care has been taken not to embarrass the learner

with long lists of words of which little use is to be made, but rather to make him practise over and over a more limited and slowly increasing vocabulary.

If, in the case of any class, the Lessons are found too long, the intelligent teacher will easily divide the Exercises, returning to take up what was omitted, in the course of that review and reiteration by which alone the desired degree of mastery of the material can be obtained. Where an early introduction to reading is especially aimed at, the Exercises may be reduced to a minimum, and (so much like English are French words and construction) a Reader or a text can be taken up as soon as the auxiliaries, the regular conjugations, and a few of the commonest irregular verbs are learned. This summary process will be greatly aided by the French Vocabulary, in which are to be found, besides many of the oftenest-used words of the language, nearly all the form-words—the auxiliaries, the articles and pronouns, and the prepositions and conjunctions—with full references to the explanations and illustrations of their use that are given in the volume. In this Vocabulary are also furnished, in a brief and unsystematic form, the Latin (and other) etymologies of French words, as an encouragement and aid to that comparison of French with its mother-tongue which is both in itself of high interest and value, and a practical help to any one who has already studied Latin.

The pronunciation of a new language is not a thing that can be learned out of a book and by rule; it must be gotten through the ear of the pupil from the mouth of the teacher. Yet there is sufficient consistency in French orthography to render it possible to hold a pupil, after sufficient introductory practice, to responsibility for not making too blundering work of uttering a word that is normally pronounced, or even of an exceptional one that he has met with before. In order to this, however, distinct statements as to the facts of pronunciation are re-

quired. And they are of no small value to the teacher also, unless he have enjoyed very exceptional advantages. It is partly in view of the needs of the great majority of teachers not French by birth or education, that so much fulness has been given in this work to the preliminary chapter on pronunciation, and that all the commoner words that are exceptionally pronounced (whether they do or do not occur in the Exercises and Themes) are entered, marked as such, in the Vocabularies. Different teachers will make different use of the chapter in instruction, according to their various training and habit. It is believed, however, that a class of beginners may to their decided advantage be required to learn at the outset certain points: namely, the division of syllables (4*a*, *b*); to name correctly the orthographic marks (5-10); to tell when *e* is mute (18); the value of *y* as double *i* (37); the chief rules as to the nasal vowels (46-7, 52, 53); those as to final consonants (56*a*, *b*); as to *ch* (59); to *gn* (63); to *h* (64*a*, *e*); to liquid *l* (68, 68*e*); to *r* (73, 73*a*); to *s* pronounced as *z* (74*a*); to *ti* in endings (77*a*); and as to the linking of final consonants (84*a*, *b*, 85*b*, 86*a*). The rest may well be left to oral teaching, one and another rule being later brought in as found desirable: especially, the pupil will need further on to note the rules as to the occurrence of mute *e* and *é* and *è* (19, 20*a*, 21*a*), which settle so many cases of otherwise doubtful orthography.

At the end of the volume are appended a few conversations, illustrations of the idiomatic usages of French and English, and a list of the verbs governing the infinitive in French, with explanations of their construction. All these, it is believed, will be found useful auxiliaries by a well-instructed teacher.

The "Second Part" here and there referred to is a supplement and successor to the main part of the work as here given, and constituting together with it the "Practical French Grammar, with Exercises, and Illustrative Sen-

tences from French Authors," published last year. It presents a fuller and more penetrating view of the usages of the language, especially of the syntactical usages. It is not divided into Lessons, but follows the usual order of subjects in a systematic grammar, adding under each subject sentences excerpted from French authors of repute, in illustration of the rules given and principles stated. English Themes are also given, for further practice in applying the rules. A succinct view of the relations of French to Latin introduces the Part.

YALE COLLEGE, NEW HAVEN, *June*, 1887.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

The references are to pages only.

| | PAGE |
|--|--------|
| ALPHABET AND PRONUNCIATION, | 1-26 |
| <p>Alphabet, 1-2 ; division of syllables, 2 ; accents and other orthographic marks, 2-4 ; accent, 4 ; pronunciation of the simple vowels, 4-10 ; of the digraphs or vowel compounds, 11-2 ; of the nasal vowels, 12-5 ; of the consonants, 15-25 ; linking or carrying-on of final consonants, 25-6.</p> | |
| LESSONS, WITH EXERCISES, | 27-198 |
| I. Gender, articles, etc. ; present of avoir , | 27 |
| II. Plural of nouns ; present of être , | 30 |
| III. The prepositions à and de ; imperfect of avoir and être , | 33 |
| IV. Partitive and inclusive senses of the noun ; preterit of do. , | 36 |
| V. Material and measure ; future of do. , | 40 |
| VI. Prepositions ; proper names ; conditional of do. , | 43 |
| VII. Adjectives—gender ; imperative of do. , | 46 |
| VIII. Adjectives—number, position ; present subjunctive of do. , | 50 |
| IX. Adjectives—comparison ; imperfect subjunctive of do. , | 54 |
| X. Conjugation—the verb avoir <i>have</i> , | 57 |
| XI. Conjugation of the verb être <i>be</i> , | 62 |
| XII. Negative conjugation, | 65 |
| XIII. Demonstrative and interrogative adjectives, | 69 |
| XIV. Possessive and indefinite adjectives, | 72 |
| XV. Cardinal numerals, | 76 |
| XVI. Ordinal numerals, | 79 |
| XVII. Numerals continued—months and week-days, | 82 |
| XVIII. Regular verbs ; first conjugation, | 85 |

| | PAGE |
|---|---------|
| XIX. Second regular conjugation, | 90 |
| XX. Third regular conjugation, | 94 |
| XXI. Irregular verbs: first conjugation, | 98 |
| XXII. Conjunctive personal pronouns, | 102 |
| XXIII. Disjunctive and conjunctive pronouns, | 107 |
| XXIV. Demonstrative pronouns; irregular verbs, vouloir , | 111 |
| XXV. Interrogative pronouns; the irregular verb pouvoir , | 117 |
| XXVI. Relative pronouns; the irregular verb devoir , | 121 |
| XXVII. Possessive and indefinite pronouns; the ir- regular verb aller , | 126 |
| XXVIII. Passive verbs; auxiliaries, | 131 |
| XXIX. Reflexive verbs, | 135 |
| XXX. Impersonal verbs, | 139 |
| XXXI. Adverbs from adjectives; the irregular verb venir , | 143 |
| XXXII. Various adverbs; the irregular verb faire , | 148 |
| XXXIII. Prepositions; the irregular verb dire , | 153 |
| XXXIV. Conjunctions; the irregular verb savoir , | 157 |
| XXXV. Irregular verbs ending in ire (1-14) , | 162 |
| XXXVI. Irregular verbs in aindre etc. and aître etc. (15-20), | 166 |
| XXXVII. Further irregular verbs in re (21-29) , | 171 |
| XXXVIII. The remaining irregular verbs in re (30-37) , | 175 |
| XXXIX. Irregular verbs in ir (38-51) , | 180 |
| XL. The remaining irregular verbs in ir (52-64) , | 185 |
| XLI. Irregular verbs in oir (65-71) , | 190 |
| XLII. The remaining irregular verbs in oir , and those in er (72-83) , | 194 |
| INDEX OF IRREGULAR VERBS, SIMPLE AND COMPOUND, | 199-201 |
| INFINITIVE CONSTRUCTIONS, | 202 |
| VOCABULARIES: | |
| I. French-English Vocabulary, | 207 |
| II. English-French Vocabulary, | 232 |
| FAMILIAR CONVERSATIONS, | 247 |
| IDIOMATIC PHRASES, | 267 |
| GENERAL INDEX, | 299 |

FIRST PART.

ALPHABET AND PRONUNCIATION.

For suggestions as to the use of this introductory chapter on pronunciation, see the Preface.

ALPHABET.

1. The French alphabet is the same with the English.

a. But the letters **k** and **w** occur only in a few words, borrowed out of other languages.

2. The letters of the alphabet and their names are as follows (the names pronounced as French words):

| | | | |
|---------------|---------------|---------------|--------------------|
| a a | h ache | o o | u u |
| b bé | i i | p pé | v vé |
| c cé | j ji | q ku | w double vé |
| d dé | k ka | r erre | x iks |
| e é | l elle | s esse | y i grec |
| f effe | m emme | t té | z zèd |
| g gé | n enne | | |

a. In reading and spelling, however, it is now common to name each consonant by its own sound followed by a mute **e** (18), which is pronounced only just enough to let the character of the consonant be distinguished: thus, for **b**, **be** instead of **bé**; for **g**, **gue** or **je** (according as the **g** is hard or soft) instead of **gé**; and so on. But when any letter is named by itself, it is always by the name given in the above table.

3. USE OF CAPITALS.—As regards the use of capitals, French agrees in general with English, but with the following important exceptions:

a. An adjective derived from a proper name does not take a capital when used as an adjective, but only when it has the value of a noun.

Thus, **un livre français**, a *French book*, but **un Français**, a *Frenchman*; **des chevaux américains**, *American horses*, but **des Américains**, *Americans*.

b. The names of the days of the week and of the months are not written with capitals in French.

Thus, **lundi**, *Monday*, **juin**, *June*.

c. The word for *I*, namely **je**, is not written with a capital.

DIVISION OF SYLLABLES.

4. The rules as to how a French word is to be divided into syllables are of much practical importance in their bearing on the mute **e** (18) and on the nasal vowels (46).

a. A single consonant between vowels always belongs to the following vowel.

Thus, **fi-ni**, **ai-me-rai**, **dé-cou-ra-ger**, **gé-né-reu-se-ment**, **i-ni-mi-ta-bi-li-té**.

b. Also two consonants, if they are such as may begin a French word, belong to the following vowel.

Thus, **a-près**, **ré-gler**, **a-bri**, **é-clos**, **a-droit**, **trè-fle**, **ou-tre**, **ou-vris**.

Such groups have **r** or **l** as their final member: they are **br**, **bl**; **cr**, **cl**; **dr**; **fr**, **fl**; **gr**, **gl**; **pr**, **pl**; **tr**; **vr**.

c. A consonant digraph, or group of two consonants representing a single sound, is treated as if one consonant only; such are **ch**, **ph**, **th**, **gn**: thus, **a-che-ter**, **pro-phé-ti-e**, **pa-thé-ti-que**, **a-gneau**.

d. Other groups of two consonants are divided, the former consonant going to the preceding vowel, the latter to the following vowel: thus, **al-ler**, **frap-per**, **in-su**, **es-pé-ran-ce**, **ad-mi-ra-ble**.

e. Groups of three or more consonants follow the same principles of division: thus, **com-bler**, **per-dre**, **in-stant**.

f. A few exceptional cases occur: **x** belongs to the preceding vowel, as **ex-em-ple**; **n** and **h** (in words of compound origin) are divided, though the **h** is silent, as **bon-heur**; also divide **in-strui-re**, **at-mo-sphè-re**, etc.

ACCENTS AND OTHER ORTHOGRAPHIC MARKS.

5. Three accent-marks are used in French, and constitute a part of the necessary written form of French words. They are the ACUTE ACCENT, as in **été**, **créé**; the

GRAVE ACCENT, as in *dès, là, où*; and the CIRCUMFLEX ACCENT, as in *pâte, fête, île, hôte, fûtes*.

a. These accent-marks do not at all point out the actually accented syllable of a word; but they in part show differences of vowel-sound, in part are means of distinction of words otherwise spelt alike, and in part show something respecting the history of the word.

b. It is just as great a fault in writing French to leave off an accent or to write a wrong accent, as to leave out a letter or to write a wrong letter.

c. In spelling, the accent should always be mentioned along with the vowel to which it belongs: thus, *été* is "e acute, t, e acute"; *à* is "a grave"; *île* is "i circumflex, l, e"; and so on.

6. *a.* The acute accent occurs only on the vowel *e*.

b. The grave occurs almost always on *e*; but also on *a* in a very few words (16), and on *u* in *où, where*.

c. The circumflex occurs on all vowels, usually as a sign of contraction, and in the great majority of cases showing the loss of an *s*, formerly written after the vowel now circumflexed: thus, *hâte* for older *haste* (Eng. *haste*), *fête* for *feste* (Eng. *feast*), *hôte* for *hoste* (Eng. *host*), *île* for *isle* (Eng. *isle*), *fûtes* for *fustes* (Lat. *fuistis*), *maître* for *maistre* (Eng. *master*), *coûter* for *couster* (Eng. *cost*), and so on.

7. The CEDILLA is a mark placed under a *c* (thus, *ç*), to give it its soft or *s*-sound before the vowels *a, o, u* (where it would otherwise be pronounced hard, like *k*: 58*b*): thus, *plaça, façon, reçu, ç'a*.

8. The DIERESIS (Fr. *tréma*) is a double dot, set (as sometimes also in English) over a vowel which is to be pronounced separately from a preceding vowel, not forming with it a diphthong: thus, *hair* (i.e. *ha-ir*), *ouï* (i.e. *ou-i*).

a. It is also used on the vowel that follows a *gu*, if the *u* is to be pronounced (compare 62*f*): thus, *ambiguîté, ambiguë* (where the *e* itself is silent).

9. The APOSTROPHE shows, as in English, the loss of a final vowel which has been cut off before another vowel: thus, *l'ami, s'il*.

a. The vowel thus cut off is almost always *e* (26*c*); but in a few cases it is *a* (15) or *i* (29*b*).

10. The HYPHEN is used, as in English, but more frequently and strictly, between parts of words, and whole words regarded as having an especially close connection with one another. The cases where it is required will be stated below.

ACCENT.

11. The actual accent, or stress of voice on one of the syllables of a word of two or more syllables, rests in French on the last syllable that is fully pronounced—i.e. that does not have as its vowel a mute *e*.

Thus, palais', mala'de, maladroit', maladroi'te, mélancoli'e, indubita'ble, réconcilier', réconciliè'rent, indivisibilité'.

a. This accented syllable regularly and usually represents the one which had the accent in Latin; see Part Second, § 2*a*.

b. But the stress of voice is very slight. In general, the syllables of a French word (except those containing a mute *e*) are uttered with equal distinctness and nearly even stress.

c. This evenness of utterance, and equal distinctness of vowel sound in all the syllables of a word, is one of the most striking peculiarities of French pronunciation as compared with English, and cannot be too much insisted on and practised.

PRONUNCIATION OF THE VOWELS.

12. QUANTITY.—There is no strongly-marked distinction of long and short vowels in French, such as there is in English (and in German). French vowels are in general short, though sometimes a little prolonged—oftenest before a final pronounced *r*, and when circumflexed.

13. **A, a.**—*a.* When final, or followed at the end of a word only by a silent consonant or by *r*, *a* has very nearly the full open sound of English *a* in *far* or *father*.

Thus, *ira, donna, la, a, cas, bras, plat, drap, car.*

b. Elsewhere, *a* is a little flattened, like English *a* in *flat, cap, jack*, only not quite so much so.

Thus, **ami**, **animal**, **cabane**, **malade**, **bague**, **place**, **passe**, **âme**, **pâte**, **âge**, **château**.

c. For **an** and **am** nasal, see 48.

14. The **a** is silent in **août**, *August*, **aoûteron**, *reaper*, **taon**, *horse-fly*, **Caen**, **Curaçao** (last syllable), **Saône**.

15. The final **a** of **la** (article and object-pronoun) is cut off before a vowel (or a silent **h**): thus, **l'amie**, **l'histoire**, **il l'aime**.

a. But not that of **la** as pronoun after the verb, except before another object-pronoun: thus, **trouve-la aimable**; but **envoyez-l'y**.

16. An **a** has the grave accent in the preposition **à**, *to*, and the adverbs **là**, *there* (with most of its compounds, but not **cela**, *that*), and **çà**, *here* (with its compound **décà**, *on this side*), to distinguish these words from **a** (verb), **la** (article and pronoun), and **ça** (pronoun); also in **déjà**, *already* (and the almost obsolete **jà**). It often has the circumflex; but never the acute.

17. **E**, **e**.—This vowel has in French a greater variety of written form and of pronunciation than any other, being written as **e**, **é**, **è**, **ê**, and pronounced with a mute, a closer, and an opener sound.

18. MUTE OR SILENT **e**.—*a*. A simple **e** (that is, one without accent-sign) standing at the end of a syllable (4) has the so-called "mute" or "silent" value (**e muet**): that is, it is pronounced as briefly and lightly as possible, and what sound it has is like that of English *u* in *hut* or *hurt*.

b. The sound is quite precisely that in English *the* before a consonant in real colloquial utterance: thus, "tell us *the* name of *the* man." Examples are **le**, **me**, **de**, **te-nir**, **re-gard**, **re-gar-de**, **re-le-va**, **ra-me-na**, **en-ne-mi**. In many situations—especially at the end of a word of more than one syllable, as **table**, **rare**, **ma-chine**, **abortive**—it is in ordinary utterance entirely silent; but still it makes theoretically a syllable (thus, **ra-re**, **ma-chi-ne**, **a-bor-ti-ve**), which counts as such in poetry, and in singing must be uttered as much as any other syllable. In learning French pronunciation, the pupil must first be able to give the right sound to the vowel, and then duly to slight or omit it.

c. The same sound belongs also to the **e** of **es** at the end of a word (excepting in the monosyllables **les**, **des**, **ces**, **mes**, **tes**, **ses**), and to that of **ent** at the end of the 3d pers. plural of a verb: thus, **rares**, **machines**, **certes**, **donnes**, **donnent**, **regardent**, **donnassent**.

d. More exceptional cases are **dessus**, **dessous**, **ressource**, and most other words beginning with **ress-**; also **faisant** etc. (39*e*), and **monsieur** (54*b*).

e. The **e** of **je**, *I*, when following the verb, is completely silent, in the same manner as at the end of a word of more than one syllable: thus, **ai-je**, *have I?* pronounced as if written **aige**; **suis-je**, *am I?* as if **suige**; **avais-je**, *had I?* as if **avaige**; and so on.

19. The acute and grave accents, as used on **e**, are signs giving it a full pronunciation, where otherwise it would be mute. No **é** or **è** is ever written unless without the accent the **e** would (by the rules of the preceding paragraph) have its mute value.

20. *a.* As between the acute and grave, the general rule is that the grave is written if a next following syllable in the same word is a mute one; otherwise, the acute.

Thus, **pè-re**, **chè-re**, **lè-ve**, **cè-de**, **mè-ne-rai**, **pè-le-rin**; but **cé-der**, **cé-da**, **cé-dé**, **cé-lé-bri-té**; and **dé-cè-de**, **cé-lè-bre**, **cé-lè-brent**, **pré-fè-res**, **té-nè-bres**.

But to this rule there are some exceptions:

b. An **é** remains in the future and conditional of a verb having **é** in the infinitive: thus, **cé-de-rai**, **cé-de-rais**.

c. An **é**, and not **è**, is usually written before **g**: thus, **col-lé-ge**, **ab-ré-ge**.

But the French Academy has recently ruled that **è** should stand before **g**, just as before other consonants: thus, **collè-ge**, **abrè-ge**.

d. On the other hand, **è** is written before **s** at the end of a few words: thus, **dès**, **très**, **près**, **après**, **exprès**, **progrès**, **succès**.

e. There are a few other special exceptions: thus, only **é** is initial, as in **é-le-ver**; **é** is used in certain individual words, as **dé-velopper**, **événement**, **médecin**.

21. *a.* It is to be noted that the occurrence of two successive mute syllables in the same word is generally avoided. Thus, no word is ever composed of, or ends in, two mute syllables; nor do two often come together in the middle of a word; at the beginning they are not quite so rare (especially when **re** or **de** is prefixed to a verb already beginning with a mute syllable, as **venir**,

revenir, devenir, and even redevenir). And no word ever begins with a mute e.

b. Hence, such words as **leve, mene, jete, chere, complete, appeles, leves, menes, cheres**, or (as 3d pl. of a verb) **levant, mement**, are impossible in French; and wherever they would occur in the regular processes of word-formation or inflection, the concurrence of the two mute syllables is avoided by giving a full pronunciation to the first. This is oftenest done by writing the grave accent over it: thus, **lève, mène, chère, complète, mènes, mènent**—but sometimes by doubling the consonant (if it be **l** or **n** or **t**) instead: thus, **belle (bel-le), appellees, sienne, prenent** (3d pl.), **nette, jette**.

c. Hence also (since a following **je** is pronounced as if a part of the same word with a preceding verb: **18e**) the final **e** of a verb-form before **je** takes an accent, and this accent is the acute: thus, **donné-je**.

22. The **e** with acute accent, or **é**, has the sound of English so-called “long *a*,” in *day* and *they*, and the like (yet without the vanishing sound of “long *e*,” with which our “long *a*” usually ends). It is called the close **e** (**e fermé**).

23. The **e** with grave accent, or **è**, has an opener sound, nearly like our “short *e*,” in *ebb*, *send*, and the like; and it even in some cases, especially before a following **r**, approaches our still opener sound of *e* in *there* and the like. It is called the open **e** (**e ouvert**).

24. The **e** with circumflex accent, or **ê**, has the open sound, like **è**.

a. The **ê** is not, like **é** and **è**, restricted to situations where the **e** would otherwise be mute, but it is found (though not often) before a consonant in the same syllable: thus, **forêt, benêt**.

25. An **e** that is followed by a consonant in the same syllable (whether that consonant be pronounced or silent) is not mute, but has either the closer sound of **é** or the opener of **è**.

a. It has the closer sound in the final syllables (with silent consonants) **er, ez, ed**: thus, **citer, chantier, nez, citez, pied**.

b. It has the opener sound before a pronounced **r** (whether

final or not), and usually before a double consonant; also before (silent) **t** final: thus, **fer, verre, elle, nette, mienne, richesse, valet.**

26. **E** in a few words has an irregular pronunciation:

a. It is pronounced as an **a** would be, before **n** and **m**, in **femme, woman, solennel, solemn**, and its derivatives, and adverbs ending in **-emment**; also in **nenni, nay, hennir, neigh, indemnité, indemnity.**

b. It is sometimes used after **g** merely as a device for showing that the **g** is to have its soft sound, being itself not pronounced (62*e*): thus, **mangeai, mangeons.**

c. The final mute **e** of a monosyllable is generally cut off before a vowel, and replaced by an apostrophe.

Such monosyllables are: the article **le**; the pronouns **je, me, te, se, ce, le, que**; the preposition **de**; the conjunction **que**; the negative particle **ne**. But the subject-pronouns **je** and **ce** are not thus abbreviated when they come after the verb; nor the object-pronoun **le** in the same position, except before another object-pronoun, as **envoyez-l'y.**

The same elision takes place also in **jusque**; and in **lorsque, puisque, quoique** before **il, elle, on, un.** Further, in a few compound words, as **quelqu'un, presqu'île, entr'acte, aujourd'hui.**

d. For **en** and **em** nasal, see 48.

27. **I, i.**—The vowel **i** has in French invariably the sound of English “long *e*,” or of *i* in the words *machine, pique.*

Thus, **il, ri, vite, ici, midi, défini, divisé, visibilité.**

a. The error of pronouncing a French **i** anywhere like the English “short *i*” of *pin, finish*, and the like, must be very carefully avoided.

b. For **i** before a liquid **l**, see 68; for **in** and **im** nasal, see 50.

28. *a.* An **i** followed by mute **e** has, of course, its full pronunciation, the **e** being the vowel of a succeeding mute syllable: thus, **vie, amies, rient** (divided **vi-e, a-mi-es, ri-ent**).

b. But an **i** followed in the same syllable by an **e** not mute, or by any other vowel (or diphthong), is uttered very briefly, as a mere *y*-prefix to the following sound: thus, **pied, ciel, métier, étiez, arrière, arriéré, vierge, vienne, vient, vieille, lieu, monsieur, viole, avions, fiacre, diable, bestiaux.** And even if the **i** is (in verse) regarded as forming a separate syllable, it is apt to lose more or less of its full quantity before another vowel: thus, **manier, prière, pieux, mendiant, niais, action.**

29. *a.* An *i* never takes any other accent-mark than the circumflex : thus, *île, plaît, fit, maître*.

b. A final *i* is elided only in the conjunction *si, if*, before the pronouns *il, ils, he, they* : thus, *s'il, s'ils*.

30. **O, o.**—*a.* The vowel *o* has in general the sound of the English *o* in *note* (but without the vanishing sound of *oo*, in which the English “long *o*” usually ends).

It is so pronounced especially when it is circumflexed, or is the final sound of a word : thus, *côte, nôtre, rôle, trône, mot, cachot, trop, nos*.

b. But in many words *o* has an opener sound, approaching that of English *o* in *not* (or midway between that and the *o* of *come*); and before a final *r*-sound it comes near to our *o* in *nor*.

Thus, *robe, mode, Rome, dogue, école, dorer, notre, porter, occuper, modeste*; and *or, mort, corps*.

31. *a.* The *o* is silent in *faon, fawn; paon, peacock; Laon* (pronounced as *fan*, etc.).

b. An *o* never takes any other accent-mark than the circumflex : thus, *hôte, rôti, hôpital*.

c. For the diphthong *oi*, see 43; for *on* and *om* nasal, see 49.

32. **U, u.**—The French *u* has a sound unlike anything in English (but precisely agreeing with that of the German “modified *u*,” or “*u* with *umlaut*,” written *ü*). It is produced by a combination of that position of the tongue with which *ee* (as in *meet*) is made, with that position of the lips with which *oo* (as in *moot*) is made. Fix the tongue, then, to say *ee*, and, without moving it, round the lips as if to say *oo*, and the product is the sound desired.

Thus, *vu, dû, nul, pure, sûre, sucre, minute, férule, occuper, multitude, minuscule*.

33. *a.* **U** is generally silent after **q**; for the exceptions, see under **q** (72*b*).

b. **U** is also regularly silent after **g**, when itself followed by another vowel, usually **e** or **i**, except when the following **e** or **i** has the diæresis (see 8): thus, *guerre, guide, langue, longueur, fatigue, fatigué, voguer, vogua, vogueons*. For the exceptions, see under **g** (62*f*).

c. The **um** at the end of a Latin word is pronounced nearly as in English: thus, **forum, album**. In **mameluk** and a few other foreign words, it has the sound of English *oo*.

d. For **un** and **um** nasal, see 51.

34. **U** often has the circumflex accent: thus, **dû, mûr, chûte, fût, fûtes**. It never takes the acute; nor the grave except in **où** where (for distinction from **ou or**).

35. A **u** followed by a mute **e** keeps its own full sound: thus, **vue, vues, saluent** (3d pl.). But before any other vowel—namely, **a, i, and e** not mute—in the same syllable, it is abbreviated and slighted, becoming nearly like English *w*, while the following vowel has the principal vowel-sound of the syllable. Thus, in words where it is by exception pronounced after **g** and **q**, **lingual, linguiste, Guise, loquace, loquèle, équestre**; after other consonants (where it retains more of the peculiar French sound of **u**), **lui, ennui, autrui, fruit, fuite, cuir, nuire, suivre, cuisse, puisant, duel, écuelle**.

36. **Y, y**.—The sound of **y**, when it is the vowel of a syllable, is the same with that of **i**: thus, **y, style, système, syllabe, physique, Yves**.

a. The value of **i** belongs to **y** also when followed in the same syllable by another vowel, as in **yeux, eyes, Yonne**, and a few other proper names and foreign words.

37. A **y** between two vowels has the value of double **i**, or **i-i**, one of the **i**'s belonging to the vowel of the preceding syllable, the other (as a brief *y*-like prefix: 28*b*) to that of the following syllable.

Thus, **essayer** is pronounced as if written **essai-ier**; **appuyer**, as if **appui-ier**; **envoyer**, as if **envoi-ier**; and so on.

a. The same value belongs to the **y** in **pays** (pronounced as if written **pai-is**), and in its derivatives **paysage, paysan**.

b. A **y** is not allowed as final, nor in general before mute **e**; and, both in derivation and in inflection, the interchange of **i** and **y**, according as final or not, and as a mute **e** or any fully pronounced vowel follows, is very common: thus, **joie, joyeux; roi, royal; aie, ayons, ayez, aient; appuie, appuies, appuyons, appuyez, appuient**; and so on.

c. But **y** is in some verbs allowed to stand after **a** even before mute **e**, as **essaye**; and it is the rule (though rare) after **e**, as **grasseye, asseye**.

DIPHTHONGS OR VOWEL COMPOUNDS.

38. There are a few very common combinations of two vowels (or three), which represent for the most part simple sounds, but which are commonly called diphthongs; they are **ai** and **ei**, **au** (and **eau**), **eu** (and **œu**), **ou**, and **oi**.

a. It is to be noticed that real diphthongal sounds, like those in English *file*, *foul*, *foil*, are altogether wanting in French.

b. As to vowels followed by mute **e**, see 45; as to the vowel-groups, compound both in form and in pronunciation, which begin with **i** and **u**, see 28*b*, 35.

39. **Ai** and **ei**.—These compounds have no other sounds than those of **e** when not mute, or of **é** or **è**.

a. **Ai** final is pronounced as **é**: thus, **gai**, **donnai**, **donnerai**. Elsewhere, it is usually like **è**, especially in the endings **ais**, **ait**: thus, **étais**, **aurait**.

b. **Ei** (which is never final) has usually the sound that **e** (not mute) would have in the same situation: thus, **peine**, **reine**.

c. In certain forms of the verb **faire**, *do* (XXXII. 8)—namely, the pres. pple. **faisant** and those following its analogy, also in the compounds of **faisant** and the derivatives **faisance** and **fai-seur**—**ai** is pronounced as a silent **e**.

d. For **ai** and **ei** nasal, with following **n** or **m**, see 50*c*; for their pronunciation before liquid **l**, see 68*b*.

40. **Au** and **eau** are pronounced as **o** would be in the same situation.

Thus, **au**, **eau**, **beau**, **beauté**, **tombeau**, **chevaux**, **aurai**, **Maure**.

41. **Eu** has a peculiar sound, nearly like that of English *u* in *fur*, *hurt* (or nearly like German *ö*).

Thus, **feu**, **lieu**, **leur**, **veuve**, **jeune**, **peuple**, **aveugle**, **heureux**.

a. **œu**, which is much less common, is pronounced in the same manner as **eu**: thus, **vœu**, **œuf**, **bœuf**, **œuvre**.

b. In all parts of the very common verb **avoir**, *have*, **eu** is pronounced as if simple **u** (32): thus, **eu**, **eue**, **eus**, **eurent**, **eusse**, etc. The same is true in a few words after **g**, where the **e** is only written in order to preserve the soft sound of the **g** (62*e*): thus, **mangeure**, **gageure**.

c. In a word or two occurs **œ** before liquid **l** (68: written **il**); it is pronounced like **eu**: thus, **œil**, *eye*.

d. After **c** and **g**, before liquid **l** (written **il** or **ill**), in a very

few words, **ue** is written instead of **eu**, and is pronounced like **eu**: thus, **cueillir, orgueil**.

e. For **eu** nasal, with following **n**, see 51.

42. **Ou**.—The combination **ou** is everywhere pronounced like English *oo*, in *pool, boon*, etc.

Thus, **ou, où (34), cou, bout, hiboux, coupe, source, courte, joujou, douloureux**.

a. In a few words, **ou** is followed in the same syllable by a pronounced vowel (not mute **e**). In such a case, the following vowel has the principal vowel-sound of the syllable, and the **ou** is shortened before it to a sound nearly like that of English *w*: thus, **oui, ouais, ouest, bivouac, fouet, fouetter**, etc.

43. **Oi**.—The combination **oi**, which is extremely common in French, is everywhere pronounced like the English *wa* in *was* (not with the broader sound of *wa* in *water*).

Thus, **moi, soi, foi, oiseau, toile, ploie, cloître, crois, trois, adroite, froideur, proie**.

a. The **i** is silent in **oignon, onion**.

44. *a.* As to **oy** as substitute and equivalent of **oi-i**, see 37; as to **oi** nasal, with following **n** or **m**, see 50*d*.

b. Until recently, many syllables now written with **ai** were written with **oi**, and the latter spelling is still occasionally met with: thus, **étois, Anglois, connoître, foible**, and so on. They should be pronounced as when written with **ai**. It is still in good usage to write **oi** in **roide** and its derivatives, but the usual pronunciation is that of **raide**.

45. As after **i (28a)** and **u (35)**, so also after **é** and the vowel-compounds, a mute **e** may stand without making (in prose) any difference in their pronunciation: thus, **fée, crée, créés, créent (3d pl.); gaie, gaies, aient (3d pl.); bleue, bleues; moue, loue, loues, louent (3d pl.); oie, croie, croies, croient (3d pl.); pluie, appuie, appuies, appuient**. In all such cases, the **e** is the vowel of an additional mute syllable: thus, **fé-e, lou-es, croi-ent**.

NASAL VOWELS.

46. If a vowel, simple or compound, is followed in the same syllable by **n** or **m**, the **n** or **m** loses its separate pronunciation, and the vowel itself is made nasal.

a. A nasal vowel is one that is pronounced partly through the mouth and partly through the nose: that is, while the mouth-

organs are fixed as in the utterance of an ordinary vowel, the passage from the mouth into the nose is also opened, so that a part of the expelled air goes through the nose and resounds there, giving a nasal twang to the vowel-tone. Beginners may help accustom themselves to recognize and produce this nasal twang by shutting the nostrils with the fingers, in which case the nasality becomes especially loud and conspicuous.

b. In learning to pronounce the nasal vowels, the fault especially to be avoided is the shutting of the mouth-organs after the vowel-sound, so as to end it with anything like an *n* or *ng*-sound. A habit of so doing, if once formed, is extremely hard to get rid of. Better than this is to leave the vowel at first unnasalized, hoping to learn by degrees to give it the right quality.

47. There are in French four nasal vowels, or nasalized vowel-sounds. They are very nearly those heard in the English words *wan*, *song*, *sang*, and *sung*, or *on*, *pawn*, *pan*, and *pun*—as these would be if the *n*- and *ng*-sounds in them were not separately uttered, but had their nasal tone as it were absorbed into the vowel itself.

48. The nasalized vowel-sound of English *wan* or *on* belongs in French to *an* and *am*, and to *en* and *em*.

Thus, *an*, *pan*, *banc*, *quand*, *lance*, *manger*, *ébranler*, *banquet*, *anse*, *ayant*, *vanter*; *camp*, *lampe*, *ample*, *chambre*; *en*, *dent*, *enfant*, *pente*, *prudence*, *genre*; *temps*, *trempe*, *remplir*, *membre*, *emblème*.

a. The same sound is heard, of course, after the prefixed half-vowel sounds of *i*, *y*, etc., in the same syllable: thus, *viande*, *croyant* (pronounced as *croi-iant*), *patience*, *orient*, *pingouin*. But *en* after *i* or *y* has sometimes a different sound; see 50*e*.

49. The nasalized vowel-sound of English *pawn* or *song* belongs in French to *on* and *om*.

Thus, *on*, *non*, *donc*, *long*, *plonge*, *annonce*, *conter*, *ronde*; *nom*, *plomb*, *tomber*, *romps*, *rompre*, *combler*, *comte*. So also *action* and the like.

50. *a.* The nasalized vowel-sound of English *sang* or *pan* belongs in French especially to *in* and *im*.

Thus, *vin*, *vint*, *vinrent*, *vinsse*, *pincer*, *Inde*, *ingrat*; *imbu*, *timbre*, *simple*, *impur*.

b. The same sound belongs to *ym* and *yn*, in the few words in which they occur: thus, *thym*, *nymphe*, *symbole*; *syntaxe*.

c. The same sound belongs to the compound vowels **ai** and **ei** with following **n** or **m**.

Thus, **sain, sainte, craindre ; faim, essaim ; sein, serein, peindre, peinture.**

d. The **oi** of **oin** has not its ordinary value, but the **in** of it has the regular nasal sound of **in**, to which the **o** gives a prefix like a **w**. Thus, **loin, moins, ointe, oindre, joindre, accointance.**

e. Final **en** after **i** (or **y**), and **en** everywhere after **i** in the forms of the verbs **tenir** and **venir**, has the sound of **in**: thus, **rien, bien, sien, moyen** (pronounced as **moi-ien**), **tiens, viendra**. Many pronounce in the same way final **en** after **é**: thus, **euro-péen, vendéen**. **En** and **em** are also pronounced as **in** in a few proper names and foreign words: thus, **Mentor, Memphis, Bengale, Rubens, agenda, appendice, pensum, examen, pentamètre, etc.**

51. The nasalized vowel-sound of English *sung* or *pun* belongs in French to **un, um, and eun**.

Thus, **un, brun, tribun, défunt, lundi, emprunter ; parfum, humble ; jeun.**

a. In a few foreign proper names, **un** has the sound of **on**: thus, **Dunkerque, Sund**.

b. In reading Latin, and in a few words taken unchanged from the Latin—as **album, pensum, muséum, Te-deum, triumvir**, also in **rhum, rum**—**um** is pronounced very nearly as in English, the vowel not being nasal.

52. If the **n** or **m** is followed by a vowel, the preceding vowel is of course not nasal, because (4a) the **n** or **m** is not in the same syllable with it.

Thus, **tenir, semer, honorer, une, inutile** (divided **te-nir, hono-rer, i-nu-ti-le**, etc.); also **inhumain, inhabité**, etc. (the **h** being silent, and not counting as a consonant: see 64).

a. But in **enivrer** and **enorgueillir** and their derivatives the **e** is nasal.

53. Also when the **n** or **m** is doubled, the preceding vowel is not nasal.

Thus, **année, hébamme, tienne, ennemi, femme, lionne, homme, innocent, immoler.**

a. But in **ennui** and its derivatives, in **ennoblir**, also in **emmener**, and most other words beginning with **emm** (from **en-m**), the **e** is nasal.

b. The combination **mn** is also treated as if a double letter, so

far as concerns the nasalization of a preceding vowel : thus, **condamner** (cf. 69*a*), **indemnité** (26*a*), **hymne**, **gymnase**.

54. Other cases of vowels which, against the general rule, are not pronounced as nasal are :

a. The **en** of **ent** in the 3d plural of verbs (the **e** being here mute : 18*c*).

b. The **on** of **monsieur**, being pronounced as a mute **e** (18*d*).

c. Final **am**, **em**, **en**, **im** in many foreign proper names : thus, **Priam**, **Abraham**, **Jérusalem**, **Niémen**, **Ibrahim**, **Éphraïm**.

d. A few other words of foreign origin and form : thus, **amen**, **hymen**, **spécimen**, **Éden**, **décemvir**, **Nemrod**, **Kremlin**.

55. As to the pronunciation of the **n** or **m** of a final nasal syllable upon a following vowel, see 86*c*.

PRONUNCIATION OF THE CONSONANTS.

56. GENERAL RULES.—*a.* Final consonants, either one or more than one, are in general silent at the end of a French word.

Thus, **pied**, **trop**, **les**, **fait**, **prix**, **maux**, **nez** ; **plomb**, **rand**, **pieds**, **draps**, **romps**, **faits**, **doigt**, **vingt**, **vents**, **vends**, **instincts**.

b. But final **c**, **f**, **l**, and **r** are usually pronounced.

Thus, **sec**, **avec**, **tic**, **bloc**, **suc**, **turc** ; **fief**, **vif**, **neuf** ; **bal**, **cruel**, **vol**, **seul** ; **par**, **fer**, **finir**, **or**, **sur**, **martyr**.

For exceptional cases, in which these four finals are silent, or others than these are pronounced, see under the several letters ; for the pronunciation of a final usually silent upon a following initial vowel, see 84 etc.

c. Consonants written double are, as in English, pronounced as single.

Thus, **abbé**, **greffier**, **pelle**, **couronné**, **frappant**, **arriver-blessé**, **jettera**.

For certain exceptions, see below, 58*c* (**c**), 62*c* (**g**), 73*d* (**r**).

57. **B, b.**—The letter **b** is pronounced as in English.

Thus, **beau**, **bien**, **robe**, **barbier**, **bombe**, **subtil**.

a. Final **b** is silent after **m** : thus, **plomb** ; but after a vowel (in a few cases only, mostly foreign words and proper names) it is pronounced : thus, **club**, **radoub**, **Achab**, **Joab**.

b. **B** is silent also in a few proper names : thus, **Doubs**, **Lefebvre**.

58. **C, c.**—This consonant has in French, as in English, two sounds: a soft sound, like *s*; and a hard sound, like *k*.

As to **ch**, see the next paragraph.

a. **C** is soft before *e* and *i* (or *y*), and the compound vowels in which *e* or *i* is first (*ei*, *eu*, *ie*).

Thus, *ce*, *ceci*, *ici*, *placé*, *procès*, *douce*, *ceint*, *ceux*, *adoucie*, *ciel*, *cymbale*.

b. In all other situations—before other vowels, before consonants, and as final—**c** has its hard sound.

Thus, *car*, *caisse*, *cause*, *col*, *cœur*, *cour*, *curé*, *cuir*; *croc*, *clair*; *lac*, *sec*, *tic*, *roc*, *duc*.

c. A double **c** is pronounced as single only if the second **c** would be hard according to the above rule; otherwise, **cc** is like **ks** or **x**: thus, *succès*, *accident*; but *accord*, *acclamer*, *accroc*.

d. **C** is soft also before **a**, **o**, **u**, if it has the cedilla (7): thus, *plaça*, *plaçons*, *français*, *reçu*, *ç'a* (from *ce a*).

e. For the exchange of **c** and **qu**, when **c** comes to be followed by a soft vowel, see 72*a*.

f. The **c** of **second** and its derivatives is pronounced like **g**.

g. A final **c** is usually pronounced (56*b*). But it is silent after a nasal vowel: thus, *blanc*, *donc*, *vainc*;—also in some words after **r**: thus, *clerc*, *porc*, *marc*;—also in *estomac*, *stomach*; *tabac*, *tobacco*; *lacs*, *snare*; *cric*, *jack*; *broc*, *jug*; *croc*, *hook*; *accroc*, *nook*; *caoutchouc*, *india-rubber*.

59. **Ch, ch.**—This combination has in French regularly and usually the sound of English *sh*, or *ch* in *machine*.

Thus, *chasse*, *chaise*, *chaud*, *chez*, *cochon*, *choux*, *choix*, *chute*, *chuintier*; *hâche*, *recherche*, *chuchoter*, *ponche*.

a. But there are many words of foreign origin (chiefly Greek) in which **ch** has the sound of **k**. Thus, always before a consonant, as *Christ*, *chrétien*, *chronique*, *technologie*, *chloral*, *fuchsia*, *yacht*;—but often also before a vowel, as in *archange*, *archéologie*, *chaos*, *chœur*, *choléra*, *orchestre*, *écho*, and other less common words; and in proper names, as *Chaldée*, *Bacchus*, *Charybde*, *Antiochus*, *Chanaan*, *Moloch*, *Munich*, *Michel-Ange*, *Achab*.

b. As special irregularities, **ch** is silent in *almanach*; it is usually pronounced as **g** in *drachme*. For *sch*, see 75*c*.

60. **D, d.**—This consonant is pronounced as in English.

Thus, *de, des, dédire, dindon, droit, guide, mode, poudre, plaindre.*

a. Final **d** (usually silent : 56*a*) is pronounced in *sud, south*, and in most proper names, as *Alfred, David, Cid, Nemrod, Joad* (but not in *Madrid, Saint-Cloud*).

61. **F, f.**—This consonant is pronounced as in English.

Thus, *faux, feu, fou, fleur, froid, fief, sauf, affaire, forfait, serf, neuf.*

a. Final **f** (usually pronounced : 56*b*) is silent in *clef, key*, in *cerf* (as usually pronounced), in the *chef* of *chef-d'œuvre*, in the plurals *œufs, bœufs, nerfs* (though pronounced in the singular of these words, except in *nerf* used figuratively), in the combinations *bœuf gras, œuf dur, œuf frais, nerf de bœuf*, and in *Neuf-châtel*. Also the **f** of *neuf, nine*, is silent before an initial consonant of a word numbered by it : thus, *neuf livres, neuf cents* (not in *le neuf janvier, Jan. 9th ; neuf par an, nine a year*, etc.).

62. **G, g.**—This consonant has in French, as in English, two sounds : a soft sound, like English *z* in *azure* or *s* in *pleasure* ; and a hard sound, like English *g* in *gig*.

a. **G** has its soft sound before the vowels *e, i, y*.

Thus, *gelé, gèle, génie, geindre, orageux, gilet, bougie, gymnase.*

b. In other situations—before any other vowel than *e, i, y*, and before a consonant—**g** has its hard sound.

Thus, *gant, gai, gauche, gomme, goître, goût, aigu ; gloire, gros, flegme, ogdoade*. For **g** with following *n*, see the next paragraph.

c. Of double **gg** (which very rarely occurs), the second **g** is pronounced soft if followed by *e, i, y* : thus, *suggérer* (but *agglutiner*).

d. A final **g** (generally silent : 56*a*) is pronounced (hard) in *joug* and in a few foreign words and proper names, as *zigzag, grog, Zadig*. By some it is pronounced in *legs*.

e. In order to preserve the soft sound of a **g**, when in the changes of inflection or derivation it would come to stand before *a* or *o* or *u*, an *e* (not itself pronounced) is often written after it : thus, from *manger* come *mangeant, mangeons, mangeure*. The same silent *e* used to soften a **g** is found in a few independent words, as *geai, George, Geoffroi, pigeon*.

f. A **u** after **g**, when the **u** is followed by **e** or **i** or **y**, has usually in like manner the office of giving the **g** its hard sound, and is itself silent. But **u** after **g** is pronounced when the following vowel has the diæresis (8), also in **aiguille**, **aiguiser**, **lingual**, **linguiste**, **arguer** (and their derivatives), and a few proper names, as **Guise**, **Guide**, **Guy**, **Guyane**.

g. The **u** of a verb like **conjuguer** is retained through the whole inflection: thus, **conjuguant**, **conjuguons**, etc.

63. The combination **gn** has in general a peculiar liquid sound, nearly like English *ny* in *lanyard* or *ni* in *union*.

Thus, **gagner**, **régner**, **règne**, **ligne**, **cicogne**, **répugne**, **cygne**, **magnifique**, **ignorant**, **rognon**, **seigneur**.

This is in reality a palatal *n*-sound, made with the flat of the tongue, instead of its tip, against the fore part of the roof of the mouth.

a. But in a considerable number of words, coming from other languages and not yet fully naturalized, the **g** and **n** are pronounced separately, the **g** having its usual hard sound before a consonant. Some of the commonest of these are: **gnome** (and all other words with initial **gn**), **agnat**, **cognat**, **magnat**, **géognosie**, **cognition**, **stagnant**, **expugnable**.

b. In a few words, the **g** is silent before **n**: thus, **signet**, **Compiègne**, **Clugny**, **Regnard**, **Regnault**.

64. **H**, **h**.—This consonant is not pronounced in French; no such sound as the English *h* should ever be heard in any French word.

a. But there is a considerable number of words in which an initial **h**, though now silent, is treated as if it were still pronounced—namely, by the absence before it of the elision (26*c*), of the carrying-on of a final consonant (84), etc. Such an initial **h** is called “aspirate **h**,” the other being called, for distinction, “mute or silent **h**.”

b. The commonest of the words beginning with aspirate **h** are as follows:

| | | | | |
|---------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|-----------------|
| hache | hanter | harnais | héros | hors |
| haie | harangue | harpe | heurter | houille |
| hair | harasser | hasard | hibou | huguenot |
| halle | hardes | hâte | hideux | huit |
| halte | hardi | haut | homard | humer |
| hameau | haricot | héraut | honte | hurler |

c. In general, the other words related with these have aspirate **h** also: thus, **haine** and **haïssable** like **hair**, **hauteur** and **hausse** like **haut**; but **héroïne**, **héroïque**, **héroïsme**, have mute **h**, though **héros** has aspirate. And the **h** of **huit** is silent after **dix**.

d. Initial aspirate **h** is generally marked in the dictionaries with an inverted apostrophe—thus, ‘**haïe**, ‘**héros**, ‘**honte**, etc.; and the same method will be followed in this work in the vocabularies.

e. The silent initial **h** is treated as if it had no existence, or as if the word actually began with the following vowel; the aspirate initial **h** is treated like any other consonant.

Thus, **l’homme** like **l’ombre**, **cet homme** like **cet ombre**, **son heure** like **son euphonie**, etc.; but **le hasard**, **ce héros**, **sa harpe**, etc.

f. The words **oui** and **onze** (with **onzième**) are treated as if they began with an aspirate **h**: thus, **que oui**, **le onze**.

g. **H** with preceding **c** forms a compound consonant, pronounced like English *sh*; see 59 above. In a number of words of foreign origin, it follows other consonants, but without changing their usual pronunciation: thus, **thée**, **athéiste**, **Rhin**, **rum**, **myrrhe**. **Ph** is pronounced as **f**: thus, **philosophe**.

65. **J, j**.—This consonant has in French invariably the sound of English *z* in *azure*, or *s* in *pleasure* (the same as soft **g**: 62).

Thus, **jamais**, **je**, **jeu**, **joie**, **joujou**, **juge**, **juif**.

66. **K, k**.—This consonant occurs in French only in a few borrowed words; it has the sound of English *k*.

Thus, **kilomètre**, **képi**, **kermesse**, **kiosque**.

a. The *k*-sound is represented in French words by **c** hard (58*b*), by **ch** (59*a*), and by **qu** (72).

67. **L, l**.—This consonant, except when liquid, is pronounced in French as in English.

Thus, **le**, **la**, **lilie**, **loi**, **lui**, **lucre**, **lamelle**, **folle**, **nul**, **table**, **boucle**, **souffle**, **ébranle**, **simple**, **hurle**.

a. **L** is silent in **soûl**, *surfeit*, **pouls**, *pulse*, **aulx**, pl. of **ail**, *garlic*; and before a consonant after **au**, **eu**, **ou** in the endings of a few other words.

68. An **l** following **i** in the same syllable is generally made liquid—that is, it is pronounced as a close *y*.

Thus, **cil**, **babil**, **mil**, *millet*, **avril**, **périal**, **grésil**, **fille**, **cédille**, **billard**, **artillerie**, **guillotine**, **barbillon**.

a. The sound of French "liquid l" (**l mouillé**) was formerly that of a palatal *l*, one made with the flat of the tongue, instead of its tip, against the roof of the mouth, nearly like English *ly* in *steelyard*, or *li* in *brilliant*; and this sound it still has in parts of France; but the now prevailing and accepted pronunciation has changed the *ly*-sound into a simple *y*.

b. If the **i** before **l** is preceded by another vowel, simple or compound, that vowel has its own sound, not forming a compound with the **i**, the latter's sole office being to show the liquid sound of the **l**: thus, **travail**, **travailler**, **conseil**, **conseiller**, **vieil**, **vieillir**, **seuil**, **feuille**, **feuillage**, **houille**, **houilleur**. And **ue** (after **c** or **g**) and **œ** before liquid **il** have the sound of **eu**: thus, **accueil**, **orgueil**, **œil**. But in **poil** the **oi** is the usual diphthong, and **l** has its full sound.

c. But final **l** is silent after **i** in a number of words. The commonest of these are: **baril**, *barrel*, **chenil**, *kennel*, **coutil**, *tickling*, **fournil**, *bakehouse*, **fusil**, *gun*, **nombril**, *navel*, **outil**, *tool*, **sourcil**, *eyebrow*; also **l** in **fil**, *son* (74*d*), and the plural **gentilshommes**, *gentlemen* (in **gentilhomme** it is liquid; also in **gentil**, *nice*, except at the end of a sentence or when followed by a consonant, when it is silent).

d. Final **l** has the proper **l**-sound after **i** in a number of words: thus, **il**, *he*, **fil**, *thread*, **mil**, *thousand*, **Nil**, *Nile*, **vil**, **civil**, **exil**, **profil**, **subtil**, **viril**, **puérial**, **volatil**; further, according to the more usual pronunciation, in **cil**, **avril**, and **périal** (pronounced also with liquid or with silent **l**).

In fact, **il** final except after a vowel is liquid only in the few words given at the beginning of this paragraph; in some of the others, usage varies.

e. At the beginning of a word, **ill** is not liquid: thus, **illatif**, **illégal**, **illimité**, **illogique**, **illustre**.

f. Double **l** after **i** has the full **l**-sound also in the interior and at the end of a number of words: thus, **ville**, *town*, **mille**, *thousand*, **tranquille**, **pupille**, *ward*, **distiller**, *distil*, **vaciller**, *vacillate*, **pusillanime**, **axillaire**, *axillary* (with their compounds, and derivatives), and a few others.

69. **M, m**.—Except where it makes the preceding vowel nasal, and is itself not pronounced (46 etc.), **m** has the same sound in French as in English.

Thus, **me**, **ma**, **même**, **moi**, **meurt**, **mûr**, **femme**, **homme**, **immémoré**, **hymne**.

a. But **m** is pronounced as **n** in **automne** (not in **automnal**), etc.; also in **damner** and its compounds and derivatives.

70. N, n.—Except where it makes the preceding vowel nasal, and is itself not pronounced (46 etc.), **n** has the same sound in French as in English.

Thus, **nappe, naine, ne, neuf, nid, non, noir, nouveau, nul, nuire, bonne, brune.**

71. P, p.—This consonant is in general pronounced as in English.

Thus, **pape, père, peuple, pourpre, pur, puits, plaie, pré, frapper, huppe, soupe.**

a. Final **p** is usually silent (56), as **drap, trop, coup**; also, a **p** followed by another silent final, as **rompt, temps, corps**. It is also silent in **sept, seven**, and **septième, seventh** (not in other derivatives of **sept**, as **septembre**); in **baptême, baptism, and baptiser, baptize**; in **compter, reckon, dompter, subdue, exempter, prompter, sculpter**, and the words related with these (except **exemption, impromptu**). But final **p** is pronounced in **cap, cape**, and in a few proper names, as **Alep**. For **ph**, see 64*g*.

72. Q, q.—This consonant is almost always followed in French, as in English, by **u**; but in French the **u** is generally silent, and the combination **qu** has the sound of *k*.

Thus, **quatre, quai, que, queue, quelque, qui, quint, quotidien, quoique, calquer, marquer, vainquis, vainquons.**

a. A hard *k*-sound before **e** or **i** cannot be written in French except by **qu**; and hence **qu** sometimes takes the place of **c** in inflection and derivation when **e** or **i** is added: thus, **vainquez, vainquent, vainquis**, from **vaincre**; **turque**, from **turc**; **caduque**, from **caduc**.

b. But in a number of French words **qu** has the same sound as in English. The commonest of these are **quadrat, quadri-, quadru-, quarto, quaterne, questeur, quiescent, quiet** (according to some authorities), **quinqua-, quinque-, quintette, quintuple, équateur, équation, équestre, équilatéral, requiem**.

c. A final **q** occurs (save in a very few proper names) only in **cinq, five**, and **coq, cock**, and is usually pronounced as a *k*; but it is silent in **coq d'Inde**, and in **cinq** before an initial consonant of a word numbered by it: thus, **cinq livres, five books** (not in **le cinq mai, May 5th**, etc.).

73. R, r.—This consonant is always more or less rolled

or trilled in French, and so is made much more distinct than in ordinary English pronunciation.

Thus, rare, frère, rire, aurore, parure, roi, trois, froid, croix, droit, partir, porteur, arbre, meurtre, bruit, grand, près, vrai, arriverai.

a. A final *r* is regularly pronounced (56*b*); but it is usually silent after *e* in words of more than one syllable.

Thus, silent in *fier* (verb), *aimer*, *parler*, *léger*, *entier*, *officier*, etc.; pronounced in *cher*, *fer*, *fier* (adj.), *hier*, *mer*, etc., and, before other silent finals, in *clerc*, *perd*, *perds*, *cerf*, *tiers*, *sert*, etc.

b. Final *r* is also pronounced after *e* in the words of more than one syllable, *amer*, *bitter*, *cancer*, *cuiller*, *spoon*, *enfer*, *hell*, *hiver*, *winter*, and a few foreign words, chiefly proper names, as *magister*, *Jupiter*, *Esther*, *Oder*. It is not silent in such words before another silent final, unless that final be the plural-sign *s*: thus, it is pronounced in *envers*, *Anvers*, *univers*, *acquires*, *désert*, *Robert* (but silent in *entiers*, *officiers*, etc.).

c. Final *r* is silent in *monsieur*, *messieurs*.

d. In the future and conditional of the verbs *courir*, *run*, *mourir*, *die*, *quérir*, *ask*, and their compounds, the double *r* is distinctly to be heard as two separate *r*'s: thus, *courrai*, *mourrais*, *acquerront*:

74. *S, s.*—This consonant is in general pronounced with the sound which it ordinarily has in English (in our words *sense*, *sister*, etc.).

Thus, *sa*, *se*, *si*, *son*, *sur*, *espace*, *estime*, *poste*, *prisme*, *fiasque*, *disparu*, *descriptif*, *transcrire*, *anse*, *penser*.

a. But *s* between two vowels has the sound of our *z*.

Thus, *raser*, *raison*, *lèse*, *misère*, *rose*, *blouse*, *ruse*; also *déshonneur* (silent *h*), *déshabiller*, etc.

b. *S* has the sound of *z* also in *trans-* before a vowel: thus, *transaction*, *transhumer* (*h* silent), *transitif*; also in *Alsace* and *alsacien*, and in *balsamique*; also in a few other words where followed by a sonant consonant, as *presbytère*, *Desdémone*, *desmode*, and *disgrâce* (according to some authorities).

c. On the other hand, *s* has its own *s*-sound even between two vowels, when it is the initial of the second part of a compound word, as in *vraisemblable*, *parasol*, *polysyllabe*, *désuétude*, *resauver*, *Desèze*; also in the conjugation of *gésir* (XL. 4), except the infinitive *gésir* itself.

d. *S* final is regularly silent (56); but it is sounded in *as*, *ace*,

aloès, cens, *census*, express, fils, son, hélas, *alas!* jadis, *formerly*, laps, lis, *lily* (except in *fleur-de-lis*), mais, *maize*, mars, *March*, mœurs, *morals*, ours, *bear*, sens, *sense* (except in *sens commun*), sus (in *en sus*), tous, *all* (except when followed by a word which it limits adjectively), vis, *screw*; also in a number of words of unchanged Latin form, as atlas, bis, *twice*, blocus, gratis, omnibus; also in most foreign proper names, as Romulus, Adonis, Memphis, Lesbos, Andalous, Ladislas, Gil Blas, and a number of French ones, as Mons, Rheims, Senlis, Fréjus, Sieyès (usually *si-èze*).

e. S in the interior of a word is usually pronounced, even in the compounds *lorsque*, *presque*, *puisque*, *plus-que-parfait*; but it is silent in many proper names (which have kept unchanged an ancient style of spelling), as *Cosme*, *Cosne*, *Rosny*, *Duguesclin*, *Praslin*, *Vosges*, *Pélasges*.

75. There are certain consonant compounds containing s and having a simple sound. Thus :

a. A double s, or ss, is pronounced like a single s (as usual : 56c), but always with the hissing *s*-sound, never as *z* : thus, *assez*, *blesser*, *disse*, *grossesse*, *poussasse*, *prussien*, *vinse*.

b. Sc, before e, i, y, is sounded as ss : thus, *scène*, *scie*, *science*, *ascétique*, *lascif*, *obscénité*, *Scythe*.

c. Sch occurs only in a few foreign words, and is mostly pronounced as ch would be (English *sh*) : thus, *schisme*, *schamane*; but sometimes like sk, as in *schème* and its related words, *scholastique*.

76. T, t.—This consonant is generally sounded as in English.

Thus, *ta*, *taire*, *taux*, *tâter*, *te*, *tête*, *titre*, *ton*, *toute*, *tuteur*, *nette*, *trottoir*, *étroite*.

a. Final t is regularly silent (56a); but it is pronounced in a number of words : namely, after a vowel in *ut*, *do*, *brut*, *crude*, *chut*, *hush!* *déficit*, *dot*, *dowry*, *fat*, *fop*, *mat*, *dull*, *net*, *neat*, *subit*, *sudden* (according to many authorities), *transit*, and *huit*, *eight* (except before the initial consonant of a word numbered by it); after a consonant in *est*, *east*, *ouest*, *west*, *lest*, *ballast*, *Christ* (but the s and t are silent in *antichrist*, and usually in *Jésus-Christ*), *whist*, *rapt*, *rape*, *sept*, *seven* (except before an initial consonant of a word numbered by it), and *vingt*, *twenty*, in the numbers 21–29. As to words ending in ct after a vowel, there is much difference of usage; ordinarily, c and t are both pronounced in *tact*, *contact*, *exact*, *abject*, *correct*, *direct*, *infect*, *strict*; only c is pronounced in *circonspect*, *suspect*, *district*; both c and t are silent in *aspect*, *respect*. Final t is further pronounced in a few unchanged Latin words, as *exeat*,

and in many foreign proper names, as **Japhet**, **Achmet**; also, according to some, at the end of a sentence, in **but**, *goal*, and in **fait**, *deed*, and **sot**, *fool*, used as nouns.

77. *a.* **T** followed by **i**, in certain endings where *ti* in English has the *sh*-sound, is sounded as *s* (not as *sh*): thus, **partial**, **essentiel**, **égyptien**, **ambitieux**, **plénipotentiaire**, **Actium**, **patient**, **patience**, **portion**; also in **tie** corresponding to *cy* or *tia* in English, as **démocratie**, **prophétie**, **minutie**, **inertie**, **Béotie**; and in **tier** (of a verb) corresponding to *-tiate* in English, as **initier**, **balbutier**; and in **satiété**.

b. But where the **ti** is preceded by **s** or **x** (and *ti* has in English the *ch*-sound), **t** retains its proper value: thus, **question**, **mixtion**. The same is the case in **chrétien** and in **châtier**.

c. Elsewhere, **t** before **i** has its own proper sound: thus, **moitié**, **portier**, **contient**, **portions** and **portiez** (*i.e.*, before the endings **ions** and **iez** of 1st and 2d pl. of verbs), etc.

78. The combination **th** is everywhere pronounced as simple **t**: thus, **théâtre**, **thé**, **pathétique**, **athéiste**, **sympathie**. It is silent in **asthme** and **isthme**.

79. **V, v.**—This consonant is sounded as in English. It never occurs as final.

Thus, **valu**, **venir**, **veuve**, **vivant**, **viennne**, **vol**, **voir**, **vrai**, **active**, **vivre**.

80. **W, w.**—This consonant occurs only in a very small number of foreign words. It is usually pronounced like English *v*: thus, **wagon**; but in a word or two rather as English *w*: thus, **whist**, **whig** (the **h** silent).

81. **X, x.**—This consonant is for the most part pronounced like *ks*, as in English.

Thus, **saxe**, **sexe**, **fixer**, **boxeur**, **luxe**, **Alexandre**, **annexation**, **exciter**, **excuse**, **expérience**.

a. In the initial syllable **ex** before a vowel, it is pronounced like *gz*: thus, **exalté**, **exemple**, **exister**, **exil**, **exode**, **exhorter**, **exhumer** (**h** silent); as also, of course, in the compounds of such words, as **inexact**. Initial **x** has in most words the same *gz*-sound: thus, **Xénophon**, **Xavier**, **xylographe**. **Xerxès** is pronounced *gzersesse*.

b. Final **x** is regularly silent (56*a*) but it is pronounced, like *s*, in the numerals **six**, *six*, and **dix**, *ten* (except before an initial consonant of a word numbered by them), in **dix-sept**, *seventeen*, **Béatrix**, **Cadix**, **Aix en Provence**; in **Aix-la-Chapelle** it is pronounced like *ks*, also in a few foreign words, as **Ajax**, **Styx**, **larynx**, **index**, **préfix**. In the compound numerals **dix-huit**, *eighteen*, and **dix-neuf**, *nineteen*, it is sounded as *z*.

c. Medial *x* is sounded as *s* (not *z*) in *soixante sixty*, and in a few proper names, as *Bruxelles, Auxerre*; and as *z* in *deuxième second, sixième sixth, dixième tenth, sixaine half a dozen*.

82. **Y, y.**—This letter has generally the value of a vowel, being pronounced as *i*, or as double *i*, and as such has been treated of above (36, 37). In a few foreign words, it has the value of the English consonantal (semi-vowel) *y*: thus, *yacht* (pronounced *yak*), *Yémen, Yucatan*, etc.

83. **Z, z.**—This consonant has in general the same sound as in English.

Thus, *Zama, zèle, zigzag, zone, zymotique, gazon*.

a. Final *z* is regularly silent (56*a*): thus, *nez, aimez, riz*.

But it is pronounced, as *z*, in *gaz gas*, and in certain proper names, as *Achaz, Berlioz*; and as *s* in a few other proper names, as *Cortez, Vélasquez, Suez*.

LINKING OR CARRYING-ON OF FINAL CONSONANTS.

84. A final consonant usually silent is liable to be pronounced when followed by another word beginning with a vowel (or mute *h*). This is called the linking or carrying-on of the final (in French, *liaison*).

a. The final consonant thus carried on is pronounced directly upon the following vowel, as if a part of the same syllable with it; any relaxation or pause is to be made before the consonant, not between it and the vowel.

b. The carrying-on of the final in any case depends upon the closeness of connection between the two words, and also in part upon the general style of utterance.

c. Thus, close grammatical connection between the two words, dependence of the one on the other, favors the linking. This, then, generally or invariably takes place between an article or possessive or other adjective and the following qualified noun; between a verb and its preceding or following pronoun, subject or object, or a verb and its preceding subject noun; between an auxiliary and following participle; between an adverb and the following qualified adjective or adverb; between a preposition and its governed noun; and so on. In cases of less close connection, the linking depends in part on euphony as determined by the general habits of the language, in part on the style of delivery:

in reading aloud, namely, and in formal or solemn discourse, a great deal more linking is done than in the freedom of conversation. This class of differences, of course, is only to be learned by much experience. And linking is to be avoided where there is a natural pause, whether marked by a sign of punctuation or not.

85. *a.* Some final consonants have their own proper sound when carried on to the following initial vowel.

Thus, *de broc*_{en} *bouche*, *il est donc*_{arrivé}, *un*_{homme}, *rien*_à *faire*, *trop*_{avant}, *beaucoup*_{occupé}, *cinq*_{enfants}, *aimer*_à *boire*, *le premier*_{homme}, *cet*_{habit}, *est*_{il}, *mot*_à *mot*, *avez*_{été}, *allez*_y.

b. But final *s* and *x*, when linked, take the sound of *z*; *d* takes that of *t*; and *g* (rare) takes that of *k*.

Thus, *les*_{hommes}, *nos*_{amis} *ont*, *nous*_{aurons} *eu*, *pas*_{en} *core*, *sans*_{elle}; *deux*_{hommes}, *de*_{beaux} *yeux*, *des*_{chapeaux} *énormes*, *tu*_{peux} *y* *aller*; *un*_{grand} *homme*, *vend*_{il}, *quand*_{il} *vient*, *pied*_à *terre*; *un*_{rang} *élevé*, *ce*_{long} *hiver*, *le*_{joug} *insupportable*. But the *d* of *nord* keeps its *d*-sound.

c. A final consonant that is not silent has in general the same sound before a vowel as before a consonant: thus, *sud*_{ouest}, *David*_{était}, *Ajax*_{eut}. But *six* and *dix* are linked with a following numbered noun after the manner of words ending in silent *x* (*i.e.*, with *z*); and the *f* of *neuf* in a like situation has the sound of *v*: thus, *six*_{enfants}, *dix*_{hommes}, *neuf*_{ans}. Also, according to most authorities, the *s* of *fil*_s, *jadis*, *sens*, is linked as *z*.

86. Special exceptional cases are to be noted as follows:

a. The *t* of *et* *and* is never carried on.

b. A final consonant after *r* (unless it be the plural sign *s*) is averse to linking: thus, *vers*_{une} *heure*, *hors*_{un} *seul*, *il*_{ne} *sert*_à *rien* (but *sert*_{il}).

c. The final *n* of a nasal syllable is carried on only in cases of close grammatical connection; and when the carrying-on takes place, the preceding vowel loses more or less (sometimes all) of its nasal tone, while retaining the same vowel-quality as in its nasal utterance: thus, *un*_{enfant}, *mon*_{ami}, *ce*_{bon} *homme*, *en*_{Italie}, *bien*_{aimable}, *rien*_à *dire*, *en*_{plein} *air*, *enivrer*, *enorgueillir*.

☞ All words having an exceptional pronunciation will be marked in the vocabularies below by a prefixed asterisk: thus, **fil*_s. Then the general vocabulary at the end of the volume will give the necessary references.

LESSON I.

GENDER, ARTICLES, ETC.

1. All nouns in French are either masculine or feminine.

For the distinction of masculine and feminine nouns as shown by their meaning or by their ending, see Second Part, § 13 etc. In general, names of male beings are masculine, and those of female beings are feminine; the names of things having no sex are masculine or feminine, for the most part according as they were so in Latin; but, the old neuter having been lost, nouns of that gender in Latin have become masculine in French.

2. Hence, words qualifying or relating to nouns—as articles, adjectives, pronouns—have also usually a distinction of masculine and feminine form, so as to agree in gender with the nouns to which they belong.

3. There are, as in English, two articles, the definite and the indefinite.

4. The definite article has in the singular a different form for each gender: namely, *le* before a masculine noun, and *la* before a feminine. Examples are:

le père, the father

le roi, the king

le cheval, the horse

le livre, the book

la mère, the mother

la reine, the queen

la vache, the cow

la fleur, the flower

But in the plural there is one form of the article, *les*, for both genders: thus,

les pères, the fathers

les livres, the books

les mères, the mothers

les fleurs, the flowers

5. Before a word beginning with a vowel (or *h* mute: 64*e*), *le* and *la* both lose their vowel, and take the apostrophe, becoming alike *l'* (26*c*, 15): thus,

l'ami, the friend

l'homme, the man

l'amie, the (female) friend

l'heure, the hour

6. The indefinite article is *un* before a masculine noun, and *une* before a feminine: thus,

| | |
|--------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>un père, a father</i> | <i>une mère, a mother</i> |
| <i>un roi, a king</i> | <i>une reine, a queen</i> |
| <i>un livre, a book</i> | <i>une fleur, a flower</i> |

The indefinite article has no plural.

7. The articles must always be repeated in French before every noun to which they belong (that is, an article may not be understood from a noun to a following noun, as it often is in English): thus,

the father and mother, le père et la mère
a king and queen, un roi et une reine

8. The commonest possessives used with nouns are *mon* masc., *ma* fem., *my*; *son* m., *sa* f., *his* or *her* or *its*; *notre* m. f. *our*; *votre* m. f. *your*: thus,

| | |
|-----------------------------------|---|
| <i>mon père, my father</i> | <i>ma mère, my mother</i> |
| <i>son livre, his or her book</i> | <i>sa fleur, his or her or its flower</i> |
| <i>notre ami, our friend</i> | <i>votre amie, your (female) friend</i> |

VERB-LESSON.

9. The PRESENT tense of the verb *avoir* *have* is as follows:

| | |
|-------------------------|----------------------------------|
| <i>j'ai, I have</i> | <i>nous avons, we have</i> |
| <i>tu as, thou hast</i> | <i>vous avez, you have</i> |
| <i>il a, he has</i> | <i>ils ont, they (m.) have</i> |
| <i>elle a, she has</i> | <i>elles ont, they (f.) have</i> |

a. The abbreviation *j'* is for *je*, I (26c). Notice that *je* is not written with a capital, like English *I*.

b. In French, as in English, the pronoun of the 2d pers. plural, *vous* *you*, is ordinarily used in addressing any one, instead of *tu* *thou*. In the exercises, therefore, *you* should always be rendered with *vous* (and *your* with *votre*), and *tu* should be used only when *thou* is given in the English.

10. The same tense in the interrogative form is as follows:

| | |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <i>ai-je, have I?</i> | <i>avons-nous, have we?</i> |
| <i>as-tu, hast thou?</i> | <i>avez-vous, have you?</i> |
| <i>a-t-il, has he?</i> | <i>ont-ils, have they (m.)?</i> |
| <i>a-t-elle, has she?</i> | <i>ont-elles, have they (f.)?</i> |

a. For the pronunciation of *je* in *ai-je* and the like, see 18*e*.

b. It is seen that in French (as in English) the subject-pronoun is put after the verb in asking a question; and it must always be joined to the verb by a hyphen.

c. If the 3d pers. sing. of any verb ends in a vowel, a *t* is added to it, with a hyphen between, whenever it is followed by the pronoun *il* or *elle* (or by *on*: XXVII. 4).

This *t* is that of the 3d sing. in Latin: thus, *a-t-il* is *habet ille*.

11. But if the subject of a verb used interrogatively is a noun, the noun is generally put first, and then a corresponding pronoun is put after the verb: that is, the subject is first stated, and then the question is asked about it by means of a pronoun.

Thus, *has the man a book?* is not *a l'homme un livre?* but *l'homme a-t-il un livre?* (literally, *the man, has he a book?*).

a. For certain exceptions, see XXV. 6.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|---------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| le père, <i>the father</i> | la mère, <i>the mother</i> |
| le *fils, <i>the son</i> | la fille, <i>the daughter, girl</i> |
| le frère, <i>the brother</i> | la sœur, <i>the sister</i> |
| l'oncle, <i>the uncle</i> | la tante, <i>the aunt</i> |
| le cousin m., <i>the cousin</i> | la cousine, <i>the cousin f.</i> |
| l'homme m., <i>the man</i> | la *femme, <i>the woman, wife</i> |
| le livre, <i>the book</i> | le papier, <i>the paper</i> |
| la plume, <i>the pen</i> | le crayon, <i>the pencil</i> |
| le chien, <i>the dog</i> | le chat, <i>the cat</i> |
| et, <i>and</i> | ou, <i>or</i> |
| oui, <i>yes</i> | non, <i>no</i> |

EXERCISE 1.

¹ L'homme a un père et une mère. ² A-t-il un chien ou un chat? ³ Il a un chien, et nous avons un chat. ⁴ Avez-vous le livre? ⁵ Oui, j'ai mon livre et votre crayon. ⁶ Mon père a le papier et la plume. ⁷ As-tu une sœur? ⁸ J'ai une sœur et un frère. ⁹ Ont-ils un cousin? ¹⁰ Ils ont une cousine et une tante. ¹¹ La femme a-t-elle sa plume ou son crayon? ¹² Elle a mon papier et notre crayon. ¹³ Sa tante

a-t-elle un fils? ¹⁴ Non, elle a une fille. ¹⁵ Nous avons notre livre, et vous avez votre papier. ¹⁶ Mon oncle a une femme. ¹⁷ A-t-il un fils? ¹⁸ Non, il a une fille.

THEME 1.

¹ I have an uncle. ² My uncle has a dog, and my aunt has a cat. ³ Has the man the paper? ⁴ He has my paper and your pen. ⁵ Have you a brother? ⁶ No, we have a sister. ⁷ Our sister has her book and her pencil. ⁸ Hast thou a dog? ⁹ Yes, and my brother has a dog and a cat. ¹⁰ Has the woman a mother or a father? ¹¹ She has a mother, and her mother has a father and a cousin. ¹² Has your cousin our pencil? ¹³ No, she has her pencil and our pen. ¹⁴ They have our pencil and your pen. ¹⁵ The man has his book, and we have our paper.

The sentences given in the exercises and themes should be varied and repeated, and turned into question and answer between teacher and pupils, until the words and forms are impressed on the memory.

LESSON II.

PLURAL OF NOUNS.

1. The plural of a noun is generally formed in French, as in English, by adding *s* to the singular: thus,

le roi, *the king*

la fleur, *the flower*

l'homme, *the man*

les rois, *the kings*

les fleurs, *the flowers*

les hommes, *the men*

The principal exceptions to this rule are as follows:

2. Nouns ending in the sibilants *s*, *x*, and *z* have the same form in the plural as in the singular: thus,

le fils, *the son*

la noix, *the walnut*

le nez, *the nose*

les fils, *the sons*

les noix, *the walnuts*

les nez, *the noses*

3. Nouns ending in *au* and *eu*, and a few in *ou*, add *x* instead of *s* : thus,

| | |
|----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| le chapeau, <i>the hat</i> | les chapeaux, <i>the hats</i> |
| le lieu, <i>the place</i> | les lieux, <i>the places</i> |
| le genou, <i>the knee</i> | les genoux, <i>the knees</i> |

The nouns in *ou* taking *x* in the plural are *bijou jewel*, *cail-
lou pebble*, *chou cabbage*, *genou knee*, *hibou owl*, *joujou play-
thing*, *pou louse*—all masculine. Other nouns in *ou* take *s*, ac-
cording to the general rule: *e.g.*, *fous fools*, *clous nails*, *trous*
holes.

4. Most nouns ending in *al* and *ail* change these end-
ings to *aux* for the plural: thus,

| | |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| le cheval, <i>the horse</i> | les chevaux, <i>the horses</i> |
| le travail, <i>the work</i> | les travaux, <i>the works</i> |

Exceptions are *bals balls*, *carnavals carnivals*, *chacals jackals*,
régals treats, *détails details*, *éventails fans*, *gouvernails rud-
ders*, *portails doorways* (all masculine), and a few others.

5. A few nouns form their plural quite irregularly;
the most important are :

| | |
|----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| l'œil, <i>the eye</i> | les yeux, <i>the eyes</i> |
| le ciel, <i>the heaven</i> | les cieux, <i>the heavens</i> |

For other cases, see Second Part, § 19 etc.

6. Some nouns are used only in the singular, others only in
the plural; some have different plural forms, according to their
different meanings: see Second Part, § 19 etc.

7. The plurals of the possessives already given are
mes my, *ses his or her or its*, *nos our*, *vos your*.

VERB-LESSON.

8. The PRÉSENT tense of the verb *être be* is as fol-
lows:

| | |
|-------------------------|----------------------------------|
| je suis, <i>I am</i> | nous sommes, <i>we are</i> |
| tu es, <i>thou art</i> | vous êtes, <i>you are</i> |
| il est, <i>he is</i> | ils sont, <i>they (m.) are</i> |
| elle est, <i>she is</i> | elles sont, <i>they (f.) are</i> |

a. Compare the Latin: *ego sum, tu es, ille est, nos sumus, vos estis, illi
sunt*.

b. The question-forms are *suis-je, es-tu*, etc. (as for the pres-
ent of *avoir*: I. 10), with the subject after the verb, and a hy-
phen between.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| la maison, <i>the house</i> | la chambre, <i>the room, chamber</i> |
| la porte, <i>the door, gate</i> | la fenêtre, <i>the window</i> |
| l'habit m., <i>the coat</i> | la robe, <i>the dress</i> |
| le chapeau, <i>the hat, bonnet</i> | le tableau, <i>the picture</i> |
| l'animal m., <i>the animal</i> | le cheval, <i>the horse</i> |
| le bras, <i>the arm</i> | la jambe, <i>the leg</i> |
| l'œil m., <i>the eye</i> | les yeux, <i>the eyes</i> |
| un m., une f., <i>one</i> | deux, <i>two</i> |
| trois, <i>three</i> | quatre, <i>four</i> |
| mais, <i>but</i> | aussi, <i>also</i> |

EXERCISE 2.

¹ Votre père a-t-il une maison? ² Oui, il a une maison.
³ Sa maison a une porte, deux chambres, et quatre fenêtres.
⁴ Mon oncle a deux fils; ils sont mes cousins. ⁵ J'ai un habit et deux chapeaux. ⁶ L'homme a deux jambes; mais les chevaux et les chiens ont quatre jambes. ⁷ L'homme a deux bras et deux yeux, et les animaux ont aussi deux yeux. ⁸ La fille a-t-elle une robe? ⁹ La fille a trois robes et un chapeau. ¹⁰ Avez-vous mes tableaux? ¹¹ J'ai mon tableau; mais ma cousine a vos tableaux. ¹² Sa chambre a trois fenêtres et deux portes. ¹³ Vous avez nos robes et nos habits. ¹⁴ Mes cousins ont une maison, un cheval, et deux chiens.

THEME 2.

¹ Has the man two legs? ² He has two arms and two legs, but the animals have four legs. ³ My father and my mother have a house, three horses, and four dogs. ⁴ The girls are my cousins. ⁵ Her cousins are three girls, and they have three hats and three dresses. ⁶ The men have a dog and a horse. ⁷ Our uncle has four sons; they are our cousins. ⁸ His daughter is also a cousin. ⁹ She has my hat, and I have her dresses. ¹⁰ Your sister has a house. ¹¹ Her house has two doors, three rooms, and four windows. ¹² The horse is an animal. ¹³ His brothers have three pictures. ¹⁴ My two sisters have two horses.

VERB-EXERCISE.

Are you? We are and you are also. Are they? Has she? Thou art. Is he? They have. They are. I am. You have. Are we? She is. Hast thou? We are and we have.

All the tenses learned should be exercised upon with such scattering questions as these.

LESSON III.

THE PREPOSITIONS à AND de.

1. Nouns in French have no cases. The same noun-form is used both as subject and object of a verb, and after a preposition (as in English); and the meaning of the English possessive is (as often in English also) expressed by help of the preposition *de of*.

a. Thus, we have to say in French *the book of the man*, **le livre de l'homme**, for *the man's book*, because the French has no possessive case-form like *man's*. The phrase **de l'homme** *of the man* is in some grammars called the genitive case of **homme man**—and so with other nouns.

2. The preposition **de** is always contracted with the article **le** into **du**, and with the article **les** into **des**; while with **la** and **l'** it remains unchanged: thus,

du père (never **de le père**), *of the father, the father's*
des pères (never **de les pères**), *of the fathers, the fathers'*
des mères (never **de les mères**), *of the mothers, the mothers'*

but, on the other hand,

de la mère, *of the mother, the mother's* **de la fleur**, *of the flower*
de l'homme, *of the man, the man's* **de l'amie**, *of the (female) friend*

3. The *e* of *de* is apostrophized (26*c*) before any vowel (or silent *h*): thus,

d'un homme, *of a man*

d'une fleur, *of a flower*

d'ami, *of friend*

d'homme, *of man*

4. The preposition *à* *to* is in like manner always contracted with the article *le* into *au*, and with the article *les* into *aux*; but with *la* and *l'* it remains unchanged: thus,

au père (never *à le père*), *to the father*

aux pères, *to the fathers*

au roi (never *à le roi*), *to the king*

aux reines, *to the queens*

but, on the other hand,

à la mère, *to the mother*

à la fleur, *to the flower*

à l'homme, *to the man*

à l'amie, *to the (female) friend*

a. A noun in French is never used (as it sometimes is in English) datively, or as indirect object of a verb without a preposition. Thus, *I give the man the book* is always *je donne le livre à l'homme*—literally, *I give the book to the man*. The phrase *à l'homme to the man* is in some grammars called the dative case of *homme man*—and so with other nouns.

5. The prepositions *de* and *à* must be repeated before every noun that they govern: thus,

des pères et des mères, *of the fathers and mothers*

aux hommes, aux femmes, et aux enfants, *to the men, women, and children*

6. For *belong* is used the verb *être be*, followed by *à to*. Thus, *à qui est-il whose is it?* *il est à ma cousine it is my cousin's* (literally, *it is or belongs to my cousin*).

VERB-LESSON.

7. The IMPERFECT tenses of *avoir have* and *être be* are as follows:

j'avais, *I had*

j'étais, *I was*

tu avais, *thou hadst*

tu étais, *thou wast*

il avait, *he had*

il était, *he was*

nous avions, *we had*

nous étions, *we were*

vous aviez, *you had*

vous étiez, *you were*

ils avaient, *they had*

ils étaient, *they were*

a. Every imperfect in the language, without exception, is in-

flected in this way, with the endings *-ais, -ais, -ait, -ions, -iez, -aient*.

b. This tense expresses continuous past action (see § 119), and is often to be rendered by *was having, kept having, used to have*, and the like.

c. The interrogative form is *avais-je, étais-tu, avait-il*, etc., as in the tenses already given.

d. The French imperfect is from the Latin imperfect: *avais* is *habebam*; *étais* is *stabam*—since parts of the verb *stare* *stand* have been taken to fill up the inflection of the verb *be* in French (see below, XI. 1*a*).

VOCABULARY.

l'ami m., the friend

le neveu, the nephew

l'enfant m., the child

le jardin, the garden

la feuille, the leaf, sheet

je donne, I give

voici, here is or are

l'amie f., the friend

la nièce, the niece

le garçon, the boy

l'arbre m., the tree

la fleur, the flower

il, elle donne, he, she gives

voilà, there is or are

EXERCISE 3.

¹ La fille de mon oncle est ma cousine, et je suis son cousin. ² Ma cousine donne la fleur à votre nièce. ³ Le garçon est le fils du neveu de mon père. ⁴ Je donne les fleurs du jardin aux enfants. ⁵ Votre sœur a-t-elle mes crayons? ⁶ Elle a les crayons des filles et des garçons. ⁷ L'enfant est le fils de l'ami de ma sœur. ⁸ Voici la maison des deux amies de ma mère. ⁹ Votre ami a-t-il un jardin? ¹⁰ Voilà les arbres du jardin de mon ami. ¹¹ La femme donne une fleur au garçon. ¹² La maison est à mon père. ¹³ Voilà les feuilles de l'arbre; elles sont à votre amie. ¹⁴ A-t-elle aussi les fleurs? ¹⁵ Non, les fleurs sont à l'enfant. ¹⁶ Voici la porte de ma chambre. ¹⁷ La maison de nos amis a quatre fenêtres.

THEME 3.

¹ The man's coat and hat. ² The woman's dress. ³ The eyes of the horse are two, his legs are four. ⁴ I have the boy's dog and the girl's cat. ⁵ I give the cat to the chil-

dren, and the dog to the son of my cousin. ⁶ The brothers of the girls have also a horse. ⁷ He gives a hat to the son of his friend. ⁸ My uncle gives the boys the leaves, and the girls the flowers. ⁹ There are the boy's books. ¹⁰ The house is my friend's. ¹¹ The boy gives his sister a book, and the girl gives her brother a pen and pencil. ¹² The paper is the children's, but the pens are my sisters'. ¹³ The house belongs to my father's brother. ¹⁴ The sister of my nephew is my niece. ¹⁵ She gives her aunt a flower and three leaves.

VERB-EXERCISE.

He was. Had you? They are. Was she? Thou hadst. They were. Are we? I had. Was I? Had she or had he? They have and they had. Am I? You are. Art thou? She is.

LESSON IV.

PARTITIVE AND INCLUSIVE SENSES OF THE NOUN.

1. The partitive sense of a noun is that which in English may be expressed by putting *some* or *any* before the noun, but which is oftenest left unexpressed.

Thus, *have you bread* (i.e., some bread, or any bread)? *we have books* (or, some books); *they had pens, but they had no ink* (i.e., some pens, not any ink); and so on.

2. In French, this sense of a noun is in general distinctly expressed, by putting before it the preposition *de* *of*, along (usually) with the definite article: thus,

j'ai du pain, I have bread (literally, *of the bread*)

avez-vous des livres, have you books (literally, *of the books*)?

donnez-moi de la farine et de l'eau, give me some flour and water

The rules for the combination of **de** with **le** and **les**, and for the repetition of **de** before every noun that it governs, have been already given (III. 2, 5).

3.* Sometimes, however, the article is omitted, and the preposition alone expresses the partitive sense of the noun. This is the case :

a. When the noun has an adjective before it (see below, VIII. 6) : thus,

j'ai de bon pain (not **du bon pain**), *I have good bread*
nous avons d'excellents livres, *we have excellent books*

b. After a negative verb (see below, XII. 7) : thus,

je n'ai pas de pain (not **du pain**), *I have not any bread*
nous n'avons jamais de livres, *we never have books*

4. More rarely, both preposition and article are omitted, and the bare noun stands in the partitive sense, as in English. This is the case :

a. After **ni . . . ni**, meaning *neither . . . nor* (see below, XII. 7a) : thus,

je n'ai ni pain ni beurre, *I have neither bread nor butter*

b. In long enumerations : thus,

il y a sur la table eau, vin, bière, pain, beurre, fromage,
there is on the table water, wine, beer, bread, butter, cheese

For further details and exceptions as to the expression of the partitive sense of a noun, see Second Part, § 35.

5. On the other hand, a noun is sometimes used in its most inclusive sense, or as signifying the whole class of objects to which it applies. This sense, which is usually left unexpressed in English, requires in French the definite article before the noun : thus,

man (i.e., the whole race) *is mortal*, **l'homme est mortel**

men (i.e., all men) *are mortal*, **les hommes sont mortels**

life is short, **la vie est courte**

sleep is the brother of death, **le sommeil est le frère de la mort**

a. The article thus used may conveniently be called the INCLUSIVE ARTICLE.

b. The inclusive article is especially common before abstract nouns : e.g., **la vie** *life*, **la beauté** *beauty*, **la nature** *Nature*, **la fortune** *fortune*, **la sensibilité** *sensibility*.

* Paragraphs 3 and 4 are added here because it is desirable to have in one place all the principal rules about the partitive. Classes may well omit them until they take this Lesson in review, after having had Lessons VIII. and XII.

c. The inclusive article is not wholly wanting with a singular noun in English : thus, *the dog is an enemy of the cat ; the hand has five fingers*, and so on.

6. The frequently occurring expression of the partitive and inclusive senses of the noun, which in English are left to be simply inferred from the connection, is a marked feature of French usage. Often, the two senses, alike unexpressed in English, are distinguished in French in the same brief sentence : thus, *birds have wings* (*i. e.*, all birds, but a certain limited number of wings), *les oiseaux ont des ailes ; time is money, le temps est de l'argent*.

VERB-LESSON.

7. The PRETERIT tenses of *avoir have* and *être be* are as follows :

| | |
|-----------------------------|------------------------------|
| j'eus, <i>I had</i> | je fus, <i>I was</i> |
| tu eus, <i>thou hadst</i> | tu fus, <i>thou wast</i> |
| il eut, <i>he had</i> | il fut, <i>he was</i> |
| nous eûmes, <i>we had</i> | nous fûmes, <i>we were</i> |
| vous eûtes, <i>you had</i> | vous fûtes, <i>you were</i> |
| ils eurent, <i>they had</i> | ils furent, <i>they were</i> |

a. As to the pronunciation of *eu* in *eus* etc., see 41b.

b. All preterits in the language, without exception, have the plural endings *-mes, -tes, -rent*, and before the first two of these endings they have a circumflexed vowel (either *û*, as here, or *â*, or *î*) ; and all excepting those of the first regular conjugation (XVIII.) have *-s, -s, -t*, as here, in the singular.

c. The preterit expresses simple past action, with nothing else implied. In some grammars, the tense is called the past definite (Fr. *passé défini*).

d. The interrogative form is *eus-je, fus-tu, eut-il*, and so on, as in the other tenses.

e. The French preterit is the Latin perfect : compare with *fus* etc. the Latin *fui, fuisti, fuit, fuimus, fuistis, fuerunt*.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Dieu, <i>God</i> | la terre, <i>the earth</i> |
| le pain, <i>the bread</i> | la viande, <i>the meat</i> |
| le beurre, <i>the butter</i> | le fromage, <i>the cheese</i> |
| le sel, <i>the salt</i> | le poivre, <i>the pepper</i> |
| le café, <i>the coffee</i> | le thé, <i>the tea</i> |
| le lait, <i>the milk</i> | le sucre, <i>the sugar</i> |
| le fruit, <i>the fruit</i> | l'encre f., <i>the ink</i> |

EXERCISE 4.

¹ L'enfant avait-il du pain? ² Oui, il avait du pain et du beurre. ³ Mon frère donne des fruits à votre sœur. ⁴ Ses filles ont-elles du café? ⁵ Elles ont du café, et elles ont aussi du lait et du sucre. ⁶ Avez-vous du fromage? ⁷ Non, mais j'ai du beurre. ⁸ Je donne au garçon de la viande; il a du sel et du poivre aussi. ⁹ A-t-il des livres et des crayons? ¹⁰ Elle avait du papier et de l'encre. ¹¹ L'homme est l'enfant de Dieu. ¹² Dieu donne aux hommes les fruits de la terre. ¹³ L'homme est un animal. ¹⁴ Voilà des livres; ils sont à mon ami. ¹⁵ As-tu des frères et des sœurs? ¹⁶ Non, mais j'ai des amis et des amies.

THEME 4.

¹ Have you any coffee or tea? ² Yes, we have some coffee, and our mother has some tea. ³ His mother gives bread and milk to her children. ⁴ Have your sisters meat, pepper, and salt? ⁵ No, but they have bread and cheese. ⁶ I have a garden, and I give fruit to my friends. ⁷ Have you my pencils? ⁸ Your brother has your pencils, but I have some paper and pens. ⁹ The boy has horses and dogs. ¹⁰ Cats are animals. ¹¹ The dog is also an animal. ¹² God gives to man flowers, the fruits of the earth. ¹³ God is the friend of man. ¹⁴ The earth is the garden of God. ¹⁵ Had the child a father or mother? ¹⁶ No, but she had friends and sisters. ¹⁷ Here are coats and hats. ¹⁸ There are books and pens.

VERB-EXERCISE.

(For the past forms, give both imperfect and preterit.)

You had. Had they? Has she? We have. They were. Is he? Have you? You were. He was. Had I? I am. Thou wast. Hadst thou? I was.

LESSON V.

MATERIAL AND MEASURE.

1. In French (as often in English), the material of which anything is made is expressed by help of the preposition *de of*: thus,

| | |
|---|---|
| une bague d'or, <i>a ring of gold</i> | une *cuiller d'argent, <i>a spoon of silver</i> |
| la bourse de soie, <i>the purse of silk</i> | des chapeaux de velours, <i>hats of velvet</i> |

a. Such expressions as *a gold ring, a silver spoon, a silk purse, a velvet hat*, in which we use in English the noun of material as if it were an adjective, are impossible in French.

b. English adjectives of material in *-en* or *-n*, as *wooden, woolen, leathern*, also have to be expressed in French by *de* and the noun of material: thus,

une table de bois, *a wooden table* du drap de laine, *some woolen cloth*

2. Nouns expressing measure of quantity, of weight, of number, and so on, are also followed (as usually in English) by *de of* before the name of the thing measured: thus,

| | |
|---|--|
| une bouteille de vin, <i>a bottle of wine</i> | une livre de sucre, <i>a pound of sugar</i> |
| des morceaux de pain, <i>bits of bread</i> | des paires de bas, <i>pairs of stockings</i> |

3. Also after adverbs of quantity, *de of* is required in French (though usually omitted in English): thus,

beaucoup d'eau, *much water* (literally, *much of water*)
trop de vin, *too much wine* assez de fleurs, *enough flowers*

This construction is that of a noun instead of an adverb, or like that of the corresponding English words before *this* and *that*: thus, *enough of this and too much of that*.

4. The commonest adverbs of quantity are:

| | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| beaucoup, <i>much, many</i> | peu, <i>little, few</i> |
| plus, <i>more</i> | moins, <i>less</i> |
| trop, <i>too much, too many</i> | trop peu, <i>too little, too few</i> |
| tant, <i>so much, so many</i> | autant, <i>as much, as many</i> |
| combien, <i>how much?</i> | assez, <i>enough</i> |

a. **Assez** *enough* is never allowed to stand, as in English, after the noun measured: thus, always **assez de pain**, for English *enough bread*, or *bread enough*.

b. After **bien**, also meaning *much*, *many*, and **la plupart** *most* (literally, *the more part*), **de** must be followed by the definite article before the noun: thus, **bien des hommes** (not *d'hommes*) *many men*, **la plupart des livres** *most books*.

VERB-LESSON.

5. The FUTURE tenses of **avoir** *have* and **être** *be* are these:

| | |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| j'aurai, <i>I shall have</i> | je serai, <i>I shall be</i> |
| tu auras, <i>thou wilt have</i> | tu seras, <i>thou wilt be</i> |
| il aura, <i>he will have</i> | il sera, <i>he will be</i> |
| nous aurons, <i>we shall have</i> | nous serons, <i>we shall be</i> |
| vous aurez, <i>you will have</i> | vous serez, <i>you will be</i> |
| ils auront, <i>they will have</i> | ils seront, <i>they will be</i> |

a. Every future in the language, without exception, is inflected like these, with the endings **-ai**, **-as**, **-a**, **-ons**, **-ez**, **-ont**, and with **r** before the endings.

b. The interrogative form is, as in other tenses, **aurai-je**, **seras-tu**, **aura-t-il** (I. 10*c*), etc.

c. The French future corresponds with no Latin tense, but is a modern formation, made by adding the present of **avoir** to the infinitive of the verb: thus, **aurai** is contracted from **avoir-ai**, *I have to have*, etc. Hence the correspondence of the endings with those of the present of **avoir**, and hence also the preceding **r**; since the French infinitive always ends in **r** (or **re**).

VOCABULARY.

(Besides the words of quantity given in the Lesson.)

| | |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| le vin, <i>the wine</i> | l'eau f., <i>the water</i> |
| le drap, <i>the cloth</i> | le velours, <i>the velvet</i> |
| la laine, <i>the wool</i> | la soie, <i>the silk</i> |
| la table, <i>the table</i> | la chaise, <i>the chair</i> |
| le mètre, <i>the meter, yard</i> | la livre, <i>the pound</i> |
| la bouteille, <i>the bottle</i> | le verre, <i>the glass</i> |
| la tasse, <i>the cup</i> | le morceau, <i>the bit, piece</i> |
| le bois, <i>the wood</i> | que, <i>than, as</i> |

EXERCISE 5.

¹ Avez-vous une bouteille de vin? ² Non, mais j'ai un verre d'eau, et un morceau de pain. ³ Mon ami a une table

de bois et beaucoup de chaises. ⁴ Il a plus de chaises que de tables. ⁵ Combien de tableaux avez-vous? ⁶ Nous avons trois tableaux. ⁷ Le garçon a moins de plumes que de crayons. ⁸ Votre sœur a-t-elle des robes de drap? ⁹ Elle a des robes de soie et un chapeau de velours. ¹⁰ J'avais deux habits et autant de chapeaux. ¹¹ Avaient-elles du drap de laine? ¹² Aviez-vous autant de soie que de velours? ¹³ Nous avons quatre mètres de soie, et assez de velours. ¹⁴ Il avait trop de vin et trop peu d'eau. ¹⁵ Elle donne à son frère une tasse de thé ou de café. ¹⁶ Bien des hommes ont peu de pain et de viande. ¹⁷ La plupart des tables sont de bois.

THEME 5.

¹ Had you much wine? ² I had a cup of tea and a bit of bread. ³ Your daughter has my silk dress. ⁴ I had too many pens and pencils, and too little paper. ⁵ Has the girl dresses enough? ⁶ She has three woollen dresses, and as many hats. ⁷ The man gives a bottle of wine to his friends. ⁸ She had also a bit of bread and cheese, and a glass of milk. ⁹ I have more friends than brothers. ¹⁰ Most men have water enough, and many men have too much wine. ¹¹ My mother had many yards of silk and velvet. ¹² We have wooden tables and glass bottles. ¹³ Most bottles are of glass. ¹⁴ My father gives his niece four yards of cloth and a little velvet. ¹⁵ I had three pounds of tea and as much coffee, and a pound of sugar. ¹⁶ You have less pepper than salt. ¹⁷ There are many books and sheets of paper.

VERB-EXERCISE.

She will have. Will he be? Were they? We shall be. They will have. Is he? Had you? I shall be. Shall I have? They had. We are. We shall have. Wilt thou have? You will be.

LESSON VI.

PREPOSITIONS ; PROPER NAMES.

1. The commonest French prepositions (besides **à** and **de**) are as follows :

| | | |
|--|---|---|
| après , <i>after</i> | derrière , <i>behind</i> | pour , <i>for</i> |
| avant , <i>before</i> (previous to) | devant , <i>before</i> (in front of) | sans , <i>without</i> |
| avec , <i>with</i> | en , <i>in, into</i> | sous , <i>under</i> |
| chez , <i>at the house of</i> | entre , <i>between</i> | sur , <i>upon</i> |
| dans , <i>in, into</i> | par , <i>by, through</i> | vers , envers , <i>toward</i> |

Other prepositions and preposition-phrases will be given in a later Lesson (XXXIII.).

a. For *in* or *into*, **dans** is more common than **en**; and **en** is almost never used before the definite article or a possessive.

b. Of the two prepositions meaning *before*, **avant** is used only of time, **devant** only of place.

c. **Chez** *at the house of* may often be rendered by *with*, but in a different sense from **avec**: thus, **dînez chez nous**, *dine with us, i.e., at our house*; but **dînez avec nous**, *dine with us, i.e., along with us, in our company somewhere*.

2. Names of countries and provinces in French generally take the definite article.

a. Some of the commonest names of countries are :

| | |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| la France, <i>France</i> | l'Amérique, <i>America</i> |
| l'Angleterre, <i>England</i> | l'Europe, <i>Europe</i> |
| l'Allemagne, <i>Germany</i> | l'Asie, <i>Asia</i> |
| l'Espagne, <i>Spain</i> | l'Afrique, <i>Africa</i> |
| l'Italie, <i>Italy</i> | la Chine, <i>China</i> |
| la Suisse, <i>Switzerland</i> | la Belgique, <i>Belgium</i> |
| l'Autriche, <i>Austria</i> | la Hollande, <i>Holland</i> |
| la Prusse, <i>Prussia</i> | la Suède, <i>Sweden</i> |
| la Russie, <i>Russia</i> | la Norvège, <i>Norway</i> |

All these are feminine ; masculine are **le Danemark** *Denmark*, **le Hanovre** *Hanover*, **le Mexique** *Mexico*, **le Japon** *Japan*, and a few others.

3. But the article is omitted before names of countries in certain cases, especially the following :

a. After *en in, into, to* : thus, **il est en France** *he is in France*, **je vais en Amérique** *I am going to America*.

b. After words meaning *king, emperor, kingdom, empire, duchy, or the like* ; also after **histoire** *history*, **carte** *map*, etc. : thus, **roi de France** *king of France*, **l'empire d'Allemagne** *the empire of Germany*, **une carte d'Amérique** *a map of America*.

c. After the name of a commodity coming from the country designated : thus, **les vins de France** *the wines of France* (French wines), **du cuir de Russie** *Russian leather*, **de l'or de Californie** *some Californian gold*.

4. With the name of a country, the preposition *en* is used, to express both *in* and *to* (literally, *into*) ; but with the name of a city or town, *à* is used, to express both *to* and *at* or *in*.

Thus, **je vais en Angleterre** *I am going to England*, but **je vais à Londres** *I am going to London*, and **il demeure en Italie** *he lives in Italy*, but **il demeure à Rome** *he lives in (at) Rome*.

5. With regard to the use of the article, other proper names follow the same rules in French as in English : thus,

a. Names of persons and of cities and towns are used without the article.

b. Names of mountains and rivers take the article.

c. Examples of common names of persons are :

Jean, *John*

Louis, *Lewis*

Henri, *Henry*

Jules, *Julius*

François, *Francis, Frank*

Guillaume, *William*

Jeanne, *Jane, Joan, Joanna*

Louise, *Louisa*

Henriette, *Henrietta, Harriet*

Julie, *Julia*

Françoise, *Frances, Fanny*

Marie, *Mary, Maria*

d. Examples of names of towns are :

Londres, *London*

Vienne, *Vienna*

*Bruxelles, *Brussels*

Genève, *Geneva*

Venise, *Venice*

Lyon, *Lions*

e. Examples of names of mountains and rivers are :

les Alpes, *the Alps*

les Pyrénées, *the Pyrenees*

le Rhin, *the Rhine*

la Tamise, *the Thames*

le Danube, *the Danube*

la Seine, *the Seine*

But names of single mountains also take the article : thus, le **Vésuve** *Vesuvius*.

f. A few names of persons and places require the article : thus, le **Dante** *Dante*, le **Havre** *Havre*, le **Caire** *Cairo*.

VERB-LESSON.

6. The **CONDITIONAL** tenses of **avoir** *have* and **être** *be* are :

j'aurais, *I should have*

je serais, *I should be*

tu aurais, *thou wouldst have*

tu serais, *thou wouldst be*

il aurait, *he would have*

il serait, *he would be*

nous aurions, *we should have*

nous serions, *we should be*

vous auriez, *you would have*

vous seriez, *you would be*

ils auraient, *they would have*

ils seraient, *they would be*

a. Every conditional in the language, without exception, is inflected like these, with the endings **-ais**, **-ais**, **-ait**, **-ions**, **-iez**, **-aient**—which are precisely the same with the imperfect endings (III. 7a) ; and these endings are invariably preceded by **r**.

b. The conditional is, in fact, a kind of imperfect or past tense to the future, always differing from it in the endings only. It is made up of the infinitive with the imperfect of **avoir** added to it (**aurais** = **avoir avais**, literally, *I had to have*).

VOCABULARY.

(Only the words of the lists given in the Lesson.)

EXERCISE 6.

¹ Jean est-il chez son cousin ? ² Non, il est chez sa tante.
³ Sa sœur est avec ses amies dans le jardin derrière la maison. ⁴ Le vin de France était sur la table de bois entre les deux fenêtres. ⁵ Aviez-vous du thé dans votre tasse ?
⁶ J'avais du thé avec du lait et du sucre. ⁷ La bouteille de lait était pour l'enfant. ⁸ Louis est en France, mais sa sœur est à Rome. ⁹ Paris, sur la Seine, est la capitale de la France. ¹⁰ Serez-vous en Angleterre ? ¹¹ Oui, nous

serons à Londres. ¹² La Suisse est entre la France et l'Italie. ¹³ Les Alpes sont en Suisse. ¹⁴ Le chapeau de Jeanne était sous une chaise devant la porte. ¹⁵ Avez-vous des amis en Amérique? ¹⁶ Mon ami a beaucoup d'arbres devant sa maison.

THEME 6.

¹ Is the child at his uncle's? ² No, he is in his room with his brothers. ³ The fruit on the table is for the girls. ⁴ Your brother William is in front of the house behind a tree. ⁵ John is with Mary at her father's. ⁶ The chair is between the two windows. ⁷ Henry is in France, and he will be at Paris. ⁸ The dress was of French silk, and the coat was of English cloth. ⁹ The trees are in the garden behind my house, and the fruit is on the trees. ¹⁰ You will have sugar and milk in your coffee. ¹¹ Henry's dog is under the table. ¹² Frank had water in his glass. ¹³ The bread and the Italian cheese will be on the table.

VERB-EXERCISE.

Would you have? They will be. She would be. He will have. Will she have? They had. I should be. Wouldst thou be? We are. Have they? We should be. Would they be? I am. Have I? He had. They will have.

LESSON VII.

ADJECTIVES—GENDER.

1. Adjectives in French have in general a variation of form for gender and for number, and are made to agree in both these respects with the nouns (or pronouns) to which they relate.

a. The adjective, whether attributive or appositive or predicative, whether before or after the word it qualifies or otherwise separated from it, whether qualifying a word expressed or understood, must be of the gender and number of the qualified word.

b. Exceptions are adjectives relating to **nous** *we* and **vous** *you*, when these pronouns are used with reference to a single person. Such adjectives are singular only. Thus, *you are very good* is **vous êtes très bon** (to a man), or **vous êtes très bonne** (to a woman); but **très bons** or **très bonnes**, if addressed to more than one.

2. A feminine adjective ends always in mute **e**; and the feminine of most adjectives is made by simply adding mute **e** to the masculine form: thus,

| | | | |
|--------|----------------------|-------|----------------------|
| m. | f. | m. | f. |
| petit, | petite, <i>small</i> | aisé, | aisée, <i>easy</i> |
| grand, | grande, <i>great</i> | joli, | jolie, <i>pretty</i> |
| noir, | noire, <i>black</i> | vrai, | vraie, <i>true</i> |
| royal, | royale, <i>royal</i> | nu, | nue, <i>naked</i> |
| plein, | pleine, <i>full</i> | bleu, | bleue, <i>blue</i> |

But there are many exceptions to this rule. Thus:

3. If a masculine adjective ends already in **e** mute, the feminine has the same form: thus,

| | |
|---------------------------------|------------------------|
| m. f. | m. f. |
| sage, <i>wise, well-behaved</i> | honnête, <i>honest</i> |
| facile, <i>easy</i> | impie, <i>impious</i> |

4. Adjectives ending in the masculine in **el**, **eil**, **ien**, **on**, also many in **s** and **t**, double their final consonant before the added mute **e** of the feminine: thus,

| | | | |
|---------|--------------------------|---------|-----------------------|
| m. | f. | m. | f. |
| cruel, | cruelle, <i>cruel</i> | pareil, | pareille, <i>like</i> |
| ancien, | ancienne, <i>ancient</i> | bon, | bonne, <i>good</i> |
| gros, | grosse, <i>big</i> | bas, | basse, <i>low</i> |
| net, | nette, <i>neat</i> | sot, | sotte, <i>stupid</i> |

a. Adjectives in **s** and **t** falling under this rule are mostly monosyllabic, but also **épais** (**épaisse**) *thick*, **sujet** (**sujette**) *liable*, **muet** (**muette**) *mute*, and a few others. But **ras** *smooth*, **obtus** *obtuse*, **prêt** *ready*, **mat** *dull*, add **e** simply.

b. **Nul** (**nulle**), **gentil** (**gentille**), and **fol** and **mol** (below, 7), follow the analogy of adjectives in **el** and **eil**.

5. Adjectives ending in the masculine in **x** and **f**

change these respectively to *s* and *v* before the added *e* mute : thus,

| | | | |
|---------------|-----------|----------------|----------|
| m. | f. | m. | f. |
| heureux, | heureuse, | jaloux, | jalouse, |
| <i>happy</i> | | <i>jealous</i> | |
| vif, | vive, | neuf, | neuve, |
| <i>lively</i> | | <i>new</i> | |

For an exception or two, see below, 8.

6. In some adjectives, changes of spelling are the necessary result of the addition of *e* for the feminine : thus,

a. Adjectives having in the masculine an *e* before a final consonant (whether pronounced or silent) change it to *è* in the feminine, if the consonant is not doubled (21*b*) : thus,

| | | | |
|-------------|--------|-----------------|-----------|
| m. | f. | m. | f. |
| cher, | chère, | complet, | complète, |
| <i>dear</i> | | <i>complete</i> | |

And *ef* in like manner becomes *ève* : thus, **brief**, **brève**, *brief*.

b. Final *c* is changed for the feminine to **que** (72*a*), and final *g* to **gue** (62*f'*) : thus,

| | | | |
|----------------|-----------|-----------------|----------|
| m. | f. | m. | f. |
| public, | publique, | [franc,] | franque, |
| <i>public</i> | | <i>Frankish</i> | |
| turc, | turque, | long, | longue, |
| <i>Turkish</i> | | <i>long</i> | |

And so **oblong** *oblong*. But **grec** *Greek* makes **grecque** (not *grèque*) ; and **blanc** *white*, **franc** *frank*, **sec** *dry*, make more irregularly **blanche**, **franche**, **sèche**.

c. Adjectives ending in **gu** add *ë* for the feminine (8*a*) : thus, **aigu**, **aiguë**, *acute* ; **ambigu**, **ambiguë**, *ambiguous*.

7. Five adjectives have two different forms in the masculine, from one of which the feminine is made ; they are :

| | |
|-----------------|-----------------------------|
| m. | f. |
| beau bel, | belle, <i>beautiful</i> |
| nouveau nouvel, | nouvelle, <i>new, novel</i> |
| vieux vieil, | vieille, <i>old</i> |
| fou fol, | folle, <i>foolish, mad</i> |
| mou mol, | molle, <i>soft</i> |

a. Of the two masculine forms, the one in *l* is used before a word beginning with a vowel (or *h* mute) : thus,

| | |
|------------------|-----------------------|
| un bel homme, | <i>a handsome man</i> |
| le nouvel ordre, | <i>the new order</i> |
| un fol espoir, | <i>a foolish hope</i> |

but *un beau livre a handsome book, le livre est beau the book is handsome*, and so on.

8. Some adjectives form their feminine more irregularly; of these the commonest are:

| | | | |
|--------------|--------------|--------------|-----------------|
| m. | f. | m. | f. |
| frais, | fraîche, | faux, | fausse, |
| doux, | douce, | favori, | favorite, |
| <i>fresh</i> | <i>sweet</i> | <i>false</i> | <i>favorite</i> |

VERB-LESSON.

9. The IMPERATIVES of *avoir have* and *être be* are as follows:

| | |
|---|--------------------------------|
| aie, <i>have, have thou, do thou have</i> | sois, <i>be, etc.</i> |
| ayons, <i>let us have, have we</i> | soyons, <i>let us be, etc.</i> |
| ayez, <i>have, have ye, do you have</i> | soyez, <i>be, etc.</i> |

a. While the English imperative may be used either with or without a subject expressed, the French never allows one.

b. Third persons imperative are supplied from the present subjunctive: see below, VIII. 7c.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| bon, bonne, <i>good</i> | mauvais, -aise, <i>bad, wicked</i> |
| beau bel, belle, <i>handsome, beautiful</i> | joli, jolie, <i>pretty</i> |
| grand, grande, <i>large, tall</i> | petit, petite, <i>small, little</i> |
| vieux vieil, vieille, <i>old</i> | jeune, <i>young</i> |
| rouge, <i>red</i> | noir, noire, <i>black</i> |
| blanc, blanche, <i>white</i> | long, longue, <i>long</i> |
| heureux, heureuse, <i>happy</i> | cher, chère, <i>dear</i> |
| la *ville, <i>the city</i> | le *village, <i>the village</i> |
| le maître, <i>the master</i> | l'élève, <i>the pupil</i> |
| très, <i>very</i> | trop, <i>too</i> |

EXERCISE 7.

¹ Votre sœur est-elle jolie? ² Ma petite sœur est sage et jolie. ³ La maison de mon père est belle, et son jardin est grand. ⁴ Le fruit de son arbre est bon. ⁵ Votre oncle est-il beau? ⁶ Oui, mon oncle est un bel homme, et ma tante est une très belle femme. ⁷ Le maître est bon, et l'enfant sera heureux. ⁸ Le petit enfant a un vieux maître. ⁹ Le village est-il grand? ¹⁰ Non, il est petit, mais la ville est grande et belle. ¹¹ Le petit vieil homme est mon cher

maître. ¹² La fleur est blanche, mais le fruit est rouge ou noir. ¹³ Le maître était très vieux, et l'élève était trop jeune. ¹⁴ Ma vieille tante est chez ma chère cousine. ¹⁵ Le beau jeune homme est le cousin de mon vieil ami. ¹⁶ Votre robe est trop longue.

THEME 7.

¹ Is your brother large? ² Yes, I have a tall brother and a pretty little sister. ³ The house is handsome, but it is too small. ⁴ We have a large house and a small garden. ⁵ The flower is red and the fruit is white. ⁶ Your city is large and beautiful; our village is small and pretty. ⁷ I was young and happy, but my master was old. ⁸ The old man is tall and black. ⁹ The woman is young, white, and handsome. ¹⁰ The beautiful woman is my dear aunt. ¹¹ The master was too old, or the pupil was too young. ¹² Is your mother beautiful? ¹³ No, but she is good and happy. ¹⁴ My cousin (f.) is a pretty young woman. ¹⁵ Milk (IV. 5) is white, wine is red, and ink is black. ¹⁶ The tree is tall and handsome, but the fruit is small and bad.

VERB-EXERCISE.

Be. Let us have. They were. He would be. Be (ye). You will have. They would have. He is. We were. Have (thou). Will he have? Would they be? She has. They (f.) will have. Let us be. He will be. We were. Should I be?

LESSON VIII.

ADJECTIVES—NUMBER, POSITION.

1. The plural of an adjective is generally formed as the plural of a noun of like ending would be: thus,

a. A feminine adjective (since it ends in *e*) always adds *s* for the plural.

b. Masculines in general add *s*; but final *s* or *x* (*z* does not occur) remain unchanged; *au* and *eu* (not *ou*) add *x*; *al* is usually changed to *aux*.

c. But *bleu blue* makes *bleus*; some in *al* make *als* (as *fatals*, *finals*, *ovals*, etc.); of the adjectives having two forms in the singular (VII. 7), the plural is made from the form ending in *u*: thus, *beaux, nouveaux, fous, mous*.

2. The adjective in French comes more usually after than before the noun which it qualifies.

a. Adjectives have great freedom of position in French, and it depends very much upon the euphony of the sentence and the choice of the writer or speaker whether in a given case the adjective shall precede or follow the noun. The following rules point out some of the leading considerations that help to determine the question.

3. A few of the commonest adjectives are almost invariably placed before the noun.

a. These are especially the adjectives meaning *good* and *bad* (*bon, mauvais*), *large* or *big* and *small* (*grand* or *gros, petit*), *young* and *old* (*jeune, vieux*), also *beau handsome*, *vrai true*, with some others: thus,

| | |
|------------------------------------|--|
| le bon *sens, <i>good sense</i> | un beau livre, <i>a handsome book</i> |
| de grands hommes, <i>great men</i> | mon vieux cousin, <i>my old cousin</i> |

4. a. An adjective denoting a physical quality, as color or form, inclines to follow the noun; one denoting an ideal or moral quality, to precede it: thus,

| | |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| des fleurs rouges, <i>red flowers</i> | une tête ronde, <i>a round head</i> |
| son lit dur, <i>his hard bed</i> | le bouillon chaud, <i>the hot broth</i> |

b. An adjective tends to follow the noun when taken in a more literal sense, and to precede it when taken in a more figurative sense: thus,

| | |
|--|--|
| un fossé profond, <i>a deep ditch</i> | un profond silence, <i>a deep silence</i> |
| la barbe noire, <i>the black beard</i> | une noire trahison, <i>a black treason</i> |
| un livre cher, <i>a dear book</i> | un cher ami, <i>a dear friend</i> |

5. a. An adjective having adjuncts rather follows the noun; but a simple adjective rather precedes a noun that has other adjuncts: thus, *une fille assez jeune et passablement belle a rather young and tolerably handsome girl*; *l'immortel auteur du Paradis perdu the immortal author of Paradise Lost*.

b. An adjective used more appositively, or having a special prominence or emphasis, or signifying something brought for-

ward as now rather than referred to as already understood, comes after the noun: thus, *c'est un livre excellent* *this is an excellent book*, but *cet excellent livre est à moi* *this excellent book is mine*.

c. In virtue of these differences, some adjectives have a well-marked distinction of meaning, according as they precede or follow the noun: thus, **cher** *dear* means *costly* after the noun, but *loved* before it; **brave** is *brave* after, but *excellent*, *worthy* before; **honnête** is *nice*, *civil* after, but *honest* before; **pauvre** is *indigent* after, but *of poor quality* or *pitiable* before; **simple** is *mere* before; **certain** is *certain* in the sense of *one* or *some* before, of *sure* after; **dernier** is *last elapsed* after, but *concluding*, *final* before; **propre** is *neat* after, but *own* before—and so on.

6. The partitive sense of a noun that is preceded by an adjective is usually expressed by *de* alone, without the definite article: thus,

de bon pain, *good bread*

de petits enfants, *little children*

de mauvais sucre, *bad sugar*

de belles fleurs, *beautiful flowers*

a. But if the adjective follows the noun, the article is not omitted: thus, *du pain excellent* *excellent bread*, *des fleurs magnifiques* *magnificent flowers*.

b. Also, if the adjective and following noun form together a current combination, a kind of compound name for something, the article remains: thus, *du bon sens* *good sense*, *des jeunes gens* *young folks*, *des petits pois* *green peas*.

VERB-LESSON.

7. The PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVES of *avoir* *have* and *être* *be* are as follows:

que j'aie, *that I may have*

que je sois, *that I may be*

que tu aies, *that thou mayest have*

que tu sois, *that thou mayest be*

qu'il ait, *that he may have*

qu'il soit, *that he may be*

que nous ayons, *that we may have*

que nous soyons, *that we may be*

que vous ayez, *that you may have*

que vous soyez, *that you may be*

qu'ils aient, *that they may have*

qu'ils soient, *that they may be*

a. For the exchange of *i* and *y* in these forms, see 37b.

b. It is customary to prefix the conjunction **que** *that* to the inflection of the subjunctive tenses in French grammars, because a subjunctive usually (not always) has that conjunction before it. For the abbreviation of **que** to **qu'**, see 26c.

c. The 3d persons of this tense are often used in an imperative sense, and in some grammars they are given also with the imperative, as its 3d persons: thus,

qu'il ait, *let him have*qu'il soit, *let him be*qu'ils aient, *let them have*qu'ils soient, *let them be*

d. This tense corresponds to the one of the same name in Latin.

VOCABULARY.

l'école f., *the school*l'église f., *the church*la vie, *life*la famille, *the family*pauvre, *poor*riche, *rich*bleu, *blue*brun, *brown*actif, *active*laborieux, *laborious*aimable, *amiable*honnête, *honest*simple, *simple*modeste, *modest*intéressant, *interesting*excellent, *excellent*nouveau (VII. 7), *new*aveugle, *blind*

EXERCISE 8.

¹ Avez-vous de belles fleurs? ² J'ai des fleurs bleues et rouges. ³ Les jeunes filles ont de beaux chapeaux. ⁴ Elles ont aussi de nouvelles robes simples et modestes. ⁵ Mon pauvre oncle a un fils aveugle. ⁶ Les hommes pauvres ont une vie active et laborieuse. ⁷ La vieille église est de bois noir. ⁸ L'enfant vertueux est à l'école chez un maître excellent. ⁹ L'excellent maître est un bon ami des enfants riches et des enfants pauvres. ¹⁰ Nous avons des livres très bons et très intéressants, mais nous avons aussi de mauvais livres. ¹¹ L'honnête homme laborieux aura une vie heureuse. ¹² Mon frère est un garçon honnête et aimable. ¹³ J'ai de bon vin blanc dans des bouteilles noires. ¹⁴ Ils ont de bon pain noir, du beurre, et de très-mauvais fromage. ¹⁵ La pauvre fille aveugle a un père riche. ¹⁶ Elle a de grands yeux noirs. ¹⁷ Mon père a une famille aimable et intéressante.

THEME 8.

¹ Have you good friends? ² I have interesting friends and dear sisters. ³ She is a laborious young girl. ⁴ My poor cousin is very unhappy. ⁵ She has a little blind daughter. ⁶ I have a rich uncle. ⁷ My rich uncle is an

honest man. ⁸ He has a simple and modest life. ⁹ We shall have an excellent school in our little village. ¹⁰ There is an interesting old church. ¹¹ Mary is a pretty and modest girl. ¹² She has small hands and large blue eyes. ¹³ Have you black bread and good butter? ¹⁴ Here is good white bread and excellent butter. ¹⁵ You have old red wine in new black bottles. ¹⁶ My good old uncle has very interesting books in his little brown house. ¹⁷ He has a large family.

LESSON IX.

ADJECTIVES—COMPARISON.

1. Adjectives in French are for the most part not otherwise compared than by putting before them adverbs meaning *more* etc.

a. The comparative adverb is **plus** *more*, and this is made superlative by prefixing to it the definite article: thus, **le plus** *the most*.

b. We may also prefix **moins** *less* and **le moins** *least* to an adjective, producing a comparison downwards, or of diminution.

2. Hence, examples of the ordinary comparison of a French adjective are as follows:

| | | |
|-------------------------|-----------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| beau, <i>handsome</i> | plus beau, <i>handsomer</i> | le plus beau, <i>handsomest</i> |
| jeune, <i>young</i> | plus jeune, <i>younger</i> | le plus jeune, <i>youngest</i> |
| aimable, <i>amiable</i> | plus aimable, <i>more amiable</i> | le plus aimable, <i>most amiable</i> |

a. The article before **plus** is of course varied for gender and number, like the adjective: thus, **la plus belle** *handsomest* (woman), **les plus jeunes** *youngest* (men or women).

3. But three adjectives have a special form for the comparative, which then is made superlative by prefixing to it the definite article. They are:

| | | |
|---------------------|-------------------------|-----------------------------|
| bon, <i>good</i> | meilleur, <i>better</i> | le meilleur, <i>best</i> |
| mauvais, <i>bad</i> | pire, <i>worse</i> | le pire, <i>worst</i> |
| petit, <i>small</i> | moindre, <i>smaller</i> | le moindre, <i>smallest</i> |

a. But **mauvais** and **petit** are also compared with **plus**; and even **bon**, in the sense of *good-natured*.

4. Comparison of equality is expressed by **aussi** *as* before the adjective. After the adjective, both *as* and *than* are expressed by **que**. Thus :

aussi belle que sa sœur, *as handsome as her sister*

plus petit que mon frère, *smaller than my brother*

5. Special rules are :

a. The article showing the superlative has to be dropped after a possessive : thus, **mon plus jeune frère** *my youngest brother* (not distinguishable from *my younger brother*).

b. If a superlative adjective is put after a noun having the definite article, the article must be repeated : thus, **l'homme le plus savant** *the most learned man*, **la ville la plus peuplée** *the most populous city*.

c. After a superlative, the preposition **de** *of*, and not **dans** *in*, is used before a word of place : thus, **le plus bel homme du monde** *the handsomest man in the world*, **la plus grande ville de l'Europe** *the largest city in Europe*.

VERB-LESSON.

6. The IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVES of **avoir** *have* and **être** *be* are as follows :

que j'eusse, *that I might have*

que tu eusses, *that thou mightest*

have

qu'il eût, *that he might have*

que nous eussions, *that we might*

have

que vous eussiez, *that you might*

have

qu'ils eussent, *that they might*

have

que je fusse, *that I might be*

que tu fusses, *that thou mightest*

be

qu'il fût, *that he might be*

que nous fussions, *that we might*

be

que vous fussiez, *that you might*

be

qu'ils fussent, *that they might be*

a. Every imperfect subjunctive in the language, without exception, is inflected like these, with the endings **-sse**, **-sses**, **-t**, **-ssions**, **-ssiez**, **-ssent**, and with a circumflexed vowel (**û** or **â** or **î**) before the **t** of the 3d singular.

b. The subjunctive tenses are by no means always to be rendered in English with the auxiliaries *may* and *might*, but sometimes with others, as *should* and *would*, and sometimes by simple subjunctive or even indicative forms.

c. This tense is from the Latin pluperfect subjunctive : compare *fusse* etc. with Lat. *fuissem* etc.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------|
| plus, <i>more</i> | moins, <i>less</i> |
| meilleur, <i>better</i> | pire, <i>worse</i> |
| le paysan, <i>the peasant</i> | la rose, <i>the rose</i> |
| laid, <i>ugly</i> | 'haut, <i>high</i> |

EXERCISE 9.

¹ Mon frère est le plus joli garçon du village. ² Mon ami est plus beau que ton frère. ³ Le pauvre garçon est le plus jeune des enfants de mon vieil ami. ⁴ Étiez-vous plus jeune que votre sœur ? ⁵ Non, ma sœur était la plus jeune et la plus jolie de notre famille. ⁶ Paris est la plus grande ville de la France, mais elle est moins grande et moins riche que Londres. ⁷ L'Amérique est plus grande que l'Europe, et moins grande que l'Asie. ⁸ Louise est la jeune fille la plus aimable du monde. ⁹ L'enfant sera aussi laid que son pauvre père. ¹⁰ Le meilleur vin était dans la plus petite bouteille. ¹¹ Les paysans les plus honnêtes et les plus beaux de l'Europe sont dans les plus hautes montagnes. ¹² Les élèves sont plus jeunes que le maître. ¹³ Henri est le pire de tous les garçons du village. ¹⁴ Avez-vous de meilleur vin ? ¹⁵ La rose est la plus belle de toutes les fleurs.

THEME 9.

¹ His sister is ugly, but his niece is the ugliest girl in the city. ² The boy is as handsome as his beautiful cousin. ³ The largest pieces of bread are for the poorest children. ⁴ The good and honest peasants are less poor than the bad men of the city. ⁵ The Alps are the highest mountains in Europe. ⁶ A city is larger than a large village. ⁷ Mary is as pretty as Helen, but she is less amiable and interesting. ⁸ The youngest of the children are my sisters. ⁹ The prettiest child is my youngest sister. ¹⁰ The peasants of the Alps were his best friends. ¹¹ The women are as handsome as the men. ¹² The smallest horse is larger than the largest

dog. ¹³ The cat is smaller than the dog. ¹⁴ The worst boy in the village was your dearest friend. ¹⁵ The red wine is better than the white wine.

LESSON X.

CONJUGATION—THE VERB *avoir* *have*.

1. In the preceding lessons have been given, with their complete inflection, examples of all the simple tenses and modes of the French verb. The remaining parts are the infinitive, the present and past participles, and the compound forms, made with an auxiliary verb.

2. The INFINITIVES of the two verbs *have* and *be* are:

avoir, have, to have

être, be, to be

a. The infinitive always ends in **r** or **re**.

b. The "sign of the infinitive," corresponding to the English *to*, is either **à to** or (quite as often) **de of**. As to the use of the one or the other of these, see Part Second, § 172 etc. But the French infinitive is often also (like the English) used without a sign, as subject of a verb, after various verbs, and after prepositions, especially **pour in order to** (literally *for, for to*): thus, **parler est mieux to speak is better, il veut avoir he wishes to have, pour être in order to be**.

c. The French infinitive corresponds to the Latin infinitive active.

3. The PRESENT PARTICIPLES of the same verbs are:

ayant, having

étant, being

a. The present participle invariably ends in **ant**.

b. This participle, when used as a participle, has no variation for gender or number. Often, however, it is used as an adjective, and then is varied like any other adjective: thus, **une charmante femme a charming woman, des yeux perçants piercing eyes**.

c. This participle is also (apparently) very commonly used after the preposition **en**: thus, **en étant in being, in the act of being, while being** (and often best rendered *being* simply).

d. In fact, however, the so-called participle with **en** answers to the Latin ablative gerund in **-ndo** (**en ayant = Lat. in habendo**). The participle is the Latin present participle (**ayant = Lat. habent-em**).

4. The PAST PARTICIPLES of the same verbs are:

eu, had

été, been

a. This participle is variable for gender and number, like any ordinary adjective.

b. The past participle corresponds to the Latin passive participle.

5. Compound forms for all the parts of a French verb (except the imperative and the past participle) are made, as in English, by adding its past participle to the various forms of an auxiliary verb. The auxiliary is usually *avoir have*; but some verbs take instead *être be* (see below, XXVIII. 5-7).

a. Hence, to make any given compound form, the corresponding simple form of *avoir* (or sometimes of *être*) is to be taken, and the past participle of the principal verb added to it.

b. The participle is for the most part unvaried, or has its masculine singular form, in the compound forms of the verb when made with *avoir*. But it is a rule in French that if a compound verb-form has a direct object, and that object stands before the verb, the participle is made to agree with it in gender and number: thus, *quels livres avez-vous eus what books have you had?* *les fleurs que j'ai eues the flowers which I have had*, and so on: see Part Second, § 191 etc.

6. The compounds of the present and imperfect tenses are best called, as in English, the PERFECT and PLUPERFECT; that of the preterit, the PAST ANTERIOR; those of the future and conditional, the FUTURE PERFECT and CONDITIONAL PERFECT.

a. In many grammars, the indicative perfect is called the past indefinite (Fr. *passé indéfini*). It is very often used where in English we have the preterit; and especially, of anything that has happened during this day, or during any period of which the present is viewed as a part.

b. For the use of the past anterior, see Part Second, § 122.

7. The compound forms of *avoir have* are made, as in English, with *avoir* itself as auxiliary. The simple and compound forms are given together in full below.

COMPLETE CONJUGATION OF *avoir have*.

| | |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------|
| INFINITIVE. | PERFECT INFINITIVE. |
| <i>avoir, have, to have</i> | <i>avoir eu, to have had</i> |
| PRESENT PARTICIPLE. | PERFECT PARTICIPLE. |
| <i>ayant, having</i> | <i>ayant eu, having had</i> |
| PAST (OR PASSIVE) PARTICIPLE. | |
| <i>eu, had</i> | |

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

j'ai, *I have*
 tu as, *thou hast*
 il a, *he has*
 nous avons, *we have*
 vous avez, *you have*
 ils ont, *they have*

PERFECT.

j'ai eu, *I have had*
 tu as eu, *thou hast had*
 il a eu, *he has had*
 nous avons eu, *we have had*
 vous avez eu, *you have had*
 ils ont eu, *they have had*

IMPERFECT.

j'avais, *I had, was having, etc.*
 tu avais, *thou hadst etc.*
 il avait, *he had etc.*
 nous avions, *we had etc.*
 vous aviez, *you had etc.*
 ils avaient, *they had etc.*

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais eu, *I had had*
 tu avais eu, *thou hadst had*
 il avait eu, *he had had*
 nous avions eu, *we had had*
 vous aviez eu, *you had had*
 ils avaient eu, *they had had*

PRETERIT.

j'eus, *I had*
 tu eus, *thou hadst*
 il eut, *he had*
 nous eûmes, *we had*
 vous eûtes, *you had*
 ils eurent, *they had*

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus eu, *I had had*
 tu eus eu, *thou hadst had*
 il eut eu, *he had had*
 nous eûmes eu, *we had had*
 vous eûtes eu, *you had had*
 ils eurent eu, *they had had*

FUTURE.

j'aurai, *I shall have*
 tu auras, *thou wilt have*
 il aura, *he will have*
 nous aurons, *we shall have*
 vous aurez, *you will have*
 ils auront, *they will have*

FUTURE PERFECT.

j'aurai eu, *I shall have had*
 tu auras eu, *thou wilt have had*
 il aura eu, *he will have had*
 nous aurons eu, *we shall have had*
 vous aurez eu, *you will have had*
 ils auront eu, *they will have had*

CONDITIONAL.

j'aurais, *I should have*
 tu aurais, *thou wouldst have*
 il aurait, *he would have*
 nous aurions, *we should have*
 vous auriez, *you would have*
 ils auraient, *they would have*

CONDITIONAL PERFECT.

j'aurais eu, *I should have had*
 tu aurais eu, *thou wouldst have had*
 il aurait eu, *he would have had*
 nous aurions eu, *we should have had*
 vous auriez eu, *you would have had*
 ils auraient eu, *they would have had*

IMPERATIVE.

ayons, *let us have*
 ayez, *have, have thou*

ayons, *let us have*
 ayez, *have, have ye*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

que j'aie, *that I may have*
 que tu aies, *that thou mayest have*
 qu'il ait, *that he may have*
 que nous ayons, *that we may have*
 que vous ayez, *that you may have*
 qu'ils aient, *that they may have*

IMPERFECT.

que j'eusse, *that I might have*
 que tu eusses, *that thou mightest have*
 qu'il eût, *that he might have*
 que nous eussions, *that we might have*
 que vous eussiez, *that you might have*
 qu'ils eussent, *that they might have*

PERFECT.

que j'aie eu, *that I may have had*
 que tu aies eu, *that thou mayest etc.*
 qu'il ait eu, *that he may have had*
 que nous ayons eu, *that we may etc.*
 que vous ayez eu, *that you may etc.*
 qu'ils aient eu, *that they may etc.*

PLUPERFECT.

que j'eusse eu, *that I might have had*
 que tu eusses eu, *that thou mightest have had*
 qu'il eût eu, *that he might have had*
 que nous eussions eu, *that we might have had*
 que vous eussiez eu, *that you might have had*
 qu'ils eussent eu, *that they might have had*

VOCABULARY.

l'or m., *gold*
 la main, *the hand*
 le marchand, *the (retail) merchant*
 malheureux, *unhappy*
 si, *if*

l'argent m., *silver, money*
 la poche, *the pocket*
 le boulanger, *the baker*
 ignorant, *ignorant*
 quoique, *although*

NOTE.—**Quoique** (XXXIV. 1a) always requires the following verb to be in the subjunctive; **si** (XXXIV. 1b) has the indicative. For the abbreviation of **si** to **s'**, see 29b.

EXERCISE 10.

¹ J'ai un morceau de pain, et j'aurai aussi du beurre.
² Avez-vous eu assez de fromage? ³ Nous aurions eu autant de beurre que de fromage. ⁴ Eurent-ils de l'argent?
⁵ Elle eut de l'argent dans la main, et il avait eu de l'or dans la poche. ⁶ Mon cousin aurait eu du vin, s'il avait eu un verre. ⁷ Mes sœurs auront de jolies robes. ⁸ Aurai-ent-elles eu aussi de beaux chapeaux? ⁹ Ayez du café avec votre pain. ¹⁰ Ayons de la viande aussi. ¹¹ Mon frère a eu un grand cheval laid; il aura un beau petit cheval.

- ¹² Il aura eu deux chevaux. ¹³ Qu'il ait aussi un chien !
¹⁴ Si nous avons eu un frère, nous aurions eu des amis.
¹⁵ Quoique nous ayons beaucoup d'argent, nous sommes très malheureux. ¹⁶ Ayant un bon père, elle est heureuse.
¹⁷ Quoiqu'il ait eu un maître excellent, l'élève est paresseux et ignorant. ¹⁸ Le marchand a-t-il eu de la soie bleue ?
¹⁹ Il avait beaucoup de soie, mais j'avais très peu d'argent.
²⁰ Le boulanger a du pain noir et de bon pain blanc. ²¹ Il était malheureux, quoiqu'il eût assez de pain et de vin.

THEME 10.

¹ Had the merchant some pens? ² He had pens, and he will have paper, ink, and books. ³ You have had black ink; he will have had good red ink. ⁴ Had you had white bread? ⁵ I should have had bread enough, if he had had butter. ⁶ The boys had money enough; they will have meat and wine. ⁷ Our old master would have had a new school, if he had had more pupils. ⁸ Although he had few pupils, he was satisfied. ⁹ Had you a bit of gold in your pocket? ¹⁰ I had gold in my hand, and silver in my pocket. ¹¹ Have a bit of bread and cheese. ¹² Let us have new hats and handsome red and blue dresses. ¹³ We shall have had coffee and tea. ¹⁴ Will your sisters have red flowers? ¹⁵ Though they had much money, they were unhappy. ¹⁶ That I might have some wine and water! ¹⁷ That you might have had a horse! ¹⁸ The man will have a laborious life, if he has too little money. ¹⁹ The baker, having had some wine, had a bottle in his hand. ²⁰ Although the peasants have little money, they are happy and content. ²¹ Although the girl had beautiful eyes, she was very ugly.

LESSON XI.

CONJUGATION OF THE VERB être *be*.

1. All the simple forms of être *be* have been given in previous lessons. They are here repeated in their order, along with the compound forms, which are made, as in English, with the help of the auxiliary avoir *have*.

INFINITIVE.
être, *be, to be*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.
étant, *being*

PERFECT INFINITIVE.
avoir été, *to have been*

PERFECT PARTICIPLE.
ayant été, *having been*

PAST (OR PASSIVE) PARTICIPLE.
été, *been*

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.
je suis, *I am*
tu es
il est
nous sommes
vous êtes
ils sont

PERFECT.
j'ai été, *I have been*
tu as été
il a été
nous avons été
vous avez été
ils ont été

IMPERFECT.
j'étais, *I was, used to be, etc.*
tu étais
il était
nous étions
vous étiez
ils étaient

PLUPERFECT.
j'avais été, *I had been*
tu avais été
il avait été
nous avions été
vous aviez été
ils avaient été

PRETERIT.
je fus, *I was*
tu fus
il fut
nous fûmes
vous fûtes
ils furent

PAST ANTERIOR.
j'eus été, *I had been*
tu eus été
il eut été
nous eûmes été
vous eûtes été
ils eurent été

FUTURE.

je serai, *I shall be*
 tu seras
 il sera
 nous serons
 vous serez
 ils seront

FUTURE PERFECT.

j'aurai été, *I shall have been*
 tu auras été
 il aura été
 nous aurons été
 vous aurez été
 ils auront été

CONDITIONAL.

je serais, *I should be*
 tu serais
 il serait
 nous serions
 vous seriez
 ils seraient

CONDITIONAL PERFECT.

j'aurais été, *I should have been*
 tu aurais été
 il aurait été
 nous aurions été
 vous auriez été
 ils auraient été

IMPERATIVE.

sois, *be, be thou*
 soyons, *let us be*
 soyez, *be, be ye*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

que je sois, *that I may be*
 que tu sois
 qu'il soit
 que nous soyons
 que vous soyez
 qu'ils soient

PERFECT.

que j'aie été, *that I may have been*
 que tu aies été
 qu'il ait été
 que nous ayons été
 que vous ayez été
 qu'ils aient été

IMPERFECT.

que je fusse, *that I might be*
 que tu fusses
 qu'il fût
 que nous fussions
 que vous fussiez
 qu'ils fussent

PLUPERFECT.

que j'eusse été, *that I might have been*
 que tu eusses été
 qu'il eût été
 que nous eussions été
 que vous eussiez été
 qu'ils eussent été

a. Être corresponds only in part to the Latin esse etc.; the infinitive (disputed), participles, and imperfect come from the corresponding forms of stare stand; the future and conditional are formed in the usual way (V. 5c) from essere, made by adding the usual infinitive-ending re to esse.

2. To express the indefinite subject *it* of *it is, it was*, etc., the French generally uses *ce*, literally *this* (XXIV. 2), but sometimes also *il it*.

a. Il is used in statements of time, particularly of the time of day; and *ce* in most other cases. Thus:

il est quatre heures, *it is 4 o'clock*

il était midi, *it was noon*

il sera dix heures, *it will be 10 o'clock*

il est minuit, *it is midnight*

il est tard, *it is late*

il est temps de partir, *it is time to go*

c'est bien, *it is well*

c'était en vain, *it was in vain*

c'est moi, *it is I*

c'était nous, *it was we*

c'est à vous que je parle, *it is to you that I speak*

b. If the verb after *ce* is followed by a plural noun, or a plural pronoun of the third person, it is itself made plural: thus,

ce furent elles, *it was they*

ce seront mes amis, *it will be my friends*

ce sont nos livres que je vois, *it is our books that I see*

VOCABULARY.

malade, *sick, ill*

faible, *feeble, weak*

paresseux, *idle, lazy*

content, *contented, happy*

à la campagne, *in the country*

l'heure f., *the hour, o'clock*

à présent, *at present, now*

toujours, *always*

EXERCISE 11.

¹ Votre ami est-il riche? ² Mon ami est pauvre à présent, mais il a été très riche. ³ Ils seraient heureux, s'ils avaient été honnêtes et laborieux. ⁴ Nous avons été à l'école, et nous serons à l'église avec nos sœurs. ⁵ Vous auriez eu de très bon vin, si vous aviez été chez mon oncle. ⁶ L'homme a-t-il été malade? ⁷ Il a été très faible, et il sera malade. ⁸ Quoique les jeunes filles soient très contentes à la campagne, elles seront malheureuses à la ville. ⁹ Sois bon et sage, et tu seras heureux. ¹⁰ Vous êtes jeune et belle; soyez contente. ¹¹ Il est trois heures à présent; il sera quatre heures. ¹² Ce sont les enfants de mon frère. ¹³ Ils auraient eu de belles fleurs et des fruits, mais ils ont été très mauvais. ¹⁴ Il est deux heures, et elle sera à l'église. ¹⁵ C'était l'homme le plus paresseux du monde. ¹⁶ Quoique le garçon fût à l'école, il était toujours pares-

seux. ¹⁷ Ayant été malade, la femme est très faible.
¹⁸ Quoiqu'il fût riche, il était plus malheureux qu'un homme
 pauvre. ¹⁹ Il aura été chez mon père une heure: ²⁰ C'était
 du vin d'Espagne.

THEME 11.

¹ It is my children. ² They have been very bad, but they
 will be good now. ³ It is three o'clock. ⁴ My sisters will
 have been at school two hours. ⁵ Although they are very
 young, they are very idle. ⁶ If the man has been sick, he
 will be feeble. ⁷ Although we have been poor, we were
 always contented. ⁸ I should have been at school, if we
 had had a new master. ⁹ The boy had been at church dur-
 ing three hours. ¹⁰ Although the girls had beautiful hands,
 they were ugly. ¹¹ Be good and active, and you will be
 happy. ¹² Let us be lazy and happy. ¹³ It will be three
 o'clock, and the boys will be at school. ¹⁴ I should have
 been at Paris, but my father is in England. ¹⁵ If we had
 been in the country, we should have had fruit and flowers
 enough. ¹⁶ It was one o'clock, and Henry was in his room.
¹⁷ My sister had been very rich, and she was in Rome with
 my mother. ¹⁸ Having been in Italy, she is very happy.
¹⁹ It is a good man, but it is a bad merchant. ²⁰ It is a
 wooden table.

LESSON XII.

NEGATIVE CONJUGATION.

1. A verb is made negative by putting *ne* before and
pas after it—in a compound tense, before and after the
 auxiliary.

a. It must always be borne in mind that in any compound form
 it is the auxiliary that is the real verb, the added participle being
 only a verbal adjective. All rules, therefore, as to the place of
 negative words, subject and object pronouns, and so on, given
 with reference to the verb, apply to the auxiliary and not to the
 participle in compound forms.

b. The **ne** comes after the subject, but precedes a pronoun-object (XXII. 7). It is abbreviated always to **n'** before a vowel or **h** mute (26c).

2. Examples of tenses inflected negatively are :

je ne suis pas, *I am not*

tu n'es pas, *thou art not*

il n'est pas, *he is not*

nous ne sommes pas, *we are not*

vous n'êtes pas, *you are not*

ils ne sont pas, *they are not*

je n'avais pas eu, *I had not had*

tu n'avais pas eu, *thou hadst not had*

il n'avait pas eu, *he had not had*

nous n'avions pas eu, *we had not had*

vous n'aviez pas eu, *you had not had*

ils n'avaient pas eu, *they had not had*

3. Instead of **pas** is sometimes used **point**, which makes a stronger or more emphatic negative: thus,

il n'est point, *he is not (at all)* je n'avais point eu, *I (certainly) had not had.*

a. **Pas** and **point** are really nouns, meaning *step* and *point*, used adverbially to strengthen the negation, like English *not a bit* and the like.

b. With some verbs, **ne** is usually or always used alone, the **pas** being omitted: see Second Part, § 166.

4. For *never*, *nobody*, and *nothing*, the French say **ne . . . jamais** (literally, *not ever*), **ne . . . personne** (literally, *not a person*) and **ne . . . rien** (literally, *not a thing*), respectively, the two words being separated, and the **ne** put always before the verb (or auxiliary): thus,

je ne suis jamais malade, *I am never ill*

il n'avait jamais été chez nous, *he had never been at our house*

je n'ai vu personne, *I have seen nobody*

personne n'a eu mon livre, *no one has had my book*

n'avez-vous rien, *have you nothing?*

rien ne serait plus cruel, *nothing would be more cruel*

5. A verb made negative by **ne** is also followed by **ni . . . ni**, to give the sense of *neither . . . nor*; by **guère**, to give the sense of *scarcely, but little*; very often by **que** (literally *than*: i.e. *else than*), to give the sense of *only*; and by **plus**, to give the sense of *no longer*: thus,

il n'est ni jeune ni beau, *he is neither young nor handsome*

il n'a guère d'argent, *he has hardly any money*

je n'ai que trois livres, *I have only three books*

elle n'est plus ici, *she is no longer here*

6. The negative *ne* belongs strictly to the verb, and can never be used except with a verb expressed. If the verb, then, is omitted (for example, in answers), the *ne* is also omitted, and the other word has by itself a negative sense: thus,

| | |
|--|-------------------------|
| avez-vous des livres, <i>have you books?</i> | pas un, <i>not one</i> |
| qu'avez-vous, <i>what have you?</i> | rien, <i>nothing</i> |
| qui est ici, <i>who is here?</i> | personne, <i>nobody</i> |

7. After a negative verb, the partitive sense of a noun is expressed by *de* alone, without the article: thus,

| |
|--|
| je n'ai pas de pain, <i>I have no bread</i> |
| nous n'avions guère de vin, <i>we had scarcely any wine</i> |
| vous n'aurez plus de patience, <i>you will no longer have patience</i> |

a. After *ni . . . ni*, both preposition and article are omitted, and the partitive sense is left unexpressed, as in English: thus,

je n'ai ni pain ni beurre, *I have neither bread nor butter*

b. On the other hand, after *ne . . . que* only both preposition and article are used: thus,

nous ne voyons que des ennemis, *we see only enemies*

8. When a negative verb is made interrogative, the subject-pronoun is put, as usual, immediately after the verb (and joined to it by a hyphen), while everything else remains unchanged. An example of a tense used both negatively and interrogatively is as follows:

| |
|---|
| n'aurai-je pas été, <i>shall I not have been?</i> |
| n'auras-tu pas été, <i>will thou not have been?</i> |
| n'aura-t-il pas été, <i>will he not have been?</i> |
| n'aurons-nous pas été, <i>shall we not have been?</i> |
| n'aurez-vous pas été, <i>will you not have been?</i> |
| n'auront-ils pas été, <i>will they not have been?</i> |

a. *N'est-ce pas* is a much-used phrase, meaning *is it not so?* or corresponding to English repeated questions like *is he not? do they not?* and the like: thus, *il est encore malade, n'est-ce pas* *he is still ill, is he not?* *vous avez mon livre, n'est-ce pas* *you have my book, have you not?*

VOCABULARY.

No new words are given with this Lesson, but all the negative expressions given above are to be well learned.

EXERCISE 12.

¹ N'avez-vous pas été chez votre oncle ? ² Non, il n'était pas à la maison. ³ Avez-vous du pain ? ⁴ Non, nous n'avons pas de pain, nous n'avons que du beurre et du fromage. ⁵ Le marchand a-t-il du fruit ou du vin ? ⁶ Il n'a ni fruit ni vin. ⁷ Le pauvre paysan n'a-t-il pas été malade ? ⁸ Il n'a jamais été malade, mais sa femme est très faible, et il n'a rien pour ses enfants. ⁹ Quoiqu'elles ne soient pas riches, elles ne sont jamais malheureuses. ¹⁰ Votre frère ne sera-t-il pas à Paris avec ses amis ? ¹¹ Non, il ne sera ni à Paris ni à Londres ; il est en Italie. ¹² Personne n'a été chez mon père. ¹³ N'avez-vous rien pour mes pauvres petits enfants ? ¹⁴ Vous n'avez jamais eu d'enfants ; vous n'avez que des frères et des sœurs. ¹⁵ J'ai eu de bon papier rouge et de l'encre excellente, mais je n'ai plus rien. ¹⁶ Les garçons n'avaient-ils pas un très mauvais maître ? ¹⁷ Non, le maître n'était point mauvais ; il n'a été que faible et malade. ¹⁸ Nous avons assez d'eau, mais nous n'avons guère de vin. ¹⁹ Je n'aurais jamais été à l'école, si mon père n'avait pas eu une maison à Paris. ²⁰ Elle n'a été chez personne.

THEME 12.

¹ Had you not a sister ? ² No, I had neither sister nor brother, but I had many good friends. ³ Is not your father at Paris ? ⁴ No, he has never been in Paris. ⁵ The young girls will not be either at the house or at the school ; they will be at the church. ⁶ The poor woman is not happy ; she has been ill, and she has only a bit of bread in the house. ⁷ Has not the peasant many children ? ⁸ No, he has no children ; he has only a wife and a niece. ⁹ The school was not in the city. ¹⁰ Although the master was old, he was not (at all) ugly. ¹¹ He had good scholars, and he was never unhappy. ¹² He would not have been unhappy, if his pupils had not been very bad. ¹³ We have

been ill, but no one is ill any longer. ¹⁴ If he had never been idle, he would not be poor now. ¹⁵ I have only one friend, and he has neither books nor paper. ¹⁶ Are you not happier than your friend? ¹⁷ I shall not have had any wine in my glass. ¹⁸ If the girls had not had new hats, they would not have been at the church. ¹⁹ The children were in the garden, but they had no fruit. ²⁰ No one had any fruit. ²¹ He is no longer at my father's.

LESSON XIII.

DEMONSTRATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVES.

1. In French is made a fuller distinction than in English between pronominal adjectives, accompanying an expressed noun which they qualify, and pronominal substantives, or pronouns proper, standing for a noun not expressed. The pronoun forms will be given in later Lessons (XXIV.-XXVII.); the adjective forms, here and in the next Lesson. The pronominal adjectives always qualify a following noun, and are of the same gender and number with it.

2. The DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES, meaning *this* or *that* and *these* or *those*, are as follows :

cet or ce m., *cette* f. ; ces m.f. plural.

Cet m. is used when the following word begins with a vowel (or h mute) ; otherwise, ce. Thus :

| | |
|--|---|
| ce chapeau, <i>this</i> (or <i>that</i>) <i>hat</i> | ces chapeaux, <i>these</i> (or <i>those</i>) <i>hats</i> |
| cette robe, <i>this</i> (etc.) <i>dress</i> | ces robes, <i>these</i> (etc.) <i>dresses</i> |
| cet arbre, <i>this</i> (etc.) <i>tree</i> | cet homme, <i>this</i> (etc.) <i>man</i> |
| cet honnête homme, <i>this</i> (etc.) <i>honest fellow</i> | |

3. When the demonstrative is meant to be emphatic, or when *this* and *that* are to be distinguished from one another, the adverbs *ci here* and *là there* are added respectively to the qualified noun ; and they are joined to it in writing by a hyphen : thus,

ce chapeau-ci, *this hat* (literally, *this hat here*)
 ces robes-là, *those dresses* (literally, *those dresses there*)
 cet homme-ci et cette femme-là, *this man and that woman*

4. The INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVE, meaning *which* or *what*, is :

Sing. **quel** m., **quelle** f.; plur. **quels** m., **quelles** f.

Thus :

quel livre avez-vous, *which* (or *what*) *book have you?*
quelles fleurs sont sur la table, *what flowers are on the table?*

5. *a.* The interrogative adjective is also used in exclamation: thus,

quelle bonté, *what goodness!* **quels** beaux livres, *what beautiful books!*

b. It is likewise used as relative: thus,

je ne sais quel livre il a, *I don't know which book he has*

c. The indefinite article, sometimes added in English after *what*, is not expressed in French: thus, **quel bel homme**, *what a handsome man!*

VERB-LESSON.

6. In phrases signifying bodily conditions which one feels or is conscious of, **avoir** with a noun is used in French, where the English has the verb *be* with an adjective: thus,

j'ai faim, *I am hungry* (literally, *I have hunger*)

il a soif, *he is thirsty* (literally, *he has thirst*)

n'avez vous pas sommeil, *are you not sleepy?*

nous avons froid, *we are cold*

vous avez chaud, *you are warm*

tu avais peur, *thou wast afraid*

ils auront honte, *they will be ashamed*

a. Similar phrases are **avoir mal à** *have a pain or ache in*, **avoir raison** *be right or in the right*, **avoir tort** *be wrong or in the wrong*: thus,

j'ai mal à la tête, *I have the headache*

vous avez raison et j'ai tort, *you are right and I am wrong*

b. In a corresponding manner, questions as to one's personal condition are asked and answered with **avoir**: thus, **qu'avez-vous** *what is the matter with you?* (literally, *what have you?*) and **avez-vous quelque chose** *is anything the matter with you?* (literally, *have you anything?*) and **je n'ai rien** *nothing is the matter with me* (literally, *I have nothing*).

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| la bibliothèque, <i>the library</i> | le conte, <i>the story, tale</i> |
| le roman, <i>the romance, novel</i> | l'histoire f., <i>the history</i> |
| la tête, <i>the head</i> | la dent, <i>the tooth</i> |
| autre, <i>other</i> | ennuyeux, <i>dull, tedious</i> |
| pourquoi, <i>why?</i> | parce que (XXXIV. 5a), <i>because</i> |

EXERCISE 13.

¹ Quels enfants ont été à l'école ? ² Ces bons petits garçons-ci sont toujours à l'école, mais ces filles-là n'ont jamais été à l'école. ³ Quels livres avez-vous dans la main ? ⁴ Ce livre-ci est un roman, et cet autre livre est une histoire. ⁵ C'étaient des livres de la bibliothèque de mon oncle. ⁶ Ces livres-là sont-ils intéressants ? ⁷ Ces romans-là sont très intéressants, mais cette histoire-ci est trop ennuyeuse. ⁸ Les contes et les romans sont toujours plus intéressants que les histoires. ⁹ Quelles histoires avaient-ils eues (X. 5b) ? ¹⁰ Ils avaient eu l'histoire de France ; cet autre livre est une histoire d'Angleterre. ¹¹ Cet homme est-il l'ami de votre fils ? ¹² Non, madame, c'est son cousin. ¹³ Quel maître vos enfants avaient-ils ? ¹⁴ Je n'ai pas d'enfants ; ce garçon-ci est mon neveu, et cette jolie fille-là est ma nièce ; ils avaient un maître très bon, mais très ennuyeux. ¹⁵ Cette femme a beaucoup de cousins ; mais elle n'a que ces deux enfants. ¹⁶ Quels jolis petits enfants ! ¹⁷ Dans quelle maison avez-vous été ? ¹⁸ J'ai été à Paris chez ma cousine. ¹⁹ Quoique cette femme-ci soit très pauvre, elle n'est pas plus malheureuse que cet homme-là. ²⁰ Pourquoi cette femme est-elle malheureuse ? ²¹ Elle est malheureuse, parce qu'elle est toujours malade.

THEME 13.

This young girl has been in the country with her father. What dresses has she had (X. 5b) ? She has had these dresses and that hat. These histories are longer and less interesting than those novels. What book have you in

the hand? ⁶ This book is a dull little story. ⁷ This woman is the mother of this little girl, and the aunt of that big boy. ⁸ These young girls are not her daughters. ⁹ She has many cousins, but she has only this child. ¹⁰ These books belong (III. 6) to my uncle's library. ¹¹ What beautiful books, and what a large library! ¹² If this man had not been ill, these children would have had enough bread. ¹³ Although this man and this woman are honest and industrious, they have always been poor. ¹⁴ He had the bottle in this hand, and the glass in that hand. ¹⁵ In what cities have you been? ¹⁶ I have been in this city, but I have never been in that village. ¹⁷ This old man is very dull. ¹⁸ Why is he so dull? ¹⁹ He is dull because he has always been idle, and because he has never been at school. ²⁰ What an interesting story!

VERB-EXERCISE.

Are you cold? I am cold, but he is warm. Will he be hungry? He will be hungry and thirsty. What is the matter with him? He is sleepy. Is anything the matter with you? No, nothing is the matter with me. They have the headache. I am right and you are wrong. I am always right; I am never wrong. Nothing is the matter with us. Has she not the toothache? No, nothing is the matter with her. We were afraid. They are ashamed.

LESSON XIV.

POSSESSIVE AND INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES.

1. The POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES are:

| | |
|----------------------|--------------------------------|
| Sing. mon m., ma f.; | plur. mes m.f., <i>my</i> |
| ton m., ta f.; | tes m.f., <i>thy</i> |
| son m., sa f.; | ses m.f., <i>his, her, its</i> |
| notre m.f.; | nos m.f., <i>our</i> |
| votre m.f.; | vos m.f., <i>your</i> |
| leur m.f.; | leurs m.f., <i>their</i> |

a. There is no distinction made in French between *his* and *her* and *its*; **son** etc. has all these meanings, and, like the other adjectives, is varied only to agree with the noun which it qualifies.

2. But the feminine singular forms **ma**, **ta**, **sa** are not allowed before a word beginning with a vowel (or **h** mute); instead are used **mon**, **ton**, **son**: thus,

| | |
|--|---|
| mon amie , <i>my (female) friend</i> | ton épouse , <i>thy spouse</i> |
| son âme , <i>his soul</i> | son histoire , <i>her history</i> |
| mon aveugle sœur , <i>my blind sister</i> | ton aimable fille , <i>thy lovely daughter</i> |

3. The possessives are repeated before every noun that they qualify: thus,

my father and mother, **mon père et ma mère**
her friends and relatives, **ses amis et ses parents**

4. Titles of respect or politeness, used both in addressing and in speaking of persons, are the following:

***monsieur**, *sir, Mr., the gentleman*
 ***messieurs**, *gentlemen, Messrs.*
madame, *madam, my lady, the lady, Mrs.*
mesdames, *my ladies, the ladies*
mademoiselle, *Miss, the young lady*
mesdemoiselles, *Misses, the young ladies*

a. These words are compounds with the possessive **mon** *my*, and both parts of the compounds are inflected.

b. In speaking to any one of his or her relatives, politeness often requires these titles to be put before the possessive: thus,

your mother, **madame votre mère**
your brothers, **messieurs vos frères**
your son and daughter, **monsieur votre fils et mademoiselle votre fille**

c. When these titles are used with a surname, they are written with a capital. thus, **Monsieur Guizot**; or, by abbreviation, **M. Guizot**.

5. The possessive is often used in French, especially in address, where it is omitted in English: thus, **bonjour, ma sœur** *good-day, sister*, **oui, mon général** *yes, General*.

a. On the other hand, the definite article is often used in French instead of the possessive, where the connection shows clearly what is meant: thus, **il l'avait dans la poche** *he had it in his pocket*, **fermez les yeux** *shut your eyes*.

6. The commonest INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES are:

chaque, *each, every*
 tout, *every, all*
 quelque, *some*

nul, *not any, no*
 aucun, *not any, no*
 plusieurs, *several*

a. Of these words, **chaque** is only singular, and **plusieurs** only plural; **nul** and **aucun** form feminines, **nulle** and **aucune**, but no plural; **quelque** has the plural **quelques**; **tout** makes the feminine **toute**, and the plurals **tous** m., **toutes** f.

b. **Tout** means *all* when followed by an article or possessive or demonstrative: thus,

toute la ville, *all the city (the whole city)*

toute ville, *every city*

tous ses enfants, *all his children*

tout enfant, *each child*

tout ce temps, *all this time*

à tout temps, *at every time*

c. **Quelque** signifies a more limited *some* than the partitive (IV. 1, 2), and is usually better rendered by *a little, a few*: thus,

des pommes, *some apples*

quelques pommes, *a few apples*

de l'argent, *money*

quelque argent, *some little money*

d. **Nul** and **aucun** both alike require **ne** with the verb: thus,

nul homme n'est parfait, *no man is perfect*

il n'a aucune faute, *he has not any fault*

VOCABULARY.

le bœuf, *the ox*

la vache, *the cow*

la brebis, *the sheep*

le champ, *the field*

la pomme, *the apple*

la pomme de terre, *the potato*

la poire, *the pear*

la pêche, *the peach*

le panier, *the basket*

le vase, *the vase*

le légume, *the vegetable*

le parent, *the relative, parent*

EXERCISE 14.

¹ Monsieur B. a-t-il des enfants? ² Oui, madame, ce garçon-ci est son fils, mais la petite fille est sa nièce. ³ Ces demoiselles avec Mademoiselle B. sont ses cousines. ⁴ Ces messieurs sont-ils les amis de monsieur votre père? ⁵ Non, ce sont ses frères. ⁶ Mon amie a un grand vase d'argent. ⁷ Quelles fleurs a-t-elle dans la main? ⁸ Elle n'a point de

fleurs ; elle n'a qu'un livre dans la main, et une pomme dans la poche. ⁹ Mademoiselle votre sœur n'a-t-elle pas été en Allemagne ? ¹⁰ Non, elle a été en Angleterre avec madame votre tante. ¹¹ As-tu des amis, mon enfant ? ¹² Oui, madame, j'ai plusieurs amis et quelques parents. ¹³ Cette femme-ci est-elle ta mère ? ¹⁴ Non, madame, elle est ma tante. ¹⁵ Voici mon père et ma mère. ¹⁶ Ces paysans ont-ils des vaches et des *bœufs ? ¹⁷ Non, mon oncle, chaque paysan a une vache et quelques brebis, mais aucun paysan n'a de bœufs. ¹⁸ Toutes leurs brebis sont dans les champs. ¹⁹ Quels fruits avez-vous dans votre panier ? ²⁰ J'ai quelques pommes et plusieurs poires. ²¹ N'avez-vous pas aussi des pommes de terre ? ²² Je n'ai aucune pomme de terre, mais j'ai des pêches.

THEME 14.

¹ Is your mother at the house ? ² No, she is in Paris, with her cousin, Miss B. ³ Are these boys your friends ? ⁴ No, cousin ; they are the children of my teacher. ⁵ They have been in all the schools of this whole city. ⁶ Every friend of my son is my friend also. ⁷ All these peasants have been in the fields, and each woman has a basket on her head. ⁸ Several women have vegetables in their baskets. ⁹ Have you peaches and pears, my good woman ? ¹⁰ I have a few pears, sir, but I have no peaches. ¹¹ Do all these animals belong to your son ? ¹² No, sir, the sheep belong to my son, but he has no horse, and we have only three cows. ¹³ What vegetables have we, Mary ? ¹⁴ We have a few potatoes in the house, and several apples. ¹⁵ Each child will have an apple, but no child will have a peach. ¹⁶ I had some little money in my pocket, but my brother had nothing. ¹⁷ I never have potatoes in my pocket. ¹⁸ They had some flowers, but they had no vase. ¹⁹ This poor old woman had a basket on her head. ²⁰ My friend (f.) had her history in her hand ; she is now at school.

LESSON XV.

CARDINAL NUMERALS.

1. The names of numbers are as follows :

| | | |
|--------------|-------------------------|----------------------|
| 1 un | 10 dix | 61 soixante et un |
| 2 deux | 20 vingt | 62 soixante-deux |
| 3 trois | 30 trente | 63 soixante-trois |
| 4 quatre | 40 quarante | 64 soixante-quatre |
| 5 *cinq | 50 cinquante | 65 soixante-cinq |
| 6 *six | 60 *soixante | 66 soixante-six |
| 7 *sept | 70 soixante-dix | 67 soixante-sept |
| 8 *huit | 80 quatre-vingts | 68 soixante-huit |
| 9 neuf | 90 quatre vingt-dix | 69 soixante-neuf |
| 10 *dix | 100 cent | 70 soixante-dix |
| 11 *onze | 101 cent un | 71 soixante et onze |
| 12 douze | 102 cent deux | 72 soixante-douze |
| 13 treize | 103 cent trois | 73 soixante-treize |
| 14 quatorze | 200 deux cents | 74 soixante-quatorze |
| 15 quinze | 201 deux cent un | 75 soixante-quinze |
| 16 seize | 206 deux cent six | 76 soixante-seize |
| 17 *dix-sept | 1000 mille, mil | 77 soixante-dix sept |
| 18 *dix-huit | 2000 deux mille | 78 soixante-dix huit |
| 19 *dix-neuf | 1,000,000 un million | 79 soixante-dix-neuf |
| 20 vingt | 2,000,000 deux millions | 80 quatre-vingts |

2. *a.* **Un** is masculine only, and forms the feminine *une*; no other numeral makes a distinction of gender.

b. **Vingt** *twenty*, *score*, and **cent** *hundred*, are the only numerals (below million) that make a plural: thus, **vingts**, **cents**. This plural form is used when *score* or *hundred* is multiplied by a preceding numeral—not, however, if an added numeral follows: thus,

cinq cents, *five hundred*
quatre-vingts, *fourscore*

cinq cent dix, *five hundred and ten*
quatre-vingt-un, *eighty-one*

3. The French has now no separate names for *seventy*, *eighty*, *ninety*, but after *sixty-nine* (as shown in the table) it counts *sixty-ten*, *sixty-eleven*, etc., up to *sixty-nineteen*; and so in like manner *fourscore-ten*, *fourscore-eleven*, etc., up to *fourscore-nineteen* or *ninety-nine*.

a. But the older *septante* *seventy*, *octante* *eighty*, and *nonante* *ninety*, are still occasionally met with.

4. The other odd numbers between the tens are made in the same way as those for 61 to 69 in the table.

Thus, *vingt et un* 21, **vingt-deux* 22, *trente-trois* 33, *quarante-cinq* 45, *cinquante-huit* 58, and so on.

a. *Vingt-un* 21, *trente-un* 31, etc., are sometimes used; also *cent et un* 101, *soixante et dix* 70, *soixante-onze* 71; but only *quatre-vingt-un* 81, *quatre-vingt-dix* 90, *quatre-vingt-onze* 91.

5. A hyphen is always inserted between a ten and a unit immediately following, but not when *et* stands between; and it is not used after *cent* or *mille*.

6. *Un* is not used before *cent* or *mille* in counting: that is, the French says simply *hundred*, *thousand*, not *one hundred* or *a thousand* and so on.

7. In giving dates, the briefer form *mil* is used instead of *mille*: thus,

mil sept cent soixante-seize, 1776

mil huit cent quatre-vingt-cinq, 1885

a. The French never says, in dates or elsewhere, *eighteen hundred* and so on, but always (*a*) *thousand eight hundred* etc.

8. Still higher numbers are used than those given in the table: thus, *un milliard* or *un billion a thousand million*, *un trillion a million millions*, etc.

9. After *plus more* and *moins less*, before a numeral, *than* is expressed by *de*: thus, *plus de trois ans more than three years*, *moins de dix minutes less than ten minutes*.

VOCABULARY.

l'an m., *l'année f.*, *the year*

la semaine, *the week*

la minute, *the minute*

combien, *how much? how many?* (V. 4)

la fois, *the time*

le mois, *the month*

le jour, *the day*

la seconde, *the second*

la chose, *the thing*

font, *make* (XXXII. 8b)

EXERCISE 15.

(The figures are to be read into words.)

¹ 5 ; 17 ; 23 ; 44 ; 72 ; 98 ; 117 ; 361 ; 1492 ; 1776 ; 1886.
² Ce paysan-ci a 3 chevaux, 4 bœufs, 13 vaches, et 219 brebis. ³ L'année a 365 jours. ⁴ Chaque jour a 24 heures.
⁵ L'heure a 60 minutes et 360 secondes. ⁶ L'année a 12 mois.
⁷ Le mois a 29, ou 30, ou 31 jours. ⁸ Combien de minutes le jour a-t-il ? ⁹ 60 fois 24 font 1440 ; le jour a 1440 minutes. ¹⁰ Combien de livres avez-vous sur la table ? ¹¹ J'ai plus de 7 livres. ¹² Mon oncle a plus de 565 livres dans sa bibliothèque. ¹³ Combien de fruits a-t-il dans son panier ? ¹⁴ Il a 11 pommes, 7 poires, et plus de 10 pêches. ¹⁵ J'ai été en Angleterre 6 mois et 3 semaines. ¹⁶ Combien d'heures la semaine a-t-elle ? ¹⁷ La semaine a 168 heures : 7 fois 24 font 168. ¹⁸ 5 fois 9 font 45.

THEME 15.

¹ Have you many books ? ² I have less than a hundred books, but my father has more than a thousand in his library. ³ How many peasants are in this village ? ⁴ Ninety-six ; and each peasant has a wife and several children. ⁵ How many animals have you, my good friend ? ⁶ I have nine cows, twelve oxen, and a hundred and twenty-one sheep. ⁷ Charles, how many weeks has a year ? ⁸ A year has fifty-two weeks and one day. ⁹ Three times four make twelve. ¹⁰ Five times two make ten. ¹¹ Seven times nine make sixty-three. ¹² Eleven times twelve make a hundred and thirty-two. ¹³ Where is your mother, sir ? ¹⁴ She has been more than four days in the country, but she is at home now. ¹⁵ These boys have had 41 apples ; they will be sick. ¹⁶ We shall have been in London less than three weeks. ¹⁷ A month has thirty or thirty-one days.

LESSON XVI.

ORDINAL NUMERALS.

1. The ordinals are mostly formed from the cardinals, whether simple or compound, by adding the ending *-ième*, before which a final *e* of the cardinal is omitted. But—

a. *First* is *premier*, and *second* is either **second* or the regular *deuxième*—except in compound numbers, where *first* is *unième*, and *second* is *deuxième* only.

b. *Cinq* makes *cinquième*, with inserted *u*; and *neuf* makes *neuvième*, with change of *f* to *v*.

2. Examples of the ordinals are :

| | |
|---|--|
| 1st <i>premier</i> | 21st { <i>vingt-unième</i> <i>vingt et unième</i> |
| 2d { * <i>second</i> <i>deuxième</i> | 22d <i>vingt-deuxième</i> |
| 3d <i>troisième</i> | 43d <i>quarante-troisième</i> |
| 4th <i>quatrième</i> | 56th <i>cinquante-sixième</i> |
| 5th <i>cinquième</i> | 67th <i>soixante-septième</i> |
| 6th <i>sixième</i> | 77th <i>soixante-dix-septième</i> |
| 7th <i>septième</i> | 99th <i>quatre-vingt-dix-neuvième</i> |
| 8th <i>huitième</i> | 100th <i>centième</i> |
| 9th <i>neuvième</i> | 101st <i>cent unième</i> |
| 11th <i>onzième</i> | 713th <i>sept cent treizième</i> |
| 18th <i>dix-huitième</i> | 1000th <i>millième</i> |
| 20th <i>vingtième</i> | 1248th <i>mille deux cent quarante-huitième</i> |

a. An ordinal is generally preceded by the definite article, *le* or *la* or *les*; and *premier* and *second* have a special feminine form: thus, *la première*, *la seconde*.

b. *Second* and *deuxième* are used somewhat indifferently; but *second* is rather preferred where there are only two objects (no third, fourth, etc., to follow): thus, *le second tome* *the second* (and last) *volume*, or *le deuxième tome*, *the second volume* (of a series).

3. The cardinal numeral sometimes stands in French where in English we use the ordinal: namely—

a. In giving the day of the month, except the first: thus,

le deux janvier, *the second of January*

le quatre ou le cinq avril, *the fourth or fifth of April*

du douze au vingt-trois mai, *from the 12th to the 23d of May*

le dix du mois, *the tenth of the month*

but

le premier mai, *the first of May*

b. In giving the title of a sovereign, except the first and sometimes the second: thus,

Guillaume trois, *William III.*

Henri quatre, *Henry IV.*

Louis quatorze, *Louis XIV.*

but

Henri premier, *Henry I.*

Charles deux or Charles second, *Charles II.*

c. In other numerations also, where the number follows the thing enumerated: thus,

tome deux, *volume second*

chapitre quatre, *chapter fourth*

page vingt-cinq, *page twenty-fifth*

article quarante-neuf, *article 49*

4. As in English, the ordinals are used also as fractionals—but only from *fifth* upward: thus,

un cinquième, *a fifth part*

trois vingtièmes, *three twentieths*

a. For *half*, the French has two words, *moitié* f. as noun, and *demi* (demie f.) as adjective. But *demi* before a noun is joined to it with a hyphen, and is not varied for gender. Thus:

la moitié du temps, *half of the time*

un demi-pied, *a half-foot, half a foot*

une demi-heure, *a half-hour, half an hour*

un pied et demi, *a foot and a half*

une heure et demie, *an hour and a half*

b. The words for *third* and *fourth* or *quarter* are *tiers* and *quart* respectively: thus,

trois et un tiers, *three and a third*

un quart d'heure, *quarter of an hour*

une aune et trois quarts, *a yard and three quarters*

c. *Quint* is also rarely used for *fifth part*, instead of *cinquième*.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| le grand-père, <i>the grandfather</i> | le petit-fils, <i>the grandson</i> |
| le roi, <i>the king</i> | la reine, <i>the queen</i> |
| le siècle, <i>the century</i> | le tome, <i>the volume</i> |
| le chapitre, <i>the chapter</i> | la page, <i>the page</i> |
| dernier, <i>last</i> (VIII. 5c) | prochain, <i>next</i> |
| Édouard, <i>Edward</i> | Élisabeth, <i>Elizabeth</i> |

EXERCISE 16.

(The figures are to be read into words.)

¹ Le 1^r, le 5^{me}, le 14^{me}, le 23^{me}, le 34^{me}, le 57^{me}, le 72^{me}, le 96^{me}, le 151^{me}, le 4004^{me}. ² Henri était le quatrième fils et le septième enfant de ses parents. ³ Louis XV. fut petit-fils de Louis XIV., et grand-père de Louis XVI. et de Charles X. ⁴ Les deux fils de Charles I. étaient Charles II. et Jacques II. ⁵ Henri VIII. avait 7 femmes; la première avait une fille, Marie. ⁶ Quel livre avez-vous dans la main? ⁷ J'ai le 3^{me} tome d'une histoire de France. ⁸ Combien de pages ce livre a-t-il? ⁹ Il a 387 pages; mais le 2^{me} tome a 419 pages, et le 1^r n'a que 278 pages. ¹⁰ Combien de mois avez-vous été en Italie? ¹¹ J'ai été à Rome deux mois et demi, et à Florence une semaine et demie. ¹² J'étais à Londres le 15 du mois, et j'avais été à Paris du 18 au 29 du mois dernier. ¹³ Quel tome avez-vous? ¹⁴ J'ai tome trois, chapitre quarante-deux, page trois cent cinq. ¹⁵ Ce garçon a été une demi-heure à l'école; il sera à l'église deux heures et un quart. ¹⁶ Ce mois est le 12^{me} de l'année. ¹⁷ Avez-vous du pain? ¹⁸ Non, monsieur, nous avons trois livres et demie de sucre, et une livre et quart de beurre; mais nous n'avons pas de pain. ¹⁹ J'ai été ici trois quarts d'heure, et je n'ai rien eu. ²⁰ Nous sommes enfants du 19^{me} siècle.

THEME 16.

¹ She is the fifth daughter of her parents. ² George III. was grandson of George II., and father of William IV. ³ Were you in Paris the 13th of last month? ⁴ No, I was

at Paris the 18th, and I shall be in London from the 12th to the 27th of the next month. ⁶ What history have you? ⁶ I have volume fifth of the history of Henry VII. ⁷ Henry VIII. was son of Henry VII., and father of Edward VI., Mary, and Elizabeth. ⁸ Elizabeth was the second queen of England; Victoria is the fifth. ⁹ Have you been in Germany? ¹⁰ I was in Germany a year and three quarters. ¹¹ I shall have been in school two hours and a half. ¹² Six months are (the) half of the year. ¹³ Each child had a half-cup of tea and a bit of bread. ¹⁴ They had a pound and a quarter of cheese, and three pounds and a half of sugar. ¹⁵ These (ce) are the children of my fourth son. ¹⁶ The first, the fourth, and the sixth of the children are boys. ¹⁷ The second, the third, and the fifth are girls. ¹⁸ My grandfather is now in his 83d year; he has many grandsons. ¹⁹ You are the 14th grandson of your grandfather. ²⁰ The France of our days is not the France of the 17th century.

LESSON XVII.

NUMERALS CONTINUED—MONTHS AND WEEK-DAYS.

1. The names of the months are as follows:

| | | |
|--------------------------|----------------------|-----------------------------|
| janvier, <i>January</i> | mai, <i>May</i> | septembre, <i>September</i> |
| février, <i>February</i> | juin, <i>June</i> | octobre, <i>October</i> |
| *mars, <i>March</i> | juillet, <i>July</i> | novembre, <i>November</i> |
| *avril, <i>April</i> | *août, <i>August</i> | décembre, <i>December</i> |

2. The names of the days of the week are as follows:

| | | |
|-------------------------|----------------------------|-------------------------|
| dimanche, <i>Sunday</i> | mercredi, <i>Wednesday</i> | vendredi, <i>Friday</i> |
| lundi, <i>Monday</i> | jeudi, <i>Thursday</i> | samedi, <i>Saturday</i> |
| mardi, <i>Tuesday</i> | | |

a. The names of months and of week-days are not written with capitals, as in English, but are treated like common nouns.

3. In giving a date, the number (generally cardinal: XVI. 3a) of the month-day stands before the month-

name, and is not usually followed by *de of*; before it stands the article *le* (in old style, *ce this*, and in mercantile style *au on the*): thus,

lundi le premier avril (rarely *d'avril*), *Monday, April 1st*

mardi le quatre juillet, *Tuesday, July 4th*

au trente juin, payez etc., *on June 30th, pay etc.*

Paris, ce dix-sept août, mil huit cents, *Paris, Aug. 17, 1800.*

a. In asking the day of the month, various expressions are used: e.g. *quel jour du mois* (or *quel quantième*) *sommes-nous* (or *avons-nous*, or *est-il*) *aujourd'hui* *what day of the month is it to-day?* *nous sommes* (etc.) *le treize* *it is the 13th.*

4. In giving the time of day, *o'clock* is expressed by *heures*, literally *hours*, and the parts of hours, as in the following examples:

one o'clock, une heure

five o'clock, cinq heures

what o'clock is it, quelle heure est-il?

it will soon be eleven, il sera bientôt onze heures

half past three, trois heures et demie

quarter past four, quatre heures et quart (or *et un quart*)

at a quarter to seven, à six heures et trois quarts or

à sept heures moins un quart

twenty three minutes past eight, huit heures et vingt-trois minutes

at twelve minutes before ten, à dix heures moins douze minutes

a. As the examples show, *heures* is not to be omitted.

b. But *douze heures* is not used for *twelve o'clock*; instead of it is said *midi* (literally *midday*) for twelve at noon, and *minuit* (literally *midnight*) for twelve at night: thus,

half past twelve o'clock, midi (or *minuit*) *et demie*

twenty minutes to twelve, midi (or *minuit*) *moins vingt minutes*

5. One's age is thus expressed:

how old are you, quel âge avez-vous? (literally, *what age have you*)

I am fifteen years old, j'ai quinze ans (literally, *I have 15 years*)

my sister is five and a half, ma sœur a cinq ans et demi

6. Measure is expressed as follows:

he is 6 feet high, il est haut de six pieds (literally, *high by 6 feet*)

this house is 45 feet long, cette maison est longue de quarante-cinq pieds

or *a quarante-cinq pieds de longueur*

7. For *times* with a numeral is used *fois*: thus, **deux fois twice, cinq fois sept font trente-cinq five times seven are** (literally, *make*) *thirty-five*.

8. For other numeral derivatives, see the Second Part, §§ 67 etc.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|----------------------------|--|
| longueur, <i>length</i> | largeur, <i>breadth</i> |
| aujourd'hui, <i>to-day</i> | souvent, <i>often</i> |
| ici, <i>here</i> | là, <i>there</i> |
| demain, <i>to-morrow</i> | après-demain, <i>day after to-morrow</i> |
| hier, <i>yesterday</i> | avant-hier, <i>day before yesterday</i> |

EXERCISE 17.

¹ Paris, le 23 Avril, 1886. ² Quel jour du mois avon-nous aujourd'hui? ³ Aujourd'hui est le 19 ou le 20; demain sera le 21. ⁴ Février est le 2^{me}, et décembre le 12^{me} mois de l'année. ⁵ Dimanche est le 1^{er} et vendredi le 6^{me} jour de la semaine. ⁶ Nous avons mercredi aujourd'hui; avant-hier a été lundi, et après-demain sera vendredi. ⁷ À quelle heure seras-tu chez mon père demain? ⁸ Je serai à l'église à dix heures et demie, et je serai chez ton père à midi et quart. ⁹ Quelle heure est-il? ¹⁰ Il est onze heures moins dix minutes, et nous avons été à l'école pendant deux heures et trois quarts. ¹¹ Quel âge votre fils a-t-il, madame? ¹² Mon fils a dix-neuf ans et demi, et il est haut de six pieds. ¹³ Notre maison a quarante-deux pieds de largeur, et elle est haute de trente-cinq pieds. ¹⁴ Ils ont été ici de dix heures à midi. ¹⁵ Les enfants ont été à l'école deux fois aujourd'hui, à neuf heures moins un quart, et à deux heures et demie. ¹⁶ À midi ils auront été à l'école trois heures et un quart. ¹⁷ Trois fois quatre font douze. ¹⁸ Sept et huit font quinze.

THEME 17.

¹ London, Sunday, Nov. 5, 1773. ² Washington, July 4, 1776. ³ What day of the week is it to-day? ⁴ It is Thursday, the 9th of June. ⁵ What day were you in Paris? ⁶ I was at Paris Tuesday or Wednesday of last week. ⁷ Satur-

day, Aug. 12th, I shall be in the country. ⁸ At what hour was my father here yesterday? ⁹ He was here at half past six or a quarter to seven. ¹⁰ He will be at the house to-morrow at a quarter past twelve. ¹¹ Is this gentleman often ill? ¹² He was ill yesterday, but he is not ill to-day. ¹³ He has been here a year and nine months. ¹⁴ How old is he? ¹⁵ He is 67 years old, and he is $5\frac{3}{4}$ feet high. ¹⁶ I have been three times at the school, but the master was not there. ¹⁷ Yesterday we were at church an hour and a half. ¹⁸ Our garden was 150 feet long, and 200 feet wide. ¹⁹ 7 times 9 are 63. ²⁰ 10 times 11 are 110. ²¹ 7 and 9 are 16.

LESSON XVIII.

REGULAR VERBS; FIRST CONJUGATION.

1. There are three regular conjugations of French verbs; their infinitives end respectively in 1. **er**; 2. **ir**; 3. **re**: thus, *donner, finir, vendre*.

a. There are also many irregular verbs having these same endings in the infinitive, and others having **oir**. Half-a-dozen of those ending in **oir** in the infinitive are in many grammars called another regular conjugation (the third, those in **re** being reckoned as the fourth). The irregular verbs will be given further on.

2. All the forms of regular verbs (and also most of those of irregular verbs) may be inferred from five leading forms, which are therefore called the **PRINCIPAL PARTS** of the verb. These are 1. the infinitive; 2. the present participle; 3. the past or passive participle; 4. the present indicative; 5. the preterit indicative.

a. In learning a French verb, then, regular or irregular, the first thing is to learn and make familiar the principal parts.

3. From the infinitive are made the future and conditional, by adding respectively **ai** and **ais** (the **e** of the infinitive ending **re** being lost): thus,

| | | | |
|-------------|-----------|----------|----------|
| INFINITIVE | donner | finir | vendre |
| FUTURE | donnerai | finirai | vendrai |
| CONDITIONAL | donnerais | finirais | vendrais |

a. This is the only case of a real derivation : see V. 5c, VI. 6b.

4. From the present participle may be found the imperfect indicative and the present subjunctive, by changing **ant** into **ais** and **e** respectively : thus,

| | | | |
|--------------|---------|-----------|---------|
| PRES. PPLE | donnant | finissant | vendant |
| IMPF. INDIC. | donnais | finissais | vendais |
| PRES. SUBJ. | donne | finisse | vende |

a. In many verbs, the plural persons of the present indicative need also to be inferred from the present participle : thus, **finissons** etc. from **finissant** ; see XXIV. 5c.

5. From the past participle are made, with the auxiliary verb **avoir** or **être** (see XXVIII. 5-7), the various compound forms—the perfect infinitive, perfect indicative, and so on : thus,

| | | | |
|--------------|-------------|------------|-------------|
| PAST PPLE | donné | fini | vendu |
| PERF. INFIN. | avoir donné | avoir fini | avoir vendu |
| PERF. INDIC. | j'ai donné | j'ai fini | j'ai vendu |
| | etc. etc. | etc. etc. | etc. etc. |

6. From the present indicative may be found the imperative : thus,

| | | | |
|--------------|-------|-------|-------|
| PRES. INDIC. | donne | finis | vends |
| IMPV. | donne | finis | vends |

a. In general, the three persons of the imperative are the same with the corresponding persons of the present indicative ; only, in the first conjugation, the final **s** of the 2d sing. impv. is usually (see below, 10a) lost, so that its form agrees with that of the 1st sing. indicative.

7. From the preterit indicative may be made the imperfect subjunctive, by changing final **s** (in the first conjugation, that of the 2d sing.) into **sse** : thus,

| | | | |
|--------------|----------------|---------|----------|
| PRET. INDIC. | donnai, donnas | finis | vendis |
| IMPF. SUBJ. | donnasse | finisse | vendisse |

a. Verbs of the first conjugation are the only ones in the language that do not end in **s** in the 1st sing. preterit.

FIRST REGULAR CONJUGATION.

8. The first regular conjugation, with infinitive ending in *er*, contains the great majority of all the verbs in the language.

a. They are principally the verbs of the first Latin conjugation, in *are*, but also a few of those of the second and third conjugations, now come to be inflected like them, and many borrowed and new-made verbs.

9. As a model of its inflection may be taken the verb *donner give (donate; Lat. donare)*.

a. The synopsis of its principal parts and the parts derived from them is as follows:

| | | | | |
|-----------|---------|-------------|-------|----------|
| donner | donnant | donné | donne | donnai |
| donnerai | donnais | avoir donné | donne | donnasse |
| donnerais | donne | etc. etc. | | |

b. The complete inflection of the simple tenses is (with infinitive and participles prefixed):

INFINITIVE, *give, to give.*

donner (*à donner, de donner*)

PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *giving*

donnant

PAST PARTICIPLE, *given*

donné

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT, *I give, do give, am giving, etc.*

| | |
|-----------|--------------|
| je donne | nous donnons |
| tu donnes | vous donnez |
| il donne | ils donnent |

IMPERFECT, *I gave, was giving, etc.*

| | |
|------------|---------------|
| je donnais | nous donnions |
| tu donnais | vous donniez |
| il donnait | ils donnaient |

PRETERIT, *I gave, did give, etc.*

| | |
|-----------|---------------|
| je donnai | nous donnâmes |
| tu donnas | vous donnâtes |
| il donna | ils donnèrent |

FUTURE, *I shall or will give, etc.*

| | |
|-------------|----------------|
| je donnerai | nous donnerons |
| tu donneras | vous donnerez |
| il donnera | ils donneront |

CONDITIONAL, *I should or would give, etc.*

| | |
|--------------|-----------------|
| je donnerais | nous donnerions |
| tu donnerais | vous donneriez |
| il donnerait | ils donneraient |

IMPERATIVE, *give, give thou, etc.*

| | |
|-------|---------|
| | donnons |
| donne | donnez |

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT, *that I may give, etc.*

| | |
|---------------|-------------------|
| que je donne | que nous donnions |
| que tu donnes | que vous donniez |
| qu'il donne | qu'ils donnent |

IMPERFECT, *that I might give, etc.*

| | |
|------------------|----------------------|
| que je donnasse | que nous donnassions |
| que tu donnasses | que vous donnassiez |
| qu'il donnât | qu'ils donnassent |

c. Of the compound forms, made with the auxiliary *avoir*, it will be sufficient to give the synopsis, the inflection of the auxiliary being already familiar (X.): thus,

PERFECT INFINITIVE, *to have given*

avoir donné

PERFECT PARTICIPLE, *having given*

ayant donné

INDICATIVE PERFECT, *I have given, etc.*

j'ai donné etc.

PLUPERFECT, *I had given, etc.*

j'avais donné etc.

PAST ANTERIOR, *I had given, etc.*

j'eus donné etc.

FUTURE PERFECT, *I shall have given, etc.*

j'aurai donné etc.

CONDITIONAL PERFECT, *I should have given, etc.*

j'aurais donné etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE PERFECT, *that I may have given, etc.*

que j'aie donné etc.

PLUPERFECT, *that I might have given, etc.*

que j'eusse donné etc.

10. a. The 2d sing. impv. of the first conj. adds an s when followed by the object-pronouns *en* or *y* (XXIII. 5-7).

b. As in all verbs (I. 10c), the 3d sing. present, preterit, and future add **-t** when followed by the subject-pronouns **il**, **elle**, or **on**: thus, **donne-t-il**, **donna-t-elle**, **donnera-t-on**.

c. If the 1st sing. present indicative or imperfect subjunctive (the latter, of any conjugation) comes to be followed by its subject, it takes an acute accent on its final **e** (21c): thus, **donné-je** *do I give?* **donnassé-je** *should I give.*

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|---|--|
| donner , <i>give</i> | apporter , <i>bring</i> |
| chercher , <i>seek, look for</i> | trouver , <i>find</i> |
| aimer , <i>love, like</i> | travailler , <i>work, labor</i> |
| le jouet , <i>the plaything, toy</i> | la lettre , <i>the letter</i> |

EXERCISE 18.

¹ J'ai donné un joli cheval à mon cousin. ² Aimez-vous votre cousin? ³ Non, madame, je n'aime point ce cousin-là, mais j'aime beaucoup ses frères et ses sœurs. ⁴ Ces jeunes filles cherchaient des fleurs, mais elles n'ont rien trouvé. ⁵ Quelles fleurs ont-elles cherchées? ⁶ Elles aiment toutes les fleurs. ⁷ Donnez du pain à ce petit garçon; il a faim. ⁸ Quoiqu'il ait travaillé toute la semaine, il n'a pas d'argent. ⁹ Pourquoi le marchand ne donna-t-il pas d'argent au garçon hier? ¹⁰ Il aurait donné de l'argent, s'il n'avait pas été malade. ¹¹ N'avez-vous pas trouvé le maître? ¹² Nous trouvâmes le maître à l'école à dix heures. ¹³ Ce bon paysan apportait chaque jour du lait à mon oncle. ¹⁴ Hier il ne trouva pas ses vaches, et il n'apporta pas de lait. ¹⁵ S'il cherchait trois jours, il ne trouverait pas ses vaches. ¹⁶ Marie, apporte la lettre de ta tante. ¹⁷ Pourquoi madame votre sœur ne donne-t-elle pas de jouets aux enfants? ¹⁸ Si elle avait trouvé de beaux livres chez le marchand, elle aurait donné un livre à chaque enfant. ¹⁹ Quoique nous ayons cherché dans toute la ville, nous n'avons trouvé que de mauvais livres. ²⁰ Cherchons des fruits, et donnons une pomme ou une poire à chaque garçon, et une fleur à chaque fille.

THEME 18.

¹ Do you love your friends? ² I love all my friends and relations. ³ What plaything shall I give to your brother? ⁴ Let us give a book to her brother. ⁵ What cows was the peasant looking for? ⁶ He was seeking his cows, but he has found nothing. ⁷ If he does not find his cows, he will not bring milk to the city. ⁸ Although he had not found his cows, he brought milk enough yesterday. ⁹ The peasants work all day. ¹⁰ They love the country; we love the city. ¹¹ What letter did Louisa give to this man? ¹² She had not found her father's letter, but she gave to the man her uncle's two letters. ¹³ I often give handsome things to my friends. ¹⁴ My uncle will bring from (de) Rome some beautiful pictures for (pour) his nieces. ¹⁵ Children, let us give some wine to this poor woman. ¹⁶ She has worked ten hours, and she is very unhappy. ¹⁷ Give your old black coat to this man; he is cold. ¹⁸ Did these young girls look for flowers? ¹⁹ Yes, sir; they had been seeking flowers an hour in the garden. ²⁰ Why have they not brought flowers to their mother? ²¹ They have found no flowers; they have found only leaves in the garden.

LESSON XIX.

SECOND REGULAR CONJUGATION.

1. The verbs of the second conjugation, with infinitive ending in *ir*, are much fewer than those of the first.

a. They are principally verbs of the Latin fourth conjugation, in *ire*, but mixed with a few of the second and third conjugations, and with denominative verbs, made from adjectives and nouns. The forms showing *-iss-* are of inceptive origin, as if from *finisco* beside *finio*.

2. As model of the second conjugation, we will take the verb *finir* *finish*.

a. The synopsis of principal and derived parts is :

| | | | | |
|----------|-----------|------------|-------|---------|
| finir | finissant | fini | finis | finis |
| finirai | finissais | avoir fini | finis | finisse |
| finirais | finisse | etc. | | |

b. The full inflection of the simple tenses is :

INFINITIVE, *finish, to finish*

finir (à finir, de finir)

PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *finishing*

finissant

PAST PARTICIPLE, *finished*

fini

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT, *I finish, etc.*

| | |
|----------|----------------|
| je finis | nous finissons |
| tu finis | vous finissez |
| il finit | ils finissent |

IMPERFECT, *I was finishing, etc.*

| | |
|--------------|-----------------|
| je finissais | nous finissions |
| tu finissais | vous finissiez |
| il finissait | ils finissaient |

PRETERIT, *I finished, etc.*

| | |
|----------|--------------|
| je finis | nous finîmes |
| tu finis | vous finîtes |
| il finit | ils finirent |

FUTURE, *I shall finish, etc.*

| | |
|------------|---------------|
| je finirai | nous finirons |
| tu finiras | vous finirez |
| il finira | ils finiront |

CONDITIONAL, *I should finish, etc.*

| | |
|-------------|----------------|
| je finirais | nous finirions |
| tu finirais | vous finiriez |
| il finirait | ils finiraient |

IMPERATIVE, *finish, etc.*

| | |
|-------|-----------|
| | finissons |
| finis | finissez |

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT, *that I may finish, etc.*

| | |
|-----------------|---------------------|
| que je finisse | que nous finissions |
| que tu finisses | que vous finissiez |
| qu'il finisse | qu'ils finissent |

IMPERFECT, *that I might finish, etc.*

| | |
|-----------------|---------------------|
| que je finisse | que nous finissions |
| que tu finisses | que vous finissiez |
| qu'il finît | qu'ils finissent |

c. Of the compound tenses, the brief synopsis is :

| | |
|--------------|---|
| PERF. INFIN. | avoir fini, <i>to have finished</i> |
| PERF. PART. | ayant fini, <i>having finished</i> |
| INDIC. PERF. | j'ai fini, <i>I have finished</i> |
| PLUFF. | j'avais fini, <i>I had finished</i> |
| PAST ANT. | j'eus fini, <i>I had finished</i> |
| FUT. PERF. | j'aurai fini, <i>I shall have finished</i> |
| COND. PERF. | j'aurais fini, <i>I should have finished</i> |
| SUBJ. PERF. | que j'aie fini, <i>that I may have finished</i> |
| PLUFF. | que j'eusse fini, <i>that I might have finished</i> |

d. Note that, of the simple tenses, the present and preterit indicative are alike in the singular, but different in the plural ; also, that the present and imperfect subjunctive are alike throughout, except in the 3d singular.

3. Two or three verbs of this conjugation have slight irregularities, which may be pointed out here :

a. The verb **hair** *hate* loses its diæresis (that is, has its **a** and **i** united into a diphthong) in the singular persons of the present indicative and of the imperative. These two tenses are thus inflected :

| PRESENT INDICATIVE. | | IMPERATIVE. | |
|---------------------|---------------|-------------|----------|
| je hais | nous haïssons | | haïssons |
| tu hais | vous haïssez | hais | haïssez |
| il hait | ils haïssent | | |

b. The verb **fleurir** *flourish*, otherwise regular, has a second present participle and imperfect indicative, **florissant**, **je florissais** etc., from the old verb-form **florir**. The forms with **o** are used only in a figurative sense.

c. The verb **bénir** *bless* has a second past participle **béni**, used as adjective, *consecrated* : thus, **du pain béni** *consecrated bread*, **l'eau bénite** *holy water*.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| finir, <i>finish</i> | bâtir, <i>build</i> |
| punir, <i>punish</i> | 'hair, <i>hate</i> |
| choisir, <i>choose</i> | saisir, <i>seize</i> |
| bénir, <i>bless</i> | fleurir, <i>flourish</i> |
| la tâche, <i>the task</i> | la chose, <i>the thing</i> |
| le prêtre, <i>the priest</i> | les gens pl., <i>the people</i> |
| bien, <i>well</i> | mal, <i>ill</i> |

EXERCISE 19.

¹ Ces enfants n'ont-ils pas fini leur tâche ? ² Le maître punira les enfants, s'ils ne finissent pas leur tâche. ³ Le mauvais homme n'a point d'amis ; il hait les hommes, et les hommes haïssent le mauvais homme. ⁴ Le prêtre a béni le pain et le vin. ⁵ Il donnera aux gens le pain béni, mais il ne donnera le vin à personne. ⁶ Ces hommes ont bâti une nouvelle église pour le vieux prêtre. ⁷ Ils finiront l'église le mois prochain. ⁸ Quoiqu'ils bâtissent l'église, ils ne bâtiront pas l'école. ⁹ Mon oncle bâtissait une très-jolie maison pour sa fille. ¹⁰ Nous choissions de beaux tableaux pour cette maison. ¹¹ Le fruit fleurit-il dans votre jardin, monsieur ? ¹² Oui, madame ; tous les fruits et toutes les fleurs fleurissent dans ce pays-ci. ¹³ Pourquoi punissez-vous ces enfants ? ¹⁴ Parce qu'ils ont saisi les fleurs de ce pauvre garçon. ¹⁵ Mes enfants, ne saisissez jamais les choses des autres. ¹⁶ Je choisirai beaucoup de très jolies fleurs, et je donnerai les fleurs à ma mère. ¹⁷ Édouard, finis ta tâche. ¹⁸ Le maître ne punira pas Édouard, quoiqu'il ne finisse pas sa tâche. ¹⁹ Il ne hait pas la tâche, mais il a été malade.

THEME 19.

¹ Have you finished your task, Edward ? ² No, sir ; but I shall have finished this task to-morrow. ³ Although you have not finished this book, choose another book. ⁴ I will choose a history. ⁵ My sister chose a novel yesterday ; she does not like a history. ⁶ We hate histories, but we like stories and novels. ⁷ My uncle built the last year a library for the people of the village, and he will build a pretty house for the priest. ⁸ Why does he not build a church also ? ⁹ Were you choosing a picture for your room ? ¹⁰ I should have chosen a picture, if I had had money. ¹¹ Charles, choose a present for thy sister, but do not seize the things. ¹² Good children never seize other

people's things. ¹³ Why did you punish the dog? ¹⁴ I punished the dog, because he seized this poor boy's meat. ¹⁵ Do the flowers flourish in your garden? ¹⁶ I have many flowers, and they flourish well in my garden. ¹⁷ Although these children hate their tasks, they love books. ¹⁸ They did not choose good books; they chose bad novels. ¹⁹ Their master will punish the children. ²⁰ If you have finished your history, give the book to your brother.

LESSON XX.

THIRD REGULAR CONJUGATION.

1. The verbs of the third conjugation, with infinitive ending in *re*, are but few in number.

a. They are certain verbs of the Latin third conjugation.

2. As model of their conjugation may be taken the verb *vendre* *sell* (Lat. *vendere*).

a. The synopsis of principal and derived parts is:

| | | | | |
|----------|----------|-------------|-------|----------|
| vendre | vendant | vendu | vends | vendis |
| vendrai | vendrais | avoir vendu | vends | vendisse |
| vendrais | vende | etc. etc. | | |

b. The full inflection of the simple tenses is:

INFINITIVE, *sell, to sell.*

vendre (à vendre, de vendre)

PRESENT PARTICIPLE, *selling*

vendant

PAST PARTICIPLE, *sold*

vendu

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT, *I sell, etc.*

je vends

tu vends

il vend

nous vendons

vous vendez

ils vendent

IMPERFECT, *I was selling, etc.*

je vendais

tu vendais

il vendait

nous vendions

vous vendiez

ils vendaient

PRETERIT, *I sold, etc.*

| | |
|-----------|---------------|
| je vendis | nous vendîmes |
| tu vendis | vous vendîtes |
| il vendit | ils vendirent |

FUTURE, *I shall sell, etc.*

| | |
|------------|---------------|
| je vendrai | nous vendrons |
| tu vendras | vous vendrez |
| il vendra | ils vendront |

CONDITIONAL, *I should sell, etc.*

| | |
|-------------|----------------|
| je vendrais | nous vendrions |
| tu vendrais | vous vendriez |
| il vendrait | ils vendraient |

IMPERATIVE, *sell, etc.*

| | |
|-------|---------|
| | vendons |
| vends | vendez |

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT, *that I may sell, etc.*

| | |
|---------------|-------------------|
| que je vende | que nous vendions |
| que tu vendes | que vous vendiez |
| qu'il vende | qu'ils vendent |

IMPERFECT, *that I might sell, etc.*

| | |
|------------------|----------------------|
| que je vendisse | que nous vendissions |
| que tu vendisses | que vous vendissiez |
| qu'il vendit | qu'ils vendissent |

c. Of the compound tenses, the brief synopsis is :

| | |
|--------------|--|
| PERF. INFIN. | avoir vendu, <i>to have sold</i> |
| PERF. PART. | ayant vendu, <i>having sold</i> |
| INDIC. PERF. | j'ai vendu, <i>I have sold</i> |
| PLUPF. | j'avais vendu, <i>I had sold</i> |
| PAST ANT. | j'eus vendu, <i>I had sold</i> |
| FUT. PERF. | j'aurai vendu, <i>I shall have sold</i> |
| COND. PERF. | j'aurais vendu, <i>I should have sold</i> |
| SUBJ. PERF. | que j'aie vendu, <i>that I may have sold</i> |
| PLUPF. | que j'eusse vendu, <i>that I might have sold</i> |

d. Notice that the verbs of this conjugation have different vowels in the endings of the preterit and of the past participle : thus, **vendis**, **venu**. In nearly all other verbs, regular and irregular, these two forms agree in vowel.

3. Two or three verbs of this conjugation have slight irregularities, which are best pointed out here.

a. **Vaincre** *conquer* (Lat. *vincere*) is perfectly regular to the ear, but is necessarily spelt with **qu** instead of **c** before **e** and **i** (72*a*), and then also before **a** and **o**; the **c** remaining only before **u**, before a consonant, and as final. The synopsis of principal and derived parts is as follows :

| | | | | |
|-----------|-----------|--------------|-------|------------|
| vaincre | vainquant | vaincu | vains | vainquis |
| vaincrai | vainquais | avoir vaincu | vains | vainquisse |
| vaincrais | vainque | etc. etc. | | |

The pres. indicative and imperative (in which alone any change of spelling occurs in inflection) are as follows :

| PRESENT INDICATIVE. | | IMPERATIVE. | |
|---------------------|----------------|-------------|-----------|
| je vains | nous vainquons | | vainquons |
| tu vains | vous vainquez | vains | vainquez |
| il vaine | ils vainquent | | |

The compound **convaincre** *convince* is conjugated in the same manner.

b. **Rompre** *break* (Lat. *rumpere*) adds a **t** in the 3d sing. indic. present: thus **il rompt** (not **romp**); in all other respects it is regular.

c. **Battre** *beat* (Lat. *battuere*) loses one of its two **t**'s in the singular of the pres. indicative and of the imperative, which are thus inflected :

| PRESENT INDICATIVE. | | IMPERATIVE. | |
|---------------------|--------------|-------------|---------|
| je bats | nous battons | | battons |
| tu bats | vous battez | bats | battez |
| il bat | ils battent | | |

The rest is regular.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| vendre, <i>sell</i> | perdre, <i>lose</i> |
| attendre, <i>wait</i> | rompre, <i>break</i> |
| battre, <i>beat</i> | vaincre, <i>conquer</i> |
| le gâteau, <i>the cake</i> | la voix, <i>the voice</i> |
| l'oiseau m., <i>the bird</i> | l'ennemi m., <i>the enemy</i> |

EXERCISE 20.

¹ Ce boulanger vend du pain et des gâteaux. ² Pourquoi n'a-t-il pas vendu de pain à cet homme-ci? ³ Il n'a pas vendu de pain à l'homme, parce qu'il n'avait pas d'argent. ⁴ Il perdit hier tout son argent. ⁵ Entendez-vous les oiseaux dans le jardin? ⁶ Non, madame; je n'ai point entendu les

oiseaux, mais j'entends la voix d'une jeune fille. ⁷ Ma sœur a été malade, et elle a perdu sa belle voix. ⁸ Quel livre avez-vous perdu ? ⁹ J'ai perdu l'histoire d'Angleterre. ¹⁰ Je perds souvent mon histoire. ¹¹ Les mauvais garçons battent les pauvres chiens. ¹² Henri ne bat jamais son chien. ¹³ Le roi Louis XIV. a vaincu tous ses ennemis. ¹⁴ Il vainc toujours. ¹⁵ Avez-vous attendu une lettre ? ¹⁶ Oui, j'attends des lettres chaque jour. ¹⁷ Quoique ce boulanger vende beaucoup de pain, il perd toujours de l'argent. ¹⁸ Le prêtre rompt et bénit le pain, et donne les morceaux aux hommes. ¹⁹ S'il vendait tout le fruit, il n'aurait plus de cerises pour les enfants. ²⁰ Il n'aurait rien perdu. ²¹ Rompez le pain, et donnez un morceau à ce pauvre enfant.

THEME 20.

¹ I hear a voice in the house. ² What voice did you hear ?
³ I heard yesterday the voice of this young girl in the garden. ⁴ Did you expect nobody day before yesterday ?
⁵ Yes, I expected my brother. ⁶ I shall expect many friends to-morrow. ⁷ This poor man has lost his wife, and he will lose his daughter. ⁸ This man does not beat his horses.
⁹ He does not sell his horses, though they are very old.
¹⁰ If we sold our horse to this man, he would beat the horse.
¹¹ A good boy never beats his dog. ¹² Why does your cousin not break the big cake ? ¹³ Let us break the cake, and let us give a piece to this little girl. ¹⁴ Have you sold your bird ?
¹⁵ No, we did not sell the bird ; we lost the bird.
¹⁶ If I had not lost all our birds, I should give a bird to this boy. ¹⁷ Have the enemies conquered ? ¹⁸ No, our king has conquered the enemies. ¹⁹ He always conquers his enemies.
²⁰ This bad baker often sells bread to our enemy. ²¹ He will sell bread to all the people, if they have money.

LESSON XXI.

IRREGULAR VERBS : FIRST CONJUGATION.

1. Besides the verbs of the three regular conjugations, the French has a large number (near a hundred) that are more or less irregularly inflected. Of all these, the inflection has to be separately learned, and it will be given in the lessons following.

2. *a.* Of the first conjugation, or with infinitives ending in *er*, there are but two really irregular verbs, *aller go*, and *envoyer send* (for which, see XXVII. 8, and XLII. 11).

b. But many verbs of the first conjugation, otherwise regular, have to undergo in inflection certain changes of spelling, in accordance with the general rules of the language (laid down above, in the Lesson on Pronunciation). Thus :

3. Since (21*a*) no word in French may end in two silent syllables, and their occurrence anywhere in a word is generally avoided—therefore

a. Verbs having in the infinitive a mute syllable before the final syllable have to give the former a full pronunciation whenever in inflection the syllable after it becomes mute.

b. This is usually done by putting a grave accent upon the *e* of the syllable in question.

Thus, from the infinitive *mener lead*, we have *je mène, tu mèneras, il mènerait, mène, qu'ils mènent*, etc.; but *nous menons, je menais, tu menas, qu'il menât*, etc. Also, from *acheter buy*, we have *il achète, nous achèterons, que tu achètes*, etc.; but *vous achetez, il acheta, achetons, que nous achetions*, etc.

c. But a few verbs double instead the consonant (*t* or *l*) following the *e*.

Thus, from *jeter throw*, we have *je jette, tu jetteras, il jetterait, jette, qu'ils jettent*, etc.; and from *appeler call*, we have *il appelle, nous appellerons, que tu appelles*, etc.

The verbs thus doubling the consonant are **jeter** (and its compounds) and **catcheter**; **appeler**, **chanceler**, **étinceler**, **renouveler**, and **ensorceler**.

d. The synopsis of principal and derived forms of **mener** is as follows :

| | | | | |
|----------|--------|------------|------|---------|
| mener | menant | mené | mène | menai |
| mènerai | menais | avoir mené | mène | menasse |
| mènerais | mène | etc. etc. | | |

The only tenses that show the difference of spelling in their tense-inflection are the pres. indicative, the imperative, and the pres. subjunctive ; they are :

| PRESENT INDICATIVE. | | IMPERATIVE. | | PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE. | |
|---------------------|--------|-------------|--------|----------------------|---------|
| mène | menons | | menons | mène | menions |
| mènes | menez | mène | menez | mènes | meniez |
| mène | mènent | | | mène | mènent |

And in like manner with the other verbs.

4. Since the accent on an **e** followed by a silent syllable is regularly and usually the grave (20a)—therefore

a. Verbs having in the infinitive an acute **é** before the final syllable change the accent to grave (**è**) when the next syllable becomes mute—except, however, in the future and conditional, where the acute is retained.

Thus, of the verb **céder** *cede*, for example,

b. The synopsis of principal and derived forms is :

| | | | | |
|----------|--------|------------|------|---------|
| céder | cédant | cédé | cède | cédai |
| céderai | cédais | avoir cédé | cède | cédasse |
| céderais | cède | etc. etc. | | |

And the inflection of the tenses that show a change of accent is :

| PRESENT INDICATIVE. | | IMPERATIVE. | | PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE. | |
|---------------------|--------|-------------|--------|----------------------|---------|
| cède | cédons | | cédons | cède | cédions |
| cèdes | cédez | cède | cédez | cèdes | cédiez |
| cède | cèdent | | | cède | cèdent |

c. But the verb **créer** *create* retains the acute throughout : thus, **je crée**, **ils créent**, etc. ; also, in general usage hitherto, the verbs ending in the infinitive in **éger** : thus, from **protéger** *protect*, **je protège**, **ils protègent**, etc. (but now better **je protège**, **ils protègent**, etc. : 20c).

5. Verbs having **c** or **g** (pronounced soft) before final **er** of the infinitive retain the soft sound of these letters through their whole conjugation ; and this is signified by

writing a cedilla under the *c* (thus, *ç*), and by keeping an *e* after the *g* (62*e*), wherever in conjugation those letters come to be followed by *a* or *o*.

Thus, from *placer place*, and *manger eat*, we have *je place*, and *nous plaçons*; *je mange*, and *nous mangeons* *je plaçais*, and *nous placions*; *je mangeais*, and *nous mangions* *nous plaçâmes* and *ils placèrent*; *nous mangeâmes*, and *ils mangèrent*

and so on.

6. Since *y* (= double *i*) does not usually stand before a mute *e* (37*b*)—therefore

a. Verbs having a *y* before the final *er* of the infinitive change it to *i* when in conjugation it comes to be followed by a mute *e*.

b. Thus, for example, of the verb *payer pay* the synopsis of principal and derived forms is:

| | | | | |
|-----------------|---------------|-------------------|-------------|----------------|
| <i>payer</i> | <i>payant</i> | <i>payé</i> | <i>paie</i> | <i>payai</i> |
| <i>paierai</i> | <i>payais</i> | <i>avoir payé</i> | <i>paie</i> | <i>payasse</i> |
| <i>paierais</i> | <i>paie</i> | etc. etc. | | |

And the present indicative is thus inflected:

| | |
|---------------|---------------|
| <i>paie</i> | <i>payons</i> |
| <i>paies</i> | <i>payez</i> |
| <i>paient</i> | <i>paient</i> |

And in like manner with *employer employ*, *appuyer support*, and so on.

c. But verbs in *eyer* preserve the *y* throughout: thus, *je grasseye* (not *grasseie*), etc. And some writers retain the *y* after *a*: thus, *je paye*, etc.

7. When the *i* of a verb ending in *ier* comes to be followed by *i* in inflection (namely, in 1st and 2d plur. impf. indic. and pres. subj.), the two *i*'s remain unchanged (do not become *y*). Thus, from *prier pray*, *oublier forget*, we have *nous priions*, *vous priez*; *que nous oubliions*, *que vous oubliez*.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>appeler, call</i> | <i>acheter, buy</i> |
| <i>mener, take, lead</i> | <i>protéger, protect</i> |
| <i>manger, eat</i> | <i>commencer, begin</i> |
| <i>employer, employ</i> | <i>nettoyer, clean</i> |
| <i>créer, create</i> | <i>oublier, forget</i> |
| <i>la domestique, servant, maid</i> | <i>le berger, the shepherd</i> |
| <i>le monde, the world</i> | <i>le temps, the time</i> |

EXERCISE 21.

¹ Appelle la domestique, Hélène. ² Je l'ai appelée, ma mère, mais elle n'était pas ici ; elle nettoyait les chambres. ³ Elle nettoiera votre chambre demain. ⁴ Ce petit garçon-ci mène aux champs les vaches et les brebis de son père. ⁵ Le berger et son chien protègent toujours les brebis. ⁶ Si le berger n'était pas ici, ce vieux chien mènerait et protégerait les brebis. ⁷ Quel fruit mangez-vous, mes enfants ? ⁸ Nous mangeons des cerises ; hier nous mangeâmes des pommes, et demain nous mangerons des poires. ⁹ Achetez-vous beaucoup de fruit ? ¹⁰ J'achète du fruit tous les jours de cette vieille femme. ¹¹ Si nous donnons de l'argent à ce garçon, il achètera du pain pour sa mère malade. ¹² Quoiqu'il ait acheté du pain pour sa mère, elle ne mangera rien. ¹³ Elle acheta du fruit et du vin pour cet homme, mais il ne mangea rien. ¹⁴ Charles, avez-vous commencé ce livre-ci ? ¹⁵ Je commençais hier, mais j'avais perdu le livre. ¹⁶ Nous commençons l'école aujourd'hui, et je mènerai tous les enfants à leur maître. ¹⁷ Ont-ils oublié le maître ? ¹⁸ Quoique nous oublions le maître, il n'oublie jamais ses élèves. ¹⁹ Emploie bien le temps, mon enfant, et n'oublie point ta tâche. ²⁰ Dieu a créé le monde, et il protège toujours les hommes. ²¹ Il crée les arbres et leurs fruits.

THEME 21.

¹ Edward is hungry, but he does not eat any bread. ² Let us buy some fruit, and let us eat two apples. ³ You ate (pret.) too many peaches yesterday. ⁴ If they buy bread to-day, they will buy wine to-morrow. ⁵ The servant was cleaning the windows yesterday ; to-day she will clean the rooms of the house. ⁶ Did the school begin yesterday ? ⁷ It would have begun, but the master was ill. ⁸ Let us begin the school to-morrow. ⁹ The servant will

take all the children to the school. ¹⁰ Call Mary ; I called her, but she was not there. ¹¹ The shepherd takes the sheep to the fields. ¹² At five o'clock he will take the cows to the water. ¹³ He took the sheep to the water yesterday at two o'clock. ¹⁴ If they call the boy, he will protect the sheep. ¹⁵ My cousins build houses, and they employ many men. ¹⁶ We *only* employ one servant. ¹⁷ Let us begin this pretty story. ¹⁸ I have forgotten the book. ¹⁹ We were at the school, and you always forgot the books. ²⁰ These children were employing their time well. ²¹ They had finished the history, and they were beginning a new story. ²² God created all men, he created also the sheep and the cows.

LESSON XXII.

CONJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

1. Many pronouns in French, especially the personal pronouns, have a different form according as they are used conjunctively or disjunctively.

2. A conjunctive pronoun is one that is immediately connected with a verb, as either its subject or its direct or indirect object ; any other is disjunctive.

3. The subject-pronouns are already familiar ; they are :

| | 1ST PERS. | 2D PERS. | 3D PERS. |
|-------|-----------------|------------------|----------------------------------|
| SING. | je, <i>I</i> | tu, <i>thou</i> | il, <i>he</i> ; elle, <i>she</i> |
| PLUR. | nous, <i>we</i> | vous, <i>you</i> | ils m., elles f., <i>they</i> |

a. In rare instances, however, even the subject-pronoun is obliged to take the disjunctive form : see Second Part, §§ 74a, 76.

4. The subject-pronoun stands in general immediately before the personal verb, only the negative *ne* and the object-pronouns being allowed to come in between the two.

a. But, as in English, the subject-pronoun follows the verb in questions, and in interjected phrases like *dit-il said he*, and occasionally in other cases: see Second Part, § 224 etc.

b. In a question, only the subject-pronoun changes its place, everything else remaining as it would be if the sentence were an assertion.

5. Of the object-pronouns, direct and indirect object, all the forms are these:

| | SINGULAR. | PLURAL. |
|-----------|---|---|
| 1ST PERS. | me, moi, <i>me, to me</i> | nous, <i>us, to us</i> |
| 2D “ | te, toi, <i>thee, to the</i> | vous, <i>you, to you</i> |
| 3D “ | le, <i>him</i> ; la, <i>her</i> ; lui, <i>to him or her</i> | les, <i>them</i> ; leur, <i>to them</i> |

6. The uses of the object-pronouns are as follows:

a. *Nous* and *vous* are unvaried, standing in every construction and position—as conjunctive pronouns and as disjunctive, as subject and as object, as direct and as indirect object, before the verb and after it.

b. *Me* and *moi*, and *te* and *toi*, are used either as direct or as indirect object, *me* and *te* before the verb, and *moi* and *toi* after it (for one exception, see XXIII. 6b). Thus:

| | |
|--|--------------------------------|
| tu m'aimes, <i>thou lovest me</i> | aime moi, <i>love me</i> |
| tu te donnes, <i>thou givest thyself</i> | donne-toi, <i>give thyself</i> |
| vous me donnez, <i>you give to me</i> | donnez-moi, <i>give to me</i> |

c. *Le*, *la*, and *les* are used as direct object only, *le* being masculine, *la* feminine, and *les* of either gender; *lui* and *leur* are used only as indirect object, both being of either gender: thus,

| | |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| il l'aime, <i>he loves her</i> | aimez-la, <i>love her</i> |
| elle l'aime, <i>she loves him</i> | aime-le, <i>love him</i> |
| je lui donne, <i>I give to him or her</i> | donnez lui, <i>give to him or her</i> |
| nous les vendons, <i>we sell them</i> | vendons-les, <i>let us sell them</i> |
| vous leur vendez, <i>you sell to them</i> | vendez leur, <i>sell to them</i> |

d. Thus it is seen that the object-pronouns of the 1st and 2d sing. vary in form according to their position before or after the verb, and for that only; while, on the contrary, those of the 3d pers. vary according to their character as direct or indirect object, and the direct object in the singular also for gender, but they have the same form before and after the verb.

e. Notice that the direct-object pronouns **le la les** have the same form, and the same distinctions of gender and number, with the definite article. **Le** and **la** also have their vowels cut off before a following vowel (or **h** mute), just as when they are articles.

7. An object-pronoun, whether direct or indirect object, stands in general immediately before the governing verb—in the compound tenses, immediately before the auxiliary: but with this exception, that if the verb is an imperative affirmative, the pronoun stands instead directly after it (and is joined to it by a hyphen).

For examples, see above, 6*b*, *c*.

a. Nothing is allowed to come between the verb and its pronoun-object; the subject, and the negative **ne**, when used, are placed outside of them: thus,

je ne vous donne pas le livre, *I do not give you the book*
 mon ami ne t'a pas vu, *my friend has not seen thee*
 ne les aimez vous pas, *do you not love them?*
 ne l'aura-t-il pas fini, *will he not have finished it?*

b. If the verb is an imperative negative, the object-pronoun precedes instead of following it: thus,

ne lui donnez pas le livre, *do not give him the book*
 ne les aimez pas, *do not love them*

8. When a verb governs two object-pronouns, one direct and the other indirect, they are both together placed either before or after it, according to the rules just given—that is, after it in the imperative affirmative, otherwise before it.

a. A verb in French does not have two direct objects; and almost never two indirect, unless one be **en** or **y** (Second Part, § 158).

9. As regards their position relative to one another :

a. When both come before the verb, the indirect stands first, unless it be of the third person (*lui* or *leur*), in which case it follows the direct : thus,

je te le donne, I give it to thee

vous nous le donnerez, you will give it to us

je le lui ai donné, I have given it to him (or to her)

vous le leur aviez donné, you had given it to them

il ne me les vendra pas, he will not sell them to me

il ne nous les a pas vendus, he has not sold them to us

ne me les donne pas, do not give them to me

ne vous la vendra-t il pas, will he not sell it to you?

b. When both come after the verb, the indirect always stands last : thus,

donnez les-moi, give them to me

vendons-le-leur, let us sell it to them

c. As the last examples show, both object-pronouns, when they follow the verb, are joined to it by hyphens. Some, however, prefer to omit the second hyphen : thus **donnez-les moi**.

d. A brief rule, covering all cases of the relative position of direct and indirect object-pronoun, objects of the same verb, is as follows :

Before the verb, the indirect-object pronoun, unless of the third person, precedes the direct.

VOCABULARY.

No new words, except the pronoun-forms above, are given to be learned with this Lesson.

EXERCISE 22.

¹ Le maître n'aime-t-il pas ces enfants ? ² Il ne les aime pas ; il les punit toujours. ³ Donnez-moi ces gâteaux.

⁴ Non, mon enfant, je ne te les donnerai pas ; tu ne les mangeras pas. ⁵ Avez-vous bâti votre maison à Paris ? ⁶ Je l'ai bâtie dans la ville.

⁷ Le boulanger vous a-t-il vendu ce pain-ci ? ⁸ Il ne nous l'a pas vendu, il nous l'a donné.

⁹ Les enfants ont beaucoup de gâteaux ; le boulanger les

leur a donnés. ¹⁰ Si vous avez de bons livres, donnez-les-moi. ¹¹ Apportes-tu cette fleur à ma sœur? ¹² Oui, mon ami; je la lui apporte. ¹³ Apportez-moi aussi des fleurs. ¹⁴ Ne lui apportez pas de fruit. ¹⁵ Si j'avais du pain, je vous le donnerais. ¹⁶ Il a faim; je le lui donnerai. ¹⁷ Avez-vous votre livre, ou l'avez-vous perdu? ¹⁸ Je l'ai perdu, monsieur; je le cherche, mais je ne le trouve pas. ¹⁹ Cherchez-le toujours; vous le trouverez. ²⁰ Ne me donnerez-vous pas ces jolies fleurs? ²¹ Je ne vous les donnerai pas; je les ai achetées pour ma mère, et je les lui donnerai. ²² Si vous ne me l'aviez pas donné, je ne vous aurais pas aimé. ²³ Tu as les pommes de ces enfants; donne-les-leur. ²⁴ Si tu ne les leur donnes pas, je te punirai.

THEME 22.

¹ I give you the book; you give me the book; they give her the book; we give them the book; he gives us the book; thou givest him the book. ² I give it to my friend; thou givest them to thy brother; we give it to our father. ³ I give it to you; you give it to me; they give it to her; we give it to them; he gives it to us; thou givest it to him; give it to them; do not give it to her. ⁴ Will you not give me this apple? ⁵ I shall not give it to you; I shall give it to this boy. ⁶ Do not give it to him; give it to me. ⁷ Did not the baker sell the bread to this woman? ⁸ Yes; he sold it to her; he did not give it to her. ⁹ Will she give it to her children? ¹⁰ She will not give it to them; she is eating it. ¹¹ Give it to me; do not eat it. ¹² Eat it; do not sell it to them. ¹³ Bring me the book, and I will buy it. ¹⁴ If she had brought me cherries, I should have eaten them. ¹⁵ The shepherd had sheep, but he has lost them. ¹⁶ He is seeking them, and if he finds them, he will lead them to us. ¹⁷ Find me the book, and bring it to me. ¹⁸ Does the baker sell bread to the poor people? ¹⁹ He does not sell it to them, because they have no money. ²⁰ Let us

buy a piece of bread, and let us give it to them. ²¹ Although we have bread enough, we will not eat it; we will give it to you.

LESSON XXIII.

DISJUNCTIVE AND CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

1. Personal pronouns not immediately connected with a verb, as either its subject or its direct or indirect object, are called disjunctive, or are said to be used disjunctively.

2. The disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are:

| | 1ST PERS. | 2D PERS. | 3D PERS. |
|-------|-----------------|------------------|------------------------------------|
| SING. | moi, <i>me</i> | toi, <i>thee</i> | lui, <i>him</i> ; elle, <i>her</i> |
| PLUR. | nous, <i>us</i> | vous, <i>you</i> | eux m., elles f., <i>them</i> |

a. Note that in the first and second persons these pronouns have the same form with some of the conjunctives, while in the third person **eux** is new, and **lui**, which as conjunctive pronoun (indirect object) is of either gender, as disjunctive is masculine only.

3. The ordinary constructions of the disjunctive pronoun are these:

a. With a preposition.

Thus, **à moi** *to me*, **de toi** *of thee*, **avec lui** *with him*, **sans elle** *without her*, **pour eux** *for them* (m.), **entre elles** *between them* (f.).

b. Used absolutely—that is, without any verb expressed with which they should be immediately connected: thus,

| | |
|--|----------------------------------|
| qui a dit cela, <i>who has said that</i> | moi, <i>I</i> (for je l'ai dit) |
| qui avez-vous vu, <i>whom have you</i> <i>seen?</i> | lui, <i>him</i> (for je l'ai vu) |

elle est plus grande que toi, *she is taller than thou* (art)
faites comme moi, *do as I* (do)

c. In combination with *même self*, to form emphatic pronouns corresponding to our *myself, thyself*, etc. : thus,

| | |
|---------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| moi-même, <i>myself</i> | nous-mêmes, <i>ourselves</i> |
| toi-même, <i>thyself</i> | vous-mêmes, <i>yourselves</i> |
| lui même, <i>himself</i> | eux-mêmes, <i>themselves (m.)</i> |
| elle-même, <i>herself</i> | elles-mêmes, <i>themselves (f.)</i> |

But *nous-même ourselves* and *vous-même yourself*, when used of a single person (VII. 1*b*).

These pronouns admit of being used as subject: thus, *lui-même me l'a dit himself has said it to me*.

d. As predicates after the impersonal *c'est, ce sont, it is*: thus, *c'est moi it is I, c'est vous it is you, est-ce lui, is it he?* but (XI. 2*b*) *ce sont eux, ce sont elles, it is they*.

e. But after personal forms of *être be*, the conjunctive pronoun of the direct object is used as predicate, especially in the sense of *it* or *so*, standing for an adjective or noun already expressed: thus, *êtes-vous heureux? nous le sommes, are you happy? we are so; la reine? je la suis, the queen? I am she* (see Second Part, § 81).

f. When more than one pronoun, or a pronoun and noun, are subjects of the same verb, the pronoun has the disjunctive form; and if the two are not of the same person, the compound subject is usually represented by a suitable pronoun before the verb: thus,

vous et moi (nous) sommes amis, you and I are friends
lui et son oncle sont partis, he and his uncle are gone

The same is necessary in the case of a compound object: thus, *je vous écoute toi et lui et elle, I listen to thee and him and her*.

g. If a subject-pronoun is separated from the verb by anything but the negative *ne* and object-pronouns, it has to take the disjunctive form: thus, *lui, saisissant un crayon, écrivit he, seizing a pencil, wrote; eux seuls sont venus they alone have come*.

4. Besides the personal pronouns already given, there is another, a reflexive pronoun of the 3*d* person, having the conjunctive form *se* and the disjunctive *soi* (like *me moi, te toi*).

Se is used in the inflection of reflexive verbs (XXIX.), both as direct and as indirect object, both as singular and as plural; *soi* is only singular, and usually relates to an indefinite subject: thus,

chacun pense à soi, every one thinks of himself
n'aimer que soi, to love only one's self

5. There are also two words, **en** and **y**, which have the value of genitive and dative cases, respectively, of personal pronouns of the third person. They are used chiefly of things, not of persons (except of unspecified persons in the plural).

a. **En** means *of it, of them*, and so on; it is the equivalent of a pronoun with the preposition **de** (**de lui, d'elle, d'eux, d'elles**).

b. **Y** means *to it, to them*, and so on; it is the equivalent of a pronoun with the preposition **à** (**à lui, à elle, à eux, à elles**).

c. Hence they are often used with verbs to represent nouns which, if expressed, would have to be connected with the verbs by **de** and **à** respectively: thus, **s'en approcher** *to approach it* (because one says **s'approcher de quelque chose** *to approach something*); **je vous en remercie** *I thank you for it* (because **remercier de quelque chose**); **j'en ris** *I laugh at it* (because **rire de quelque chose**); **y arracher** *to wrest from them* (because **arracher à quelqu'un** *wrest from any one*), **j'y pense** *I think of it* (because **penser à quelque chose** *think of something*)—and so on.

6. **En** and **y** are treated as conjunctive pronouns, being always joined with the verb in the sentence, whatever their logical connection, and being put before or after the verb according to the same rules as other object-pronouns (XXII. 7): thus,

j'en suis certain, *I am certain of it*
il en connaît les lois, *he knows the laws of it (its laws)*
vous y êtes obéissant, *you are obedient to it*

a. When used along with other object-pronouns, they stand last, whether before or after the governing verb: thus,

je l'y conduirai, *I will conduct him to it*
conduisez-l'y, *conduct him to it*
donnez-lui-en, *give him of it (some)*
je ne vous en donnerai pas, *I will not give you of it (any)*

b. After the verb as well as before it, **me** and **te** are used instead of **moi** and **toi** before **en**, and usually before **y**: thus, **donnez-m'en** *give me of it (or some)*, **rends-t'y** *betake thyself to it* (but sometimes **rends-y-toi**).

c. When **y** and **en** are used together, **en** follows **y**: thus, **il y en a** *there are some*.

7. **En** is often used partitively, standing for a noun with the partitive preposition **de**.

Thus, **avez-vous du pain?** *have you bread?* **j'en ai; je vous en donnerai,** *I have some; I will give you some.*

a. Where the noun would have an adjective qualifying it, the adjective takes the partitive preposition: thus, **j'en ai de bon** *I have some (that is) good* (equivalent to **j'ai de bon pain**); **voulez-vous des fleurs? je vous en donnerai de belles** *do you want flowers? I will give you some handsome ones.*

8. **En** and **y** are originally adverbs, and are, especially **y** *there*, not seldom used with that value. They have many idiomatic uses, for which see the Second Part, § 85.

VOCABULARY.

le bal, *the ball, dance*
le plaisir, *the pleasure*
penser (à) *think (of)*

le théâtre, *the theatre*
seul, *alone*
parler, *speak*

EXERCISE 23.

¹ Es-tu plus grand que ton frère, ou est-il plus grand que toi? ² Il est plus beau que moi, mais je suis plus grand que lui. ³ Le plus grand, c'est moi; et le plus beau, c'est lui. ⁴ As-tu ton livre avec toi? ⁵ Non, je l'ai perdu. ⁶ Toi et moi, nous le chercherons. ⁷ Moi-même l'ai trouvé, sans vous. ⁸ Le boulanger donne-t-il des gâteaux à ces enfants? ⁹ Il en a, mais il ne leur en donne pas. ¹⁰ Moi, j'en achèterai pour eux; il en a de bons. ¹¹ Toi et lui, avez-vous été au bal hier? ¹² Moi seul y ai été; il était au théâtre avec eux. ¹³ Ce tableau n'est-il pas très beau? ¹⁴ Il l'est; mais j'en ai de plus beaux. ¹⁵ Cet homme parle beaucoup de ses amis; mais il n'y pense pas; il ne pense jamais qu'à soi-même. ¹⁶ Les garçons sont-ils au théâtre? ¹⁷ Ils y ont été avec moi, mais ils n'y sont plus. ¹⁸ Ils y ont eu beaucoup de plaisir, mais ils n'en auront plus; ils sont à l'école à présent. ¹⁹ Menez-m'y, je cherche leur maître. ²⁰ C'est moi, monsieur; je le suis moi-même. ²¹ Aviez-vous

parlé de ce livre? ²² Nous y avons pensé, mais nous n'en avons pas parlé. ²³ Lui et elle en parleront.

THEME 23.

¹ These children are hungry ; give me bread for them.
² I haven't any ; but I will buy some. ³ No, I will buy some myself. ⁴ They are poorer than I, but I am smaller than they. ⁵ They alone are unhappy ; we are not so.
⁶ The most unhappy of men—it is I. ⁷ I have lost my friend, and I am unhappy without him. ⁸ I do not speak of him, but I think always of him. ⁹ I was happy, but I never shall be so again. ¹⁰ This good man never thinks of himself. ¹¹ He has much money, and he gives some to these poor people. ¹² Are these men the peasants of the village?
¹³ It is they. ¹⁴ If you have money, give me some for them.
¹⁵ Have you been at the ball? ¹⁶ No, I have not been at it.
¹⁷ I shall be at the theatre with her to-morrow. ¹⁸ My friend and I were at the ball. ¹⁹ These books are very handsome, but I have handsomer ones in my library. ²⁰ I will give you some for yourself. ²¹ What book have you? ²² I have forgotten the name of it. ²³ I shall be at the house ; wait for me at it. ²⁴ I shall not be there (at it) ; I shall be at my uncle's.

LESSON XXIV.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

1. The demonstrative pronouns are:

ce, this, that, it (indefinite and neuter):

celui m., celle f., this or that one ; ceux m., celles f., these, those

a. To all of them may be added the demonstrative adverbs *-ci* and *-là* (as to the noun following a demonstrative adjective: XIII. 3).

2. **Ce** has the value of a pronoun as subject of *être* *be* in its various tenses, and as antecedent of the relative pronouns *qui*, *que*, etc.

a. In the former case, it is generally to be rendered by *it* in English: thus, *c'est moi* *it is I*, *ce fut son devoir* *it was his duty*, *ç'a été lui* *it was (has been) he*, *ç'aurait été dommage* *it would have been a pity*.

b. **Ce** is much more often used than **il** with the 3d persons of *être* in the sense of *it is*, *it was*, etc. This is especially the case when something already described or intimated is referred to, so that the **ce** would admit of being rendered by *that*; but it is not limited to such cases. In fact, **il** is hardly used except in expressions of time (XI. 2a), before an adjective followed by a logically subject-clause (infinitive or relative) which the **il** anticipates, and in the parenthetic *il est vrai*, meaning *to be sure*.

Thus, *il est temps de partir* *it is time to leave*, *il est tard* *it is late*, *il est six heures* *it is 6 o'clock*, *il est difficile de vous plaire* *it is hard to please you* (i.e. *to please you is hard*), *il est évident que vous avez tort* *it is plain that you are wrong*, *chèrement, il est vrai, mais fort loin* *at a dear rate, to be sure, but very far off*;—but *vous avez tort, c'est évident* *you are wrong, it (that) is plain*; *faites cela, ce n'est pas difficile* *do that, it is not hard, ce fut ma faute* *it was my fault*, *c'est votre ami qui est parti* *it is your friend that has left*.

c. **Ce** is also sometimes used with **pouvoir** and **devoir** as auxiliaries of *être*, and in a few phrases with **sembler** *seem*: thus, *ce pouvait être lui* *it might be he*, *ce doit être* *it must be*, *ce me semble* *it seems to me*.

d. For **ce** as antecedent of a relative, see XXVI. 10.

3. The compounds of **ce** with the demonstrative adverbs are written **ceci** and **cela** (without grave accent; it is often contracted colloquially to **ça**); they mean *this* and *that* in an indefinite way, without reference to any particular object expressed. They are used in all constructions. Thus:

cela ne me plaît pas, *that does not please me*

je ne veux pas ceci; donnez-moi cela, *I don't want this; give me that*
que dites-vous de cela, *what do you say about that?*

a. In a question, **ceci** (rarely used) and **cela** are divided into **ce ci** and **ce là**: thus, *est-ce là votre livre* *is that your book?*
sont-ce ci vos gants *are these your gloves?*

4. The other demonstratives, *celui* etc., distinguish gender and number, and are used of persons and of things, with more direct reference to something already expressed or distinctly understood. They are used either alone or with *ci* and *là* added to them by a hyphen : thus, *celui* *this* or *that one*, *celui-ci* *this one*, *celui-là* *that one*.

a. The simple *celui celle ceux celles* are used only as antecedents of a following relative, and before the preposition *de* in possessive phrases : thus,

celui qui est mon ami, he who is my friend
mes amis et ceux de mon frère, my friends and my brother's
(literally, and those of my brother)
ma robe et celle de ma sœur, my dress and my sister's

b. In all other constructions, the compounds *celui-ci*, *celui-là*, etc., are used—as subject, as object, after prepositions, and so on : thus,

voici deux fleurs ; voulez vous celle-ci ou celle-là, here are two flowers ;
will you have this one or that one ?
ce livre-ci est à moi ; je ne sais rien de celui-là, this book belongs to me ;
I know nothing of that one

c. As the last example shows, the demonstrative adjective is to be used when there is a noun with it for it to qualify, but the demonstrative pronoun to represent the noun, when the latter is omitted.

d. *Celui-ci* etc. often mean *the latter*, and *celui-là* etc. *the former*.

VERB-LESSON.

IRREGULAR VERBS—*Vouloir*.

5. *a.* Those verbs in French which are inflected throughout like one or other of the three—*donner*, *finir*, *vendre*—already given, are called REGULAR VERBS. But there are also many others in the language deviating more or less from these models, and they are called IRREGULAR VERBS.

b. The irregular verbs are one of the principal difficulties of French Grammar. They are of various degrees of irregularity: some are irregular only in their principal parts, all the derived parts coming from them precisely as in the verbs of the three regular conjugations; others are irregular also in the formation of the derived parts (only the impf. subj. coming without any exception regularly from the pret. indic.). But, in all of them, irregularities of tense-inflection are confined to the three present tenses—the present indicative, the imperative, and the present subjunctive. Of the other tenses, when the first person is known, the rest follow from it with certainty.

c. The only rules for the formation of the derived parts are those already given for regular verbs (XVIII. 1-7).

Of more special importance among the irregular verbs is the rule for finding the plural persons of the present from the present participle (XVIII. 4a).

d. In learning an irregular verb, the principal parts should first be mastered and made familiar, then the synopsis, then the inflection of the present tenses when this is in any way irregular. The synopsis of principal and derived parts will be given in this grammar for every irregular verb, and the inflection of the present tenses when called for. In the synopsis, those derived parts which do not come regularly from the principal parts will have attention called to them by being printed with **spaced** or **open** letters.

6. The very common verb *vouloir* *wish, desire, will* (Lat. *velle*), is also a specially irregular and difficult one.

a. Its synopsis is as follows :

| | | | | |
|----------|---------|-------------|------|----------|
| vouloir | voulant | voulu | veux | voulus |
| voudrai | voulais | avoir voulu | — | voulusse |
| voudrais | veuille | etc. etc. | | |

b. Its pres. indic. and subj. are thus inflected :

| PRESENT INDICATIVE. | | PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE. | |
|---------------------|---------|----------------------|----------|
| veux | voulons | veuille | voulions |
| veux | voulez | veuilles | vouliez |
| veut | veulent | veuille | veussent |

c. The regular imperative **veux voulons voulez** is very rarely used; instead of it, the 2d pers. sing. and plur. **veuille veuillez** are used, but only with a following infinitive, and in the sense of

please to, be good enough to : thus, **veuillez vous asseoir** *please sit down*.

d. In **vouloir**, as in a number of other verbs, the vowel of the root is changed (here, from **ou** to **eu**) wherever the radical syllable is accented, not being followed by another of full tone. These forms with changed vowel are sometimes called the strong forms (**veux, veulent, veulent, etc.**).

e. **Vouloir** is used with the infinitive of another verb almost as an auxiliary, and must stand for our *will* whenever a wish or request is implied : thus, **voulez-vous dîner chez nous** *will you dine with us?* It also signifies *wish to have, want* : as, **voulez-vous du lait** *will you have some milk?*

f. **En vouloir**, followed by **à**, means *have a grudge at, be vexed or angry at, be hostile to, etc.* : thus, **il en voulait à ce pauvre homme** *he bore a grudge against this poor man*.

VOCABULARY.

le portrait, *the portrait*

le peintre, *the painter*

vrai, *true*

la peinture, *the painting*

l'atelier m., *the studio*

mieux adv., *better*

EXERCISE 24.

¹ Est-ce là votre père ? ² Non, monsieur, c'est mon oncle.
³ Il est vrai que nous ne l'aimons pas, mais c'est parce qu'il est mauvais homme. ⁴ Ce sont les trois frères de notre ami ; celui-ci travaille toujours, mais ceux-là sont paresseux et ne travaillent jamais. ⁵ Cherchez-vous ceci ? ⁶ Je ne cherche point cela ; je cherche mes livres et ceux de mon frère. ⁷ Voilà les portraits de ma famille ; celui-ci est très bon, mais ceux-là sont mauvais. ⁸ Ce peintre a beaucoup de beaux tableaux dans son atelier. ⁹ Achèterez-vous cette peinture-ci ou celle-là ? ¹⁰ Celle-ci est le portrait de Louis XIV., et celle-là de Louis XV. ¹¹ C'étaient deux rois de France ; celui-là était un très grand roi ; celui-ci était un très mauvais homme. ¹² Ne me donnez pas cela ; je ne l'aime pas ; j'aime mieux ceci. ¹³ Ceci est trop cher ; je ne vous l'achèterai pas. ¹⁴ C'est cher, il est vrai ; mais c'est très beau. ¹⁵ Si j'avais assez d'argent, j'achèterais tout ceci. ¹⁶ Sont-ce là vos livres ou ceux du maître ? ¹⁷ Ce sont mes livres ; ceux de mon maître sont à l'école. ¹⁸ Quoique nous fussions très riches, nous n'achèterions pas

ces tableaux-ci ; ceux-là sont beaucoup plus beaux. ¹⁹ Cet homme n'est pas très riche, mais celui-là est très pauvre. ²⁰ J'ai beaucoup de robes, et je vous donnerai celle-ci. ²¹ Je lui donnerai aussi celle de ma sœur. ²² Donnez-moi celle-là ; je l'aime mieux.

THEME 24.

¹ Is that your house ? ² Yes, it is my house, and it is a very good house. ³ We have prettier ones in our village ; but this one is larger than my father's. ⁴ This picture is handsome ; I do not like that one. ⁵ Are you the painter of it ? ⁶ I am the painter of this one, and I have many pictures in my studio. ⁷ Do you like this one better, or that one ? ⁸ I like this one, but those are also very pretty. ⁹ Which portrait have you bought ? ¹⁰ I have bought that of the king of England. ¹¹ Have you brought me this ? ¹² Yes ; but if you do not like this, I will give you that. ¹³ I have lost your present and your brother's, but I will look for them. ¹⁴ I have found this in the garden, and I will give it to you. ¹⁵ It is seven o'clock, and I am hungry ; give me bread. ¹⁶ I have some, but it is not for you. ¹⁷ You had some fruit, and you did not give me any ; now I do not give you this. ¹⁸ These men do not work, but those work always. ¹⁹ We have lost our horse, but we have my brother's. ²⁰ If we had not had these flowers, we should have bought the old woman's. ²¹ These flowers are not handsome ; I like those better.

VERB-LESSON.

¹ Voulez-vous du pain ? ² Je n'en veux pas ; je n'ai pas faim. ³ Ne voudriez-vous pas manger ce fruit ? ⁴ Veuillez m'en donner. ⁵ Ils ne veulent pas travailler. ⁶ Il voulait manger. ⁷ Il ne veut pas me le donner. ⁸ Quoiqu'il voulût manger, il n'avait rien.

⁹ I will ; they do not wish ; will you ? we shall have wished ; you will wish ; that I might have wished ; that

she might wish ; that we may wish ; they wished ; we were wishing ; they would have wished. ¹⁰ Will you have some milk ? ¹¹ No, I do not want any ; I want some water. ¹² I want to give her a present. ¹³ Give her a new dress ; she wants it. ¹⁴ Will you buy a dress for her ?

LESSON XXV.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

1. The interrogative pronouns are :

qui, who? whom? what?

quoi, what?

que, what?

lequel etc., which

2. **Qui** is hardly used except of persons. It stands for all genders and numbers, and in all constructions—as subject, object, predicate, after a preposition, etc. Thus :

qui est là, who is there?

qui cherchent-ils, whom do they seek?

qui êtes-vous, who are you?

pour qui ce crayon est-il, for whom is this pencil?

à qui est ce livre-là, to whom does that book belong?

3. **Qui** is sometimes, but only rarely, used as subject in the sense of *what?* Generally, the phrase **qu'est-ce qui** *what is that which* or *what is it that* is employed instead. Thus :

qui vous amène, what brings you here?

qu'est-ce qui vous trouble, what troubles you? (literally, what is it that troubles you?)

4. **Que** and **quoi** *what?* are also without distinction of gender or number, but are used only of things; **que** is conjunctive (XXII. 2), and **quoi** is disjunctive (like *me moi*, etc.).

a. **Que** is only object of a verb, or predicate with an intransitive verb: thus,

que voulez-vous, *what do you wish?*

que nous dit cet homme, *what does this man say to us?*

qu'est-ce (or qu'est-ce que c'est), *what is it?*

que sert-il, *of what use is it?*

que deviendra-t il, *what will he become? (i.e. what will become of him?)*

b. **Quoi** is used absolutely, and with a preposition: thus,

elle vous a donné—**quoi**, *she has given you—what?*

de quoi parle-t-il, *of what is he speaking?*

c. Both **que** and **quoi** are frequent in exclamation: thus,

que de services il m'a rendus, *what services he has rendered me!*

quoi de plus heureux, *what more fortunate!*

quoi! vous y êtes encore, *what! you are here still?*

d. **Que** is often also an adverb, meaning *how? why?*: thus,

que vous êtes belle, *how handsome you are!*

que parlez-vous si haut, *why do you speak so loud?*

5. **Lequel** is made up of the interrogative adjective **quel** (XIII. 4) and the definite article; it is written as if one word, but both its parts are inflected for gender and number: thus,

Sing. lequel m., laquelle f. Plur. lesquels m., lesquelles f.

They are used in all constructions, in the sense of *which? which one? what one?* Thus:

voici deux livres: lequel choisissez-vous, *here are two books: which do you choose?*

laquelle de ses sœurs est mariée, *which of his sisters is married?*

par lequel de ces chemins, *by which one of these roads?*

a. The article in **lequel** etc. also combines with the prepositions **de** and **à** just as when it stands alone, making **duquel**, **desquels**, **desquelles**; **auquel**, **auxquels**, **auxquelles**: thus, **duquel** de vos amis parlez-vous *of which of your friends do you speak?* **auxquelles** de ces écolières les a-t-il donnés *to which of these scholars has he given them?*

6. After some interrogative words—the pronouns **qui** and **que**, the adjective **quel**, and the adverbs **où** *where?* **quand** *when?* com-

ment *how?* **combien** *how much, how many?*—a subject-noun is allowed to be itself put after the verb in asking a question (compare I. 11): thus, **que veut cette femme** *what does this woman want?* **où est notre ami** *where is our friend?* **quel livre a l'écolier** *what book has the scholar?*

7. It is common in French to use paraphrases in asking questions: thus, **qu'est-ce que vous avez** *what is it that you have?* for **qu'avez-vous** *what have you?* **qui est-ce qui vend** *who is it that sells?* for **qui vend** *who sells?* and the like; also **est-ce que vous avez** *is it [the case] that you have?* for **avez-vous** *have you?* and especially **est-ce que j'aime** instead of **aimé-je**, and the like.

VERB-LESSON.

8. The verb **pouvoir** *be able, can*, is, like **vouloir** (XXIV. 6), a very common and very irregular verb, used somewhat in the manner of an auxiliary of mode.

a. Its synopsis of principal and derived forms is:

| | | | | |
|-----------------|----------------|--------------------------|---------------------|--------------|
| pouvoir | pouvant | pu | peux or puis | pus |
| pourrai | pouvais | avoir pu | ———— | pusse |
| pourrais | puisse | <small>etc. etc.</small> | | |

b. This verb has no imperative. Its pres. subj. is entirely regular in inflection. The pres. indic. is as follows:

| | |
|-------------------|----------------|
| peux, puis | pouvons |
| peux | pouvez |
| peut | peuvent |

c. In this tense is seen the same exchange of **ou** and **eu** as in **vouloir**. The impf. indic. comes regularly from another form of the pres. pple, **puissant**, now used only as ordinary adjective, meaning *powerful, puissant*.

d. **Puis** and **peux** are equally common as 1st sing. In questions, however, only **puis-je** is used.

e. When this verb is made negative before an infinitive, the **pas** is often omitted: thus, **cela ne peut tarder** *that cannot delay*. The omission is more usual with **puis** than with **peux** in 1st sing. present.

f. **Pouvoir** sometimes expresses general possibility, and is to be rendered by *may, might*, etc.: thus, **cela peut être** *that may be*, **il pouvait avoir vingt ans** *he might (perhaps) be 20 years old*. It is sometimes used reflexively, in the sense of *be possible*: thus, **cela se peut** *that is possible*.

g. **Pouvoir** often takes an object directly where in English we have to use another verb: thus, **peut-il attendre** *can he wait*, **il le peut** *he can (do) it*.

VOCABULARY.

la serviette, *the napkin*
 l'assiette, *the plate*
 le couteau, *the knife*
 dîner, *dine*
 maintenant, *now*

la nappe, *the table-cloth*
 la cuiller, *the spoon*
 la fourchette, *the fork*
 déjeuner, *breakfast*
 alors, *then*

EXERCISE 25.

¹ Qui est ce jeune homme? ² C'est Monsieur B., mon ami. ³ Lequel de vos amis aimez-vous. ⁴ Je les aime tous. ⁵ Qui veut dîner avec moi? ⁶ Moi, je le veux; je n'ai pas encore dîné, et j'ai faim. ⁷ Laquelle des deux nappes voulez-vous employer? ⁸ Nous emploierons la rouge; nous voulons nettoyer la blanche. ⁹ À qui est cette assiette-ci? ¹⁰ C'est à mon fils, mais il n'est pas encore ici. ¹¹ Qu'avez-vous à manger? ¹² Veuillez manger de la viande et des légumes. ¹³ Voilà une cuiller et une fourchette; laquelle voulez-vous? ¹⁴ Donnez-moi la fourchette, et un couteau aussi. ¹⁵ Que veut-il? ¹⁶ Il veut du sel et du poivre. ¹⁷ Que lui donnez-vous maintenant? ¹⁸ Je lui donne une assiette. ¹⁹ Lequel de vos frères est ici, et que veut-il? ²⁰ Il veut déjeuner avec moi. ²¹ De quoi vous a-t-il parlé? ²² Il m'a parlé du concert; qu'en pensez-vous? ²³ À quoi pensiez-vous alors? ²⁴ Je pensais à ma tâche. ²⁵ Auxquelles des jeunes filles pensez-vous maintenant? ²⁶ Je pense à ma nièce.

THEME 25.

¹ Who has been in my room? ² It was I, madam. ³ What did you want? ⁴ I wanted to find the table-cloth and napkins. ⁵ Which did you find? ⁶ I found the white ones. ⁷ At what hour do you wish to dine? ⁸ I will dine now, because I have not breakfasted to-day. ⁹ What have you on the table? ¹⁰ We have butter and cheese; which do you wish? ¹¹ I wish cheese with my bread; give me a knife and a plate. ¹² Here is a blue and a white plate;

which do you want? ¹³ Please to give me that large knife.
¹⁴ Which of the knives is the largest? ¹⁵ This knife is larger than that. ¹⁶ Of what are you thinking? ¹⁷ Why do you not bring me the meat and the vegetables?
¹⁸ Who is this woman, and what has she in her basket?
¹⁹ She has potatoes; and I will buy you some. ²⁰ To which of the children did he give the cake? ²¹ He gave it to nobody then; he will give it now to this good child. ²² Of whom have you bought this picture? ²³ I bought it of the painter for my sister. ²⁴ Of what were you speaking?
²⁵ We were speaking of this portrait.

VERB-LESSON.

¹ Il peut travailler. ² Il ne pouvait pas travailler. ³ Il ne pourra pas travailler, s'il est malade. ⁴ Il pourrait travailler, s'il n'était pas malade. ⁵ Il veut travailler, mais il ne le peut pas. ⁶ Nous le pouvons, mais nous ne le voulons pas. ⁷ A-t-il attendu? ⁸ Il ne l'a pas pu.

⁹ Can I? you can; we were able; they will be able; she has been able; though he cannot; if thou couldst; that he might be able. ¹⁰ We can if we will; he could if he would; he will be able if you shall be able. ¹¹ This one would work if he could; those can (it) and will not (it). ¹² I should have been able to love you, if you had been willing to love me. ¹³ I cannot love you, but I have not been able to hate you.

LESSON XXVI.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

1. All the interrogative pronouns are used also as relatives, but with some notable differences from their use as interrogatives.

2. By far the commonest relatives are **qui** and **que**—**qui** standing as subject, and **que** as direct object of a verb. Both of them signify either persons or things, of any gender or number. Thus,

l'enfant qui pleure, the child that cries

des oiseaux qui volent, birds that fly

le livre que vous avez, the book which you have

les amis que nous aimons, the friends whom we love

a. **Que** is also sometimes predicate with an intransitive, especially **être**: thus, **imbécile que vous êtes** *fool that you are*, **ce que c'est** *that which it is*, **ce que vous devenez** *that which you become*, **ce qu'il nous faut** *what we lack*.

b. The participle of a compound tense following **que** agrees in gender and number (X. 5b) with the word to which **que** relates: thus, **les gants qu'il a achetés** *the gloves that he has bought*, **les fleurs que nous avons vues** *the flowers which we had seen*.

c. A verb having **qui** as subject is of the person of its antecedent: thus, **moi qui suis** *I who am*, **toi qui as** *thou that hast*, etc.

3. **Qui** is also used with prepositions, but generally only of persons: thus,

l'homme à qui je l'ai donné, the man to whom I have given it

les amis chez qui vous demeurez, the friends with whom you live

4. **Lequel** etc. is used with prepositions of objects other than persons: thus,

le chien auquel j'ai donné à manger, the dog to which I have given (something) to eat

les maisons dans lesquelles vous demeurez, the houses in which you dwell

a. After **parmi** *among*, **lesquels** (or **lesquelles**) is always used, and not **qui**.

5. But **lequel** etc. is also used as subject or direct object of a verb, in place of **qui** or **que**—generally, however, only when there is special reason for distinguishing the gender and number of the person or thing referred to: thus,

voilà l'ami de ma mère, lequel vient me voir, here is my mother's friend, who comes to see me (where **qui**, if used, might seem to refer to *mère* *mother*)

6. **Quoi**, when used as relative, is more often a compound relative (or relative implying also its antecedent), and taken in a general or indefinite sense: thus,

des choses à quoi on fait attention, things to which one pays attention
après quoi, il s'en alla, after which, he went off

je ne sais quoi, I don't know what

vous me direz à quoi me fier, you will tell me on what to rely

a. **De quoi**, before an infinitive, means *wherewith*: thus, **j'ai de quoi vous amuser** *I have wherewith to amuse you (the means of amusing you).*

7. Instead of **qui** or **lequel** with preceding **de** is often used **dont**, meaning *of whom, of which, whose*: thus,

l'homme dont vous parlez, the man of whom you speak

notre ami, dont le fils est ici, our friend, whose son is here

a. If the word on which **dont** is dependent is object of a verb, it takes its regular place after the verb, however far separated from the relative: thus, **la femme dont vous avez reçu la lettre** *the woman whose letter you have received, le livre dont je ne connais pas le titre* *the book of which I do not know the title.*

b. **Dont** is originally an adverb (= Lat. *de unde*), meaning *whence, from whence*, and it is often best so rendered: thus, **l'esprit retourne au ciel, dont il est descendu** *the spirit returns to heaven, whence it descended.*

8. The adverb **où** *where* is also often used almost as a relative pronoun, meaning *to or at or in which*, and the like: thus, **les honneurs où vous aspirez** *the honors to which you aspire, la douleur où je suis plongé* *the grief into which I am plunged.* And **d'où** means *from which or whence*, and **par où** *by which, by which route, etc.*

9. **Quiconque** *whoever, anyone who*, is an indefinite relative, generally without antecedent expressed: thus, **quiconque ment, sera puni** *whoever lies shall be punished.*

10. The pronoun used as antecedent of a relative (as already pointed out, XXIV. 2, 4a) is not the personal, as in English *he who, they who*, and so on, but the demonstrative, **ce** or **celui** etc.

a. **Ce qui** and **ce que** answer to English *what* or *that which*, the one as subject, the other as object (or sometimes predicate) of a verb: thus,

dites-moi ce qui vous trouble, *tell me what troubles you*
 dites-moi ce que vous voulez, *tell me what you wish*
 dites-moi ce que vous êtes, *tell me what you are*
 faites tout ce que je vous dis, *do all that I tell you*

b. **Ce dont** means *of what* or *that of which*: thus, **dites-moi ce dont vous avez à vous plaindre** *tell me of what you have to complain.*

c. **Celui qui** or **que** etc. means in like manner *he who*, *the one which*, and so on: thus,

celui qui est dans les cieux, *he who is in the heavens*
 celle que vous aimez, *she whom you love*

11. Note that the relative, often omitted in English, must always be expressed in French: thus,

the friends I love, les amis que j'aime
the books he has bought, les livres qu'il a achetés

VERB-LESSON.

12. The irregular verb **devoir** *owe*, *ought* etc. is conjugated as follows:

a. Synopsis of principal and derived parts:

| | | | | |
|---------|--------|-----------|------|----|
| devoir | devant | dû | dois | du |
| devrai | devais | avoir dû | dois | du |
| devrais | doive | etc. etc. | | |

b. Inflection of the present tenses:

| PRESENT INDICATIVE. | | IMPERATIVE. | | PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE. | |
|---------------------|---------|-------------|--------|----------------------|---------|
| dois | devons | | devons | doive | devions |
| dois | devez | dois | devez | doives | deviez |
| doit | doivent | | | doive | doivent |

c. Note that in the accented or strong forms the root-vowel changes from **e** to **oi**.

d. Several other verbs (**recevoir** etc.) are conjugated like **devoir**, and in some grammars form with it the third regular conjugation (XVIII. 1a.)

e. The past participle has the circumflex only in the masc. sing. (to distinguish it from **du** = **de le**); the other forms are **due**, **dus**, **dues**.

f. **Doit** etc. very often signifies *is to*, *is planned* or *destined to*: thus, **il doit venir chez nous demain** *he is to come to us tomorrow*, **je savais ce que je devais faire** *I knew what I was to do*. In many cases it has the sense of *must*, *have to*, etc.: thus, **elle a dû être belle dans sa jeunesse** *she must have been beautiful in her youth*. The meaning *ought* belongs especially to the conditional: thus, **quand devrais-je revenir** *when ought I to come back?* **il aurait dû le faire** *he ought to have done it*.

VOCABULARY.

la cuisine, *the kitchen*
l'œuf m., *the egg*
la rue, *the street*
préparer, *prepare*

la cuisinière, *the cook*
les pois m., *the peas*
demander, *ask*
demeurer, *live, dwell*

EXERCISE 26.

¹ Qui est-ce qui vous cherche? ² C'est ma cuisinière qui me cherche. ³ Qu'est-ce qu'elle veut? ⁴ Elle demande à quelle heure je veux déjeuner. ⁵ Elle préparera tout ce que vous voudrez. ⁶ Voulez-vous de la viande qu'elle a préparée, ou des œufs qui sont dans la cuisine? ⁷ Je mangerai les pois que j'ai sur mon assiette. ⁸ La femme dont je vous ai parlé est dans la cuisine. ⁹ C'est la femme à qui j'ai donné de l'argent. ¹⁰ Que veut-elle? ¹¹ Elle veut vous vendre ce qu'elle a dans son panier. ¹² Qu'est-ce que c'est? ¹³ Ce sont des œufs qu'elle a apportés de la campagne. ¹⁴ Où cherchez-vous les brebis? ¹⁵ Je les chercherai dans les champs où je les ai perdues. ¹⁶ Où demeurent ces pauvres gens? ¹⁷ Ils demeurent dans la vieille maison où je vous ai mené hier. ¹⁸ Quiconque donne aux pauvres sera béni. ¹⁹ Celle qui vous aime vous donnera ce que vous voulez. ²⁰ Donnez à celle que vous aimez ce qu'elle veut. ²¹ Voilà la maison où nous demeurons.

THEME 26.

¹ Whom do you love? ² I love those who love me; but I do not hate him who hates me. ³ Speak to me of her of whom I was thinking. ⁴ I looked for the house in which he lived, but I had forgotten in which of the two streets it was. ⁵ The house is in the street in which my brother lives. ⁶ If I had found him whom I sought, I should have given him all that I had. ⁷ My cook bought all the eggs which he had brought in his basket. ⁸ Does she not want also the peas which are in the basket? ⁹ No, we have pota-

toes still. ¹⁰ The friend at whose house I wish to dine is he of whom you spoke to me. ¹¹ He is a handsome man whom I love, and whose mother was my friend. ¹² The books of which you spoke to me are in the library. ¹³ These houses are those to which we bring milk and eggs. ¹⁴ The man to whom we sold the eggs lives in that house. ¹⁵ Whoever wishes to be good can be so. ¹⁶ I will love him who finds me what I have lost. ¹⁷ Give me what is in your pocket, and I will give you what I have in my hand. ¹⁸ What is that which you are eating? ¹⁹ There is the man to whom I sold my book. ²⁰ Where is the little boy whose father lives in our street?

VERB-LESSON.

¹ Je ne vous dois rien. ² Il me doit beaucoup d'argent. ³ Il me donna ce qu'il me devait. ⁴ Ces enfants devraient être punis. ⁵ Nous devions l'apporter hier, mais nous ne le pouvions pas. ⁶ J'ai dû être ici à cinq heures.

⁷ He owes; they were owing; we owed (pret.); they will owe; she would owe; that you may owe; that he might owe. ⁸ We are to dine at four o'clock. ⁹ He was to be here at noon. ¹⁰ You must be hungry. ¹¹ You ought (cond.) not to forget what I have told you. ¹² They must have forgotten it.

LESSON XXVII.

POSSESSIVE AND INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

1. When used substantively, or without an accompanying noun expressed, the possessives have a special form (different from that of the possessive adjectives: XIV.), and are always preceded by the definite article: thus,

| SINGULAR. | | PLURAL. | |
|-----------|-----------|-----------|------------------------------------|
| le mien | la mienne | les miens | les miennes, <i>mine</i> |
| le tien | la tienne | les tiens | les tiennes, <i>thine</i> |
| le sien | la sienne | les siens | les siennes, <i>his, hers, its</i> |
| le nôtre | la nôtre | | les nôtres, <i>ours</i> |
| le vôtre | la vôtre | | les vôtres, <i>yours</i> |
| le leur | la leur | | les leurs, <i>theirs</i> |

a. The feminines and plurals are made regularly, according to the rules for adjectives (VII., VIII.), except that **leur** has the same form for masculine and feminine.

2. These possessive pronouns (as they may be called) take the gender and number of the object possessed, and must be used whenever the noun expressing that object does not immediately follow them: thus,

mon chapeau et le sien, *my hat and his (or hers)*
 son chapeau et le mien, *his (or her) hat and mine*
 nous avons nos chapeaux et ils ont les leurs, *we have our hats*
and they have theirs

3. A few other words, more or less akin with pronouns in value, call for mention and explanation.

4. As an indefinite subject, **on** is used in the sense of *one, they, people*, and the like: thus,

on dit, *one says, they say, people say, etc.*

a. Instead of **on** simply, **l'on** (with the article prefixed) is often used after a vowel sound, especially after **et, ou, où, que, si**: thus, **si l'on voit** *if one sees*.

b. This is the inclusive article (IV. 5), saved in order to prevent hiatus; since **on** is by origin an abbreviation of **homme**.

c. It is very often convenient to substitute in English a passive expression for an active with **on**: thus, *it is said* for **on dit**.

5. Compounds of **un** with the pronominal adjectives (XIV. 6) **chaque** *each* and **quelque** *some* are

chacun m., chacune f., *each, each one, every one*
 quelqu'un m., quelqu'une f., *some one, somebody*
 quelques uns m., quelques unes f., *some, some people*

a. *Something, anything* is expressed by **quelque chose**,

and *everything* by *tout* or by *toute chose* (not *chaque chose*).

6. Some words used as pronominal adjectives (XIV. 6) may stand also substantively, or as pronouns: such are *aucun m.*, *aucune f.* (with *ne* before the verb), *not one*, *no one*, *none*; *un autre another*, *l'autre the other*, *d'autres others*, etc.; *plusieurs several*; *tout all, everything*; *le même the same*.

a. From *autre* comes the pronoun *autrui another, other people, others than one's self*; it is never used as subject.

7. *Un one* and *autre other* are combined into certain phrases: thus, *l'un et l'autre the one and the other*, i.e. *both*; *l'un ou l'autre the one or the other*, i.e. *either*; *ni l'un ni l'autre* (with *ne* before the verb) *neither the one nor the other*, i.e. *neither*; *l'un l'autre the one the other*, i.e. *one another, each other*.

a. *Both* is also expressed by *tous deux* or *tous les deux* (literally, *all the two*).

b. *Tout le monde* (literally, *all the world*) is a very common expression for *everybody*: thus, *tout le monde l'aime everybody loves him*.

VERB-LESSON.

8. The verb *aller go* is extremely irregular, being made up in its conjugation of parts derived from three different verbs. It takes *être* as auxiliary (XXVIII. 6a).

a. Its synopsis of principal and derived parts is:

| | | | | |
|-------|--------|-----------|------|---------|
| aller | allant | allé | vais | allai |
| irai | allais | être allé | va | allasse |
| irais | aille | etc. etc. | | |

b. Its three present tenses are inflected thus:

| PRESENT INDICATIVE. | | IMPERATIVE. | | PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE. | |
|---------------------|--------|-------------|--------|----------------------|---------|
| vais | allons | | allons | aille | allions |
| vas | allez | va | allez | ailles | alliez |
| va | vont | | | aille | aillent |

9. *a.* **Va** 2d sing. impv. becomes **vas** before **en** and **y** (compare XVIII. 10*a*).

b. **Vais** etc. come from Lat. *vadere walk*; **irai** etc., from Lat. *ire go*; the Lat. original of **aller** etc. is obscure and disputed.

c. The present and imperfect indic. of **aller** are used before an infinitive (without infinitive-sign), precisely like *I am going, I was going* in English, as a sort of immediate future tense, or to denote something just about to take place: thus, **il va partir** *he is going to leave*, **j'allais lui répondre** *I was going to answer him*.

d. **Allons** *let us go* is used in the sense of *come, come on*. **Aller voir, aller chercher** correspond to our *visit, and look for or fetch*. For the reflexive **s'en aller** *go off*, see XXIX. 7*c*.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| le salon, <i>the saloon, dining-room</i> | le ragoût, <i>the stew, ragout</i> |
| le couvert, <i>the cover (place at table)</i> | le plat, <i>the dish</i> |
| la soupe, <i>the soup</i> | la soupière, <i>the tureen</i> |
| le poisson, <i>the fish</i> | la confiture, <i>the sweetmeat</i> |
| casser, <i>break</i> | ôter, <i>remove, take off or away</i> |

EXERCISE 27.

¹ Est-ce que votre oncle et le mien sont ici? ² Oui, madame, ils sont tous les deux ici. ³ Si tout le monde est ici, nous pouvons dîner. ⁴ Votre salon est plus grand que le mien. ⁵ Oui, monsieur, le mien est plus grand, mais le vôtre est plus joli. ⁶ Ce sont toutes les deux de très belles chambres. ⁷ Voici votre couvert, et voilà les leurs. ⁸ Marie, apporte de la soupe à monsieur. ⁹ Voulez-vous de ce plat-ci ou de l'autre? ¹⁰ Je ne veux ni de l'un ni de l'autre; donnez-moi le ragoût et quelques légumes. ¹¹ Ne voulez-vous pas de pommes de terre? ¹² J'en ai déjà mangé plusieurs; mais j'en mangerai encore quelques unes. ¹³ Dois-je donner des confitures aux enfants? ¹⁴ Non, aucun des enfants ne doit manger de confitures. ¹⁵ On a donné aux enfants du poisson et de la viande, et ils ont mangé de l'un et de l'autre. ¹⁶ Où est la soupière? ¹⁷ On l'a cassée. ¹⁸ On ne doit jamais casser les choses d'autrui. ¹⁹ Si l'on casse une

chose, on devrait en acheter une autre. ²⁰ Ces messieurs ont ôté leurs chapeaux ; ôte aussi le tien. ²¹ On ôte toujours son chapeau dans la maison. ²² J'aime toutes les choses que vous aimez.

THEME 27.

¹ Are you looking for my brother or hers? ² I have looked for both, but I have found neither ; they have dined already. ³ Several of my friends are here ; let us dine without the others. ⁴ Each one ought to have a cover. ⁵ We have eight places, and we can have others. ⁶ You have not plates enough ; some one has broken several. ⁷ If one looks in the kitchen, one will find some. ⁸ We have several dishes ; which will you (have) ? ⁹ Will you (have) fish or meat ? ¹⁰ We will (have) neither ; give me some stew. ¹¹ I am not hungry ; give me only very little of the meat ; I ought to eat something. ¹² Remove these sweetmeats, and bring me others. ¹³ Your sweetmeats are much better than mine. ¹⁴ Ours are good, but theirs are very bad. ¹⁵ Everybody is hungry, but no one of us eats stew. ¹⁶ I am poor ; but I have never eaten the bread of others. ¹⁷ My children are much more amiable than hers, but his are prettier than yours. ¹⁸ Every one loves his children better than those of other people. ¹⁹ If one has good children, one is always happy. ²⁰ What do you think of (de) this book ? ²¹ Each of us thinks something of it, but no one thinks the same of it.

VERB-LESSON.

¹ Où allez-vous ? ² Je vais à la ville. ³ Ces enfants iront chercher leurs amis. ⁴ Ils vont à l'école. ⁵ Va chercher des confitures, nous allons en manger. ⁶ Je vais les apporter. ⁷ Allons, parlons d'autre chose.

⁸ Thou goest ; they were going ; she went ; did you go ? we shall go ; he would go ; that I may go ; that he might go. ⁹ We are going to eat. ¹⁰ He was going to be hungry.

¹¹ I shall go to-morrow. ¹² Did they go to look for the dog?
¹³ My friends are going to the city. ¹⁴ Come, let us find them.

LESSON XXVIII.

PASSIVE VERBS ; AUXILIARIES.

1. The forms of the PASSIVE conjugation of a verb are made in French precisely as in English : namely, by prefixing the auxiliary être *be* to a past participle.

a. To make, then, any given passive form of a verb, add to the corresponding form of être the past or passive participle of that verb : thus,

he was praised, il était loué

he would have been praised, il aurait été loué

b. The participle agrees in gender and number with the subject of the verb : thus,

she was praised, elle était louée

they (m.) would have been praised, ils auraient été loués

c. Note, however, that (VII. 1*b*) if **vous** is used to represent a single person, the participle agrees with it only in gender : thus, *you* (sing. f.) *will be praised, vous serez louée.*

2. *a.* Taking as an example the verb **louer** *praise*, the synopsis of simple passive tenses is as follows :

INFINITIVE.

être loué (louée, loués, louées), *be praised*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

étant loué (etc.), *being praised*

| | | |
|-------------|------------|--|
| INDICATIVE | PRESENT, | je suis loué (etc.), <i>I am praised</i> |
| | IMPERFECT, | j'étais loué (etc.), <i>I was praised</i> |
| | PRETERIT, | je fus loué (etc.), <i>I was praised</i> |
| | FUTURE, | je serai loué (etc.), <i>I shall be praised</i> |
| CONDITIONAL | | je serais loué (etc.), <i>I should be praised</i> |
| IMPERATIVE | | sois loué (etc.), <i>be praised</i> |
| SUBJUNCTIVE | PRESENT, | que je sois loué (etc.), <i>that I may be praised</i> |
| | IMPERFECT, | que je fusse loué (etc.), <i>that I might be praised</i> |

b. The synopsis of compound passive tenses is :

| | | |
|-------------|-------------|---|
| PERFECT | INFINITIVE, | avoir été loué (etc.), <i>to have been praised</i> |
| PERFECT | PARTICIPLE, | ayant été loué (etc.), <i>having been praised</i> |
| INDICATIVE | PERFECT, | j'ai été loué (etc.), <i>I have been praised</i> |
| | PLUPERFECT, | j'avais été loué (etc.), <i>I had been praised</i> |
| | PAST ANT., | j'eus été loué (etc.), <i>I had been praised</i> |
| | FUT. PERF. | j'aurai été loué (etc.), <i>I shall have been praised</i> |
| CONDITIONAL | PERFECT, | j'aurais été loué (etc.), <i>I should have been praised</i> |
| SUBJUNCTIVE | PERFECT, | que j'aie été loué (etc.), <i>that I may have been praised</i> |
| | PLUPERFECT, | que j'eusse été loué (etc.), <i>that I might have been praised</i> |

3. After a passive verb, *by* is generally represented by **par** ; but sometimes also by **de**, if the verb expresses a mental action or feeling : thus,

il est aimé de tout le monde, *he is loved by everybody*
il fut trouvé par le chien, *he was found by the dog*

4. The passive is less used in French than in English; instead of it often stand active verbs with the indefinite subject **on** (XXVII. 4), or reflexive verbs (XXIX.).

Avoir or être AS AUXILIARIES.

5. **Avoir** is the auxiliary used in forming the compound tenses of all transitive verbs, and of the great majority of intransitive or neuter verbs (including **être** *be* itself)

6. **Être** is used to make the compound forms of all passives (above, 1) and reflexives (XXIX. 3), and also of a few intransitives.

a. The commonest intransitives taking always **être** as auxiliary are :

| | |
|--|------------------------------------|
| aller , <i>go</i> | éclore , <i>open, hatch</i> |
| venir , <i>come</i> (with its compounds devenir , parvenir , etc.) | mourir , <i>die</i> |
| arriver , <i>arrive, happen</i> | décéder , <i>decease</i> |
| entrer , <i>enter</i> | tomber , <i>fall</i> |
| naître , <i>be born</i> | choir , <i>fall</i> |

7. A number of intransitives take sometimes **avoir** and sometimes **être**—**avoir** when there is had in view especially the performance of an act, but **être** when the resulting condition: thus,

il a passé à quatre heures, *he went by at four o'clock*

il est passé et disparu, *he has gone by and disappeared*

a. Such verbs are especially those that signify a distinct change of place or condition. The most frequent of them are **partir**, **sortir**, **retourner** (these three almost always with **être**), **passer**, **rester**, **monter**, **descendre**, **accourir**, **changer**, **cesser**, **échapper**; and **croître**, **grandir**, **vieillir**, **dégénérer**, **disparaître**, **périr**, and so on.

8. When an intransitive has **être** as auxiliary, its participle in the compound tenses agrees in gender and number with the subject of the verb; but the participle with **avoir** remains unchanged (i.e. has the masc. sing. form, whatever the character of the subject).

VOCABULARY.

le royaume, *the kingdom, realm*

la patrie, *the (one's) country*

le citoyen, *the citizen*

chasser, *drive off or away*

arriver, *arrive*

passer, *pass*

vieillir, *age, grow old*

inviter, *invite*

la république, *the republic*

la loi, *the law*

l'ennemi m., *the enemy*

rappeler, *recall, call back*

rester, *remain, stay*

retourner, *return*

obéir à, *obey*

louer, *praise*

EXERCISE 28.

¹ Le roi est-il aimé de ses sujets? ² Non, le roi n'est aimé de personne, mais la reine est aimée de tout le monde.

³ La patrie doit être aimée de tous les citoyens. ⁴ Les citoyens sont protégés par les lois. ⁵ Ceux qui n'obéissent pas aux lois seront punis.

⁶ Le roi a été chassé de son royaume par ses ennemis. ⁷ Il a passé en Angleterre, et il y est resté pendant deux ans.

⁸ Il a été rappelé par les citoyens, et il est retourné en France. ⁹ Charles est-il resté

chez vous? ¹⁰ Non, monsieur, il n'est pas encore arrivé.
¹¹ Votre mère a beaucoup vieilli pendant l'année dernière.
¹² Cette femme est beaucoup vieillie, mais elle est encore très belle. ¹³ Est-ce que votre amie est arrivée, madame?
¹⁴ Non, je suis allée la chercher, mais je ne l'ai pas trouvée.
¹⁵ Êtes-vous invité au bal? ¹⁶ Non, madame; je ne suis pas invité, mais vous et votre sœur êtes invitées. ¹⁷ N'est-elle pas allée à sa chambre? ¹⁸ Oui, mais nous l'avons appelée, et elle est retournée au salon. ¹⁹ Mon ami veut vendre sa maison; la mienne est déjà vendue. ²⁰ Elle a été achetée par mon riche voisin.

THEME 28.

¹ The republic is loved and praised by everybody. ² The country ought to be protected by its citizens. ³ Where is the king of France? ⁴ He has gone to England, but the queen has stayed here. ⁵ Has he never returned? ⁶ Yes, he returned last year. ⁷ The citizens are praised because they obey the laws. ⁸ Many of the enemies of the republic have been driven away, but some have remained. ⁹ Has not Helen been here? ¹⁰ No, she went by at six o'clock, but she did not stay. ¹¹ She has not yet returned. ¹² At what hour did you arrive? ¹³ I arrived at ten o'clock. ¹⁴ We arrived at half past eight. ¹⁵ You (pl.) did not stay long in Paris. ¹⁶ Where has Mary gone? ¹⁷ She had gone to her room, but I called her, and she has returned to the dining-room. ¹⁸ Is she not invited to the concert to-day? ¹⁹ No; we are invited, but she and her sister are not invited. ²⁰ She is still very handsome, although she has aged very much. ²¹ The enemy passed into Germany last week.

LESSON XXIX.

REFLEXIVE VERBS.

1. A REFLEXIVE verb, or verb used reflexively, describes the subject as acting upon itself.

a. Reflexive verbs are a much more marked and important class in French than in English. Some verbs are reflexive exclusively, or nearly so; others are often such; and almost any transitive verb, and some intransitives, may upon occasion be used reflexively; but the conjugation of them all is the same.

2. A verb is made reflexive, as in English, by adding to it an object-pronoun corresponding in person and number to the subject.

a. The reflexive pronouns of the first and second persons are the same with the ordinary object-pronouns: namely, **me** and **te** (or **toi**) in the singular, **nous** and **vous** in the plural. For the third person there is a special reflexive pronoun, **se**; it is the same in singular and plural.

b. The place of the reflexive pronoun is the same with that of any other object-pronoun (XXII. 7): namely, in general before the verb, but after it in the imperative affirmative (when **te** becomes **toi**: XXII. 6*b*).

3. The auxiliary of a verb used reflexively is always and only **être**.

4. In accordance with the general rule (X. 5*b*), if the reflexive object is a direct one, the participle in the compound tenses agrees with it in gender and number; if it is indirect, the participle is invariable.

Thus, from **se blesser** *wound one's self*,

il s'est blessé, elle s'est blessée, nous nous sommes blessés,

but from **s'imaginer** *imagine to one's self*,

il s'est imaginé, elle s'est imaginé, nous nous sommes imaginé

5. As a model of reflexive conjugation may be taken the verb *se réjouir* *delight one's self, rejoice*.

It is a regular verb of the second conjugation, inflected like *finir* (XIX.).

a. The full inflection of the present indicative and imperative, with the synopsis of the other simple tenses, is:

INFINITIVE.

se (or *te, me* etc.) *réjouir, rejoice*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

se (etc.) *réjouissant, rejoicing*

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

je me réjouis, I rejoice

nous nous réjouissons, we rejoice

tu te réjouis, thou rejoicest

vous vous réjouissez, you rejoice

il se réjouit, he rejoices

ils se réjouissent, they rejoice

IMPERFECT, *je me réjouissais, I was rejoicing*

PRETERIT, *je me réjouis, I rejoiced*

FUTURE, *je me réjouirai, I shall rejoice*

CONDITIONAL, *je me réjouirais, I should rejoice*

IMPERATIVE.

réjouis-toi, rejoice (thou)

réjouissons-nous, let us rejoice

réjouissez-vous, rejoice (ye)

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT, *que je me réjouisse, that I may rejoice*

IMPERFECT, *que je me réjouisse, that I might rejoice*

b. The full inflection of the perfect indicative, with the synopsis of the other compound forms, next follows.

To save burdensome repetition, the various forms of the reflexive pronoun (in infin. and pple), and of the past participle (which in this verb must agree in gender and number with the object) are not given.

PERFECT INFINITIVE.

s'être réjoui, (to) have rejoiced

PERFECT PARTICIPLE.

s'étant réjoui, having rejoiced

INDICATIVE.

PERFECT.

je me suis réjoui I have rejoiced

nous nous sommes réjouis, we have rejoiced

tu t'es réjoui, thou hast rejoiced

vous vous êtes réjouis, you have rejoiced

il s'est réjoui, he has rejoiced

ils se sont réjouis, they have rejoiced

| | |
|----------------------|---|
| PLUPERFECT, | je m'étais réjoui, <i>I had rejoiced</i> |
| PAST ANTERIOR, | je me fus réjoui, <i>I had rejoiced</i> |
| FUTURE PERFECT, | je me serai réjoui, <i>I shall have rejoiced</i> |
| CONDITIONAL PERFECT, | je me serais réjoui, <i>I should have rejoiced</i> |
| SUBJUNCTIVE PERFECT, | que je me sois réjoui, <i>that I may have rejoiced</i> |
| PLUPERFECT, | que je me fusse réjoui, <i>that I might have rejoiced</i> |

c. Note the form (VII. 1b) **vous vous êtes réjoui** *you have rejoiced (yourself)*, when referring to a single individual.

6. The negative and interrogative forms are made in the same manner as those of any other verb taking object-pronouns. Examples are :

| |
|---|
| je ne me réjouis pas, <i>I do not rejoice</i> |
| ne se réjouit-il pas, <i>did he not rejoice?</i> |
| vous réjouissez-vous, <i>do you rejoice?</i> |
| ne nous réjouissons pas, <i>let us not rejoice</i> |
| vous ne vous serez pas réjouis, <i>you (pl.) will not have rejoiced</i> |
| qu'elle ne se fût pas réjouie, <i>that she might not have rejoiced</i> |
| ne se sont-elles pas réjouies, <i>have they (f.) not rejoiced?</i> |

7. a. Many reflexive verbs (like **se réjouir** itself) have to be rendered with simple verbs in English. A few of the commonest of these are as follows :

| | |
|-----------------------------------|---|
| s'arrêter, <i>stop</i> | se lever, <i>arise, get up</i> |
| s'asseoir, <i>sit down</i> | se plaindre, <i>lament</i> |
| se coucher, <i>go to bed</i> | se porter, <i>be (in respect to health)</i> |
| se dépêcher, <i>make haste</i> | se promener, <i>take a walk</i> |
| se hâter, <i>hasten</i> | se retirer, <i>retire</i> |
| s'écrier, <i>exclaim, cry out</i> | se souvenir, <i>remember</i> |
| s'ennuyer, <i>be bored</i> | se taire, <i>be silent</i> |
| se fâcher, <i>be angry</i> | se tromper, <i>be mistaken</i> |

b. A number of reflexive verbs followed by certain prepositions form transitive expressions of special meaning. Those most frequently occurring are :

| | |
|--|---|
| s'approcher de, <i>approach, go near</i> | se fier à, <i>trust</i> |
| s'attendre à, <i>await</i> | se mettre à, <i>begin (set one's self at)</i> |
| se défier de, <i>distrust</i> | se moquer de, <i>ridicule, mock</i> |
| se douter de, <i>suspect</i> | se passer de, <i>do or go without</i> |
| s'entendre à, <i>be a judge of</i> | se servir de, <i>use, make use of</i> |

Thus, **il s'approcha du feu** *he approached the fire*, **ils se mirent à écrire** *they began to write*, **elle ne peut se servir de ses mains** *she cannot use her hands*.

c. Of the intransitives used reflexively, the most noteworthy is *s'en aller* *go away, clear out, be off with one's self* (literally, *go one's self from it*). The indirect pronoun-object *en* always follows the other pronoun. Thus: *je m'en vais I go off, il s'en est allé he has gone away, va-t'en be off! ne nous en allons pas let us not go away, qu'il ne s'en fût pas allé that he might not have gone away, etc.*

8. Plural reflexive forms are often used in a reciprocal sense: thus, *aimons-nous let us love one another, ils s'aiment they love each other, and so on.*

VOCABULARY.

The vocabulary of this Lesson consists of the examples of reflexive verbs given above in the Lesson (except, of course, irregular verbs not yet explained).

EXERCISE 29.

¹ À quelle heure vous êtes-vous couché hier? ² Je me suis couché à dix heures, et je me suis levé à six heures. ³ Pourquoi n'êtes vous pas allé à Paris la semaine dernière? ⁴ Je ne me portais pas bien, et je me suis arrêté à Rouen. ⁵ Ces jeunes filles où se promenaient-elles? ⁶ Elles se sont promenées dans la ville. ⁷ Pourquoi s'en allèrent-ils? ⁸ Ils se fâchèrent, et ils ne voulurent plus rester. ⁹ Ne vous réjouissez-vous pas? ¹⁰ Non, nous nous sommes beaucoup ennuyés. ¹¹ Nous irons chercher quelque chose de nouveau. ¹² Approche-toi, mon enfant, ne te défie pas de moi. ¹³ Cet enfant se doute de tout, et ne se fie plus à personne. ¹⁴ Elle se serait beaucoup réjouie si vous vous étiez approché d'elle. ¹⁵ Nous ne nous serions jamais arrêtés à Paris, si nous nous étions doutés de cela. ¹⁶ Pourquoi ces jeunes gens se hâtent-ils tant? ¹⁷ Ils s'en vont chez eux; ils veulent se coucher. ¹⁸ Vous vous porteriez mieux si vous vous passiez de votre dîner. ¹⁹ Arrêtez-vous; je veux vous parler. ²⁰ Je ne peux m'arrêter à présent; je me hâte de me coucher. ²¹ Ne vous fiez pas au roi; il se moque de vous. ²² Nous ne pouvons nous passer de lui.

THEME 29.

¹ Let us rejoice; I rejoice and you rejoice; that they might rejoice; thou didst rejoice; she will rejoice. ² Have

you rejoiced? had she not rejoiced? I should have rejoiced if you had rejoiced; though they rejoiced, we did not rejoice. ³ Go to bed; has he not gone to bed? we should not have gone to bed; you would go to bed; that they may have gone to bed. ⁴ Get up; I have got up; she would have got up; will you not get up? he had not yet got up; I have gone to bed, but I will get up; let us not go to bed, though he has got up. ⁵ Have your children gone to bed? mine are getting up. ⁶ Make haste, children; get up, we are going to take a walk. ⁷ Helen will not go to walk, because she is not well. ⁸ I shall be bored, if I cannot take a walk. ⁹ Let us not take a walk; it is two o'clock, and we shall dine soon. ¹⁰ The dog did not approach the children; he did not trust them. ¹¹ I cannot do without the book that I have lost. ¹² Take a walk with the dog, and I will look for your book. ¹³ We are going away, because we distrust these men. ¹⁴ He who distrusts everybody will never be happy. ¹⁵ Why did not the little boy come with you? ¹⁶ He stopped at the baker's. ¹⁷ He is not well; he ought not to go near the baker. ¹⁸ If he does not go without cakes, he will be ill. ¹⁹ Go away; we can do without you. ²⁰ The king cannot return to France, because the citizens distrust him. ²¹ Do not be angry; we will retire. ²² If you trust this man, you will be mistaken.

LESSON XXX.

IMPERSONAL VERBS.

1. A few verbs in French, as in other languages, are used only in the 3d singular, with the indefinite or impersonal subject *il* *it*, and are therefore called **IMPERSONAL** verbs. Those oftenest so used are :

geler, *freeze* (il gèle *it freezes*, il a gelé, etc.)
 dégeler, *thaw* (il dégèle, il a dégelé, etc.)
 grêler, *hail* (il grêle, il a grêlé, etc.)
 neiger, *snow* (il neige, il a neigé, etc.)
 pleuvoir, *rain* (il pleut, il a plu, etc.)
 tonner, *thunder* (il tonne, il a tonné, etc.)

a. These verbs are conjugated like any others (always with the auxiliary **avoir**), except that only the 3d sing. is in use. **Pleuvoir** is irregular : see XLI. 6.

2. Many other verbs are used in great part impersonally, with *il* as subject, and often in a somewhat special meaning. Examples are :

il importe (etc.), *it is of consequence* (etc.)
 il convient, *it is suitable or proper*
 il semble, *it seems*
 il arrive, *it happens*
 il suffit, *it is sufficient*
 il vaut mieux, *it is better*
 il s'agit, *the question is*

3. Almost any verb may take the impersonal subject *il* representing by anticipation its real subject, stated later : thus, **il vient un autre** *there comes another*, **il paraît qu'elle n'y était pas** *it appears that she was not there*.

4. The English expression *there is, there are, etc.*, is represented in French by the verb **avoir**, used impersonally with the adverb *y* *there* before it : thus,

il y a, *there is or are* (literally, *it has there*)
 il n'y a pas, *there is not*
 y a-t il eu, *has there been ?*
 il n'y aura pas, *there will not be*
 n'y aurait-il pas eu, *would there not have been ?*
 qu'il n'y ait pas, *that there may not be*
 qu'il y eût eu, *that there might have been*

a. Since the following noun is in French grammatically the object of the verb, and not its subject as in English, there is of course no change of number in the verb when the noun becomes plural : thus, **il y avait un oiseau** *there was a bird*, and **il y avait quatre oiseaux** *there were four birds* (literally, *it had there one bird, four birds*).

b. Even the infinitive, **y avoir**, is used, along with certain verbs

having the value of auxiliaries: thus, **il peut y avoir** *there may be*, **il ne doit pas y avoir eu** *there ought not to have been*.

c. **Il y a** etc. is often used, elliptically, in expressing extent or distance of time reckoned backward from the present: thus, **il y a huit jours qu'il est malade** *he has been ill (these) eight days* (literally, *there are eight days that he [has been and] is ill*), **je le vis il y a deux mois** *I saw him two months ago* (literally, *I saw him, there are two months [since]*).

d. **Il est** etc. is also used impersonally, especially in poetry, instead of **il y a** etc.

5. In speaking of the conditions of the weather, the French uses **il fait** etc., *it makes* etc., with a noun or adjective, where the English uses *it is*: see XXXII. 9a.

6. To express English *must*, the French uses the impersonal verb **falloir** *be necessary*.

a. **Falloir** is an irregular verb; its synopsis of principal and derived parts (the tenses in 3d sing.) is as follows:

| | | | | |
|-----------------|----------------|----------------|-------------|---------------|
| falloir | (fallant) | fallu | faut | fallut |
| faudra | fallait | a fallu | | fallût |
| faudrait | faillie | etc. etc. | | |

7. Since **falloir** is impersonal only, while the equivalent English expressions, *must, have to, be obliged to*, etc., admit subjects of all persons and numbers, the sentence has to be cast into a quite different form in French.

a. **Il faut** etc. is oftenest followed by **que** *that* before the verb which in English takes *must* as its auxiliary. This verb **must** in French always be in the subjunctive: present if the tense of **falloir** is present or future, otherwise imperfect. Thus:

he must work, **il faut qu'il travaille** (literally, *it is necessary that he work*)

you must read, **il faut que vous lisiez**

the boy had to go, **il fallait que le garçon allât**

the army will be obliged to retreat, **il faudra que l'armée se retire**

the books would have had to be sold, **il aurait fallu que les livres fussent vendus**

b. But if the subject be a pronoun, a briefer expression is more often used, the subject being made indirect object of the tense of *falloir*, which is then followed by the infinitive of the other verb: thus,

he must work, il lui faut travailler (literally, *it is necessary to him to work*)

you must read, il vous faut lire

she had to go, il lui fallait aller

they will be obliged to withdraw, il leur faudra se retirer

8. *Il faut* etc. is also used with a following subject-noun to express that something is lacking or desired: thus, **il me faut un chapeau** *I want a hat* (literally, *there is wanting to me a hat*), **vous fallait-il des livres** *did you want some books?*

VOCABULARY.

The vocabulary for this Lesson is the impersonal verbs given above in the Lesson (except those that are irregular).

EXERCISE 30.

¹ Est-ce que vous êtes allé à la ville? ² Non, monsieur; il a neigé toute la journée, et il me fallait rester à la maison.
³ Nous devons aller à Paris; mais il gèle, et nous resterons chez nous. ⁴ S'il dégèle, nous irons demain. ⁵ Y a-t-il de jolies villes en Angleterre? ⁶ Il y en a de très jolies; mais la plupart des villes ne sont point jolies. ⁷ Nous y avons été, il y a deux ans. ⁸ N'y a-t-il pas eu un bal chez madame votre mère? ⁹ Non, il n'y avait pas de bal, mais il y avait plusieurs de nos amis qui dinaient chez nous.
¹⁰ Il arrive très souvent que nous avons des amis chez nous.
¹¹ Il me faut aller à l'école, et il faut que mon cousin y aille avec moi. ¹² Est-ce qu'il y aura un beau concert au théâtre?
¹³ Il me faudra entendre ce qu'il y a. ¹⁴ Vous faut-il quelque chose? ¹⁵ Il me faut quelques livres que je ne puis trouver à la bibliothèque. ¹⁶ Il m'a fallu les chercher chez mon oncle. ¹⁷ Il fallait que les pauvres paysans vendissent toutes leurs brebis. ¹⁸ Leur faudra-t-il vendre leurs vaches aussi?
¹⁹ Quoiqu'il leur ait fallu vendre leurs brebis, ils ont encore beaucoup de vaches et de chevaux. ²⁰ Que vous faut-il?
²¹ Il nous faut de l'argent, nous en avons trop peu.

THEME 30.

¹ It snows and hails, and I shall not go to the school.
² If it freezes, do not go there to-morrow. ³ I shall have to go there to-morrow, if it does not thunder. ⁴ It thawed yesterday, and it will not freeze to-morrow. ⁵ There was no concert yesterday, because it was snowing. ⁶ Will there not be a ball in the town to-morrow? ⁷ There would have been a ball, if it had not snowed. ⁸ What does he need? ⁹ He needs some new pictures for his room. ¹⁰ She must buy a new dress and a hat. ¹¹ This man must buy another horse; the one which he has is very old. ¹² It seems to me that you are never at home. ¹³ It happens often that I am in the city. ¹⁴ I dined with your aunt three days ago. ¹⁵ I should have been there, if it had not snowed. ¹⁶ Are there not fine things in this book? ¹⁷ I must buy it. ¹⁸ It seems to me that everybody is talking of it. ¹⁹ I had to go to England to (*pour*) buy English books for the library. ²⁰ Are there not many fine castles in England? ²¹ There may be some, but I have not found them. ²² Although it had snowed all day, I should have had to go to the city. ²³ My sister was expecting me, and I had to speak to her. ²⁴ If you go, you will be bored. ²⁵ I must go, and my sister must return with me.

 LESSON XXXI.

ADVERBS FROM ADJECTIVES.

1. Most adjectives, in French as in English, have adverbs made from them by adding an adverbial suffix.

The adverb-making suffix in French is *ment*, and it is in general added to the feminine form of the adjective—yet with not a few exceptions.

a. The suffix **ment** comes from Latin **mente**, ablative of **mens** *mind*, a feminine noun, and hence taking before it a feminine adjective: thus, **vivement** = **viva mente** with *lively mind*, etc.

3. Most adjectives ending in a consonant in the masculine add **ment** to their feminine form: thus,

| | |
|-------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 'haut, <i>high</i> | 'hautement, <i>highly</i> |
| grand, <i>great</i> | grandement, <i>greatly</i> |
| plein, <i>full</i> | pleinement, <i>fully</i> |
| certain, <i>certain</i> | certainement, <i>certainly</i> |
| seul, <i>sole</i> | seulement, <i>only, solely</i> |
| cruel, <i>cruel</i> | cruellement, <i>cruelly</i> |
| ancien, <i>ancient</i> | anciennement, <i>anciently</i> |
| vif, <i>lively</i> | vivement, <i>in a lively manner</i> |
| heureux, <i>happy</i> | heureusement, <i>happily</i> |
| cher, <i>dear</i> | chèrement, <i>dearly</i> |
| franc, <i>frank</i> | franchement, <i>frankly</i> |
| long, <i>long</i> | longuement, <i>lengthily</i> |
| doux, <i>sweet</i> | doucement, <i>sweetly, softly</i> |

Exceptions to this rule are the following:

4. a. Adjectives ending in **ant** and **ent** for the most part change their **nt** into **m**, and add **ment** directly to it; thus,

| | |
|---------------------------|-------------------------------|
| constant, <i>constant</i> | constamment <i>constantly</i> |
| prudent, <i>prudent</i> | *prudemment, <i>prudently</i> |

But **lentement** *slowly*, **présentement** *presently*, **véhémentement** *vehemently*, by the general rule.

b. A few adjectives change **e** of the feminine to **é** before **ment**: thus, **communément**, **confusément**, **diffusément**, **expressément**, **importunément**, **obscurément**, **profondément**, **précisément**.

c. **Gentil** forms **gentiment** *nicely*.

5. Most adjectives ending in a vowel add **ment** to their masculine form: thus,

| | |
|-------------------------|-------------------------------|
| facile, <i>easy</i> | facilement, <i>easily</i> |
| joli, <i>pretty</i> | joliment, <i>prettily</i> |
| absolu, <i>absolute</i> | absolument, <i>absolutely</i> |
| modéré, <i>moderate</i> | modérément, <i>moderately</i> |
| vrai, <i>true</i> | vraiment, <i>truly</i> |

6. Exceptions to this rule are as follows:

a. **Beau**, **nouveau**, **fou**, and **mou** add **ment** to their feminine form (VII. 7): thus, **nouvellement**, **follement**, etc.

b. A few adjectives change their final *e* to *é* before *ment*: thus, *aveuglément, commodément, conformément, énormément, immensément* (and one or two others, little used).

c. A few adjectives change final *u* to *û* before *ment*: thus, *assidûment, continûment, crûment, nûment*; and *gai gay* makes either *gaiement* or *gaîment*.

d. *Impuni* forms *impunément* with *impunity*.

7. Adverbs derived from adjectives (and a few others, as *souvent* *often*) have a comparative and superlative, made by prefixing *plus* and *le plus* respectively (as in the comparison of adjectives: IX. 1): thus,

facilement, plus facilement, le plus facilement, easily, more easily, etc.
souvent, plus souvent, le plus souvent, often, oftener, oftenest

8. Four original adverbs have special comparative forms, which are made superlative by prefixing *le*: thus,

bien, mieux, le mieux, well, better, best
mal, pis, le pis, badly or ill, worse, worst
peu, moins, le moins, little, less, least
beaucoup, plus, le plus, much, more, most

9. Many adjectives are, either commonly or in certain phrases, used directly as adverbs, without any change of form. Some of the commonest of them are:

| | |
|---------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>bas, in a low tone</i> | <i>fort, very</i> |
| <i>'haut, loud, aloud</i> | <i>juste, correctly</i> |
| <i>clair, clearly</i> | <i>tout, quite</i> |
| <i>droit, straight</i> | <i>soudain, suddenly</i> |
| <i>exprès, expressly</i> | <i>vite, quickly, fast</i> |

a. Most of these form also adverbs in *ment* for certain uses.

VERB-LESSON.

10. The very irregular verb *venir* *come* is also one of the commonest in the language, and has many idiomatic uses.

a. Its synopsis of principal and derived forms is (it takes the auxiliary *être*: XXVIII. 6a):

| | | | | |
|------------------|---------------|------------------|--------------|---------------|
| <i>venir</i> | <i>venant</i> | <i>venu</i> | <i>viens</i> | <i>vins</i> |
| <i>viendrai</i> | <i>venais</i> | <i>être venu</i> | <i>viens</i> | <i>vinsse</i> |
| <i>viendrais</i> | <i>vienne</i> | <i>etc. etc.</i> | | |

b. The inflection of the present tenses is:

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | PRES. SUBJ. | | |
|--------------|----------|-------|-------------|---------|----------|
| viens | venons | | viens | venions | |
| viens | venez | viens | venez | viennes | veniez |
| vient | viennent | | | viennes | viennent |

c. Note the change of **e** to **ie** in all the accented or strong forms (in this verb, also in future and conditional).

d. The preterit is regularly inflected: thus, **vins, vins, vint, vînmes, vîntes, vinrent**. It (with the pret. of **tenir**) is the only preterit in the language having a nasal vowel.

e. The common verb **tenir hold** is conjugated throughout precisely like **venir** (except that it takes **avoir** as auxiliary).

f. **Venir** and **tenir** are Lat. **venire** and **tenere**.

11. a. **Venir** is followed by an infinitive directly (without **à** or **de**), when it means come in order to do anything: thus **il est venu me voir** *he came to see me*, **venez dîner chez nous** *come and dine with us*.

b. The present and imperfect indicative of **venir** followed by **de** are used before an infinitive to signify time just past: thus, **je viens de le voir** *I have just seen him*, **il venait de dîner** *he had just dined*.

Such phrases mean literally *I am coming from, he was coming from* etc., and are the exact opposite of *I am going to* (e.g. **je vais le voir** *I am going to see him*), *he was going to* (**il allait dîner** *he was going to dine*), etc.

VOCABULARY.

(Besides the adverbs given above in the Lesson.)

| | |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| amuser, <i>amuse</i> | se fatiguer, <i>be tired</i> |
| marcher, <i>walk</i> | pleurer, <i>weep, weep for</i> |
| chanter, <i>sing</i> | la musique, <i>music</i> |
| extrêmement, <i>extremely</i> | parfaitement, <i>perfectly</i> |
| dernièrement, <i>lately, recently</i> | continuellement, <i>continually</i> |

EXERCISE 31.

¹ Qu'est-ce que vous aimez le mieux, mon enfant? ² J'aime mon père mieux que tout le monde. ³ Mon oncle a vieilli très vite; malheureusement il a perdu sa fille. ⁴ Est-ce que vous allez plus souvent au théâtre qu'au concert? ⁵ J'y vais constamment, mais je ne m'y amuse que modérément. ⁶ Moi, je m'y amuse toujours extrêmement. ⁷ Cette jeune femme a-t-elle perdu son mari dernièrement? ⁸ Oui;

quoiqu'il fût absolument mauvais, et qu'il la battît cruellement, elle l'a aimé aveuglément, et elle le pleure continuellement. ⁹ De quoi cet homme vous a-t-il parlé si longuement? ¹⁰ Il a parlé trop bas, et je n'ai absolument rien entendu. ¹¹ Cette jeune fille chante parfaitement; elle a une voix vraiment belle. ¹² Elle ne chante pas toujours juste. ¹³ Vous marchez trop vite, monsieur; vous vous fatiguerez certainement. ¹⁴ Non, madame; je marche constamment, et je ne me fatigue pas facilement. ¹⁵ Marcher, c'est ce que j'aime le plus. ¹⁶ Malheureusement, je ne dois marcher que très rarement. ¹⁷ Pourquoi parlez-vous si haut? ¹⁸ Je parlerai plus doucement, si vous le voulez.

THEME 31.

¹ Do you love music, sir? ² I love it extremely, but unfortunately I cannot sing. ³ Frankly, I do not love music, but it amuses me greatly at the theatre. ⁴ You go there often, but I go there oftenest. ⁵ Can I find easily the house of your uncle? ⁶ You will find it more easily if you walk straight to the village. ⁷ If you walk too fast, you will certainly tire yourself. ⁸ Walk slowly, we shall easily arrive in an hour. ⁹ We ought to take a walk constantly. ¹⁰ If you love blindly, you will be extremely unhappy. ¹¹ They love her dearly, but she absolutely does not love them. ¹² If you wish to be well, you must eat moderately. ¹³ Speak softly, but do not speak too low, or I shall not understand you perfectly. ¹⁴ Why does this woman weep so cruelly? ¹⁵ She is extremely unhappy, because she has lately lost a child that she loved dearly. ¹⁶ I trusted my friend fully, but unfortunately I was mistaken in him. ¹⁷ No one is constantly happy.

VERB-LESSON.

¹ Venez-vous chez nous? ² Pourquoi ne vient-il pas?
³ Ils ne sont pas encore venus. ⁴ Vint-il hier? ⁵ Non, il ne

viendra que demain. ⁶ Quoiqu'il vienne, elles ne viendront pas. ⁷ Je suis venu vous trouver. ⁸ Il vient de trouver les livres que vous aviez perdus. ⁹ Viens ici, je veux te parler. ¹⁰ Je viendrai à quatre heures. ¹¹ Il serait venu, si vous l'aviez appelé. ¹² Nous venions d'arriver, et il nous fallait nous en aller encore. ¹³ Venez dîner chez moi. ¹⁴ Elles sont venues il y a trois heures.

¹⁵ Will she come? they would not come; he came; you were coming; they come; come! that I may come; that you may not come. ¹⁶ Has he not come? they would have come; will she not have come? though he had not come; you had come; will they have come? ¹⁷ I have come to speak to you. ¹⁸ Will you come to dine with us? ¹⁹ I have just dined with my friend. ²⁰ He had just dined, when we invited him. ²¹ They are going to come to-morrow. ²² She had just gone to Paris, but she is going to return to-morrow.

LESSON XXXII.

VARIOUS ADVERBS.

1. Of adverbs and adverb-phrases there are in French, of course, a great many, which it belongs to the dictionary to give. Only a few of those most used will be presented here; some of them have been already given, and used in the Exercises.

2. Some of the commonest adverbs of place are:

| | |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| ici, <i>here</i> | là, <i>there</i> |
| où <i>where? where</i> | jusque, <i>as far as</i> |
| près, auprès, <i>near</i> | loin, <i>far</i> |
| ailleurs, <i>elsewhere</i> | partout, <i>everywhere</i> |
| alentour, <i>roundabout</i> | ensemble, <i>together</i> |
| *dessus, <i>above</i> | *dessous, <i>beneath</i> |
| dedans, <i>within, inside</i> | dehors, <i>outside, without</i> |

a. The conjunctive adverbs **y** and **en** were explained at XXIII. 5-8; the relative adverbs **dont** and **où**, at XXVI. 7.

b. Some of these adverbs (as well as others) make phrases with prepositions: thus, **d'ici** *hence*, **par là** *that way*, **d'où**, *whence?* **par où** *by what road?* **jusqu'où** *how far?* etc.

3. Some of the commonest adverbs of time are:

| | |
|--|--------------------------------------|
| maintenant , <i>now</i> | alors , <i>then</i> |
| quand , <i>when? when</i> | longtemps , <i>long</i> |
| souvent , <i>often</i> | toujours , <i>always</i> |
| quelquefois , <i>sometimes</i> | autrefois , <i>formerly</i> |
| tôt, bientôt , <i>soon</i> | tard , <i>late</i> |
| encore , <i>yet, still, again</i> | déjà , <i>already</i> |
| aujourd'hui , <i>to-day</i> | désormais , <i>henceforth</i> |
| demain , <i>to-morrow</i> | *hier , <i>yesterday</i> |

4. Some of the commonest adverbs of degree, comparison, etc., are:

| | |
|---------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| ainsi , <i>thus</i> | aussi , <i>as</i> |
| comment , <i>how? how</i> | si , <i>so</i> |
| très, bien, fort , <i>very</i> | surtout , <i>especially</i> |
| plutôt , <i>sooner, rather</i> | d'avantage , <i>still more</i> |
| presque , <i>almost</i> | même , <i>even</i> |

a. The most often used adverbs of quantity—as **beaucoup**, **plus**, **peu**, **moins**, **assez**, **trop**, **tant**, **autant**, **combien**—were given, and their uses with nouns explained, at V. 4.

5. Of the very numerous compound adverbs and adverb-phrases, a few of the commonest are:

| | |
|--|--|
| à présent , <i>at present, now</i> | sur le champ , <i>directly, at once</i> |
| tout de suite , <i>immediately</i> | tout à coup , <i>suddenly</i> |
| tout à fait , <i>entirely</i> | du tout , <i>at all</i> |
| à peu près , <i>nearly, almost</i> | à peine , <i>hardly, scarcely</i> |
| quelque part , <i>somewhere</i> | nulle part , <i>nowhere</i> |
| en haut , <i>aloft, up-stairs</i> | en bas , <i>below, down-stairs</i> |
| là-bas , <i>yonder</i> | en attendant , <i>meanwhile</i> |
| peut-être , <i>may be, perhaps</i> | en effet , <i>in fact, really</i> |
| de bonne heure , <i>in good time, early</i> | à bon marché , <i>cheaply, cheap</i> |

6. a. The interrogative adverbs—**où**, **quand**, **combien**, **comment**—are, like the interrogative pronouns, also used as relative, in which case their value is rather that of conjunctions.

b. The negative adverbs, and rules for their use, have already been given: see XII.

c. The responsives, **oui** *yes* and **non** *no*, are already familiar. Instead of **oui**, **si** is sometimes used (especially colloquially), in

reply to a negative question : thus, **vous n'y avez pas été?** *si you have not been there? yes, I have.*

7. Adverbs have considerable freedom of position in the sentence. General rules are :

a. An adverb is almost never allowed before the verb in French : thus, *she always cries* **elle pleure toujours**, *I often take a walk* **je me promène souvent**.

b. With a verb in a compound tense, the adverbs of most frequent use ordinarily come between the auxiliary and the participle : thus, *she has always cried*, **elle a toujours pleuré**, *I had often taken a walk*, **je m'étais souvent promené**. But such may for special reasons come after the participle, as do adverbial phrases ; and the words for *to-day, yesterday, to-morrow, etc.*, always follow the participle.

VERB-LESSON.

8. *a.* Of the very common irregular verb **faire** *make, do*, the synopsis of principal and derived forms is as follows :

| | | | | |
|--------|---------|------------|------|-------|
| faire | faisant | fait | fais | fis |
| ferai | faisais | avoir fait | fais | fisse |
| ferais | fasse | etc. etc. | | |

b. The inflection of the present indicative and the imperative (the pres. subjunctive being regular) is :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|--------------|---------|-------|---------|
| fais | faisons | | faisons |
| fais | faites | fais | faites |
| fait | font | | |

c. Note that in this verb (39c) **fai** before **s** of another syllable is pronounced as **fe**.

d. Note the special irregularities of the plural : the 2d pers. ending in **tes** (found elsewhere only in **êtes** and **dites**), and the 3d in **ont** (elsewhere only in **ont, sont, vont**).

9. **Faire** has many special uses and idioms ; among them may be noticed here :

a. It is used impersonally in describing the conditions of the weather.

Thus, **il fait froid** *it is cold*, **il faisait chaud** *it was warm*, **il fera beau temps** *it will be fine weather* ; even **il fait du vent** *it is windy*, **il a fait des éclairs** *it has lightened* ; and so on.

b. **Faire** is much used in the sense of *cause to* etc. with a following infinitive, or as an auxiliary forming a kind of causative verb-phrase.

Thus, **je le fais savoir** *I cause to know it* (i.e. *make it known*), **il les a fait venir** *he has made them come*, **vous ferez faire un habit** *you will have a coat made* (literally, *will cause to make a coat*).

If the following infinitive has a direct object, the object of **faire** itself must be made indirect (see Second Part, § 158*b*): thus, **je le fais écrire** *I make him write*, but **je lui fais écrire une lettre** *I make him write a letter*.

c. **Faire** is sometimes (but much less often than *do* in English) used to avoid the repetition of a preceding verb: thus, **je lui ai écrit, comme je devais le faire** *I wrote him, as I ought to do*.

VOCABULARY.

(No new words will be given, besides the adverbs listed above.)

EXERCISE 32.

¹ D'où venez-vous, et où allez-vous? ² J'ai été à peu près partout. ³ Je viens d'arriver, et je vais aller sur le champ à Paris, où j'achèterai des robes à bon marché. ⁴ Alors vous viendrez dîner aujourd'hui chez moi, et je vous mènerai plus tard au théâtre. ⁵ Nous sommes tout à fait fatigués à présent; nous pouvons à peine marcher. ⁶ Ne voulez-vous pas venir tout de suite déjeuner avec nous? ⁷ J'ai déjà déjeuné; je viendrai demain. ⁸ J'ai perdu mes gants quelque part; il me faut les chercher; mais j'irai bientôt, et j'arriverai de bonne heure. ⁹ Je les ai cherchés partout, mais je ne les trouve nulle part. ¹⁰ Je les ai eus en haut. ¹¹ Voici votre ami; menez-le en bas, et allez vous promener. ¹² Jusqu'où nous faut-il aller, et par où? ¹³ Allez jusqu'à la ville, par le chemin de Paris. ¹⁴ La petite fille est dedans; je veux qu'elle vienne dehors. ¹⁵ Il est déjà tard; elle viendra bientôt. ¹⁶ La France était autrefois un royaume; maintenant c'est une république. ¹⁷ Elle ne l'a pas été longtemps. ¹⁸ Où est ton frère? ¹⁹ Il n'est pas ici; il est peut-être là-bas. ²⁰ D'où vient la

lettre que vous avez dans la main ? ²¹ Elle vient de mon oncle d'Amérique.

THEME 32.

¹ Where is your brother ? ² I do not find him here ; he must be elsewhere. ³ Look for him everywhere ; you will certainly find him somewhere. ⁴ He has already arrived, but the others have not yet come. ⁵ He must go immediately to the city. ⁶ He is going to-morrow to England ; he will stay there almost two years. ⁷ I was there formerly, and I should like (*vouloir*) to be there still. ⁸ I have never gone so far ; I have always stayed at home ; but you, you have been everywhere. ⁹ I shall come henceforth often to your house. ¹⁰ When will the merchant arrive from Paris ? ¹¹ He has already arrived ; he is within. ¹² He cannot have been here long. ¹³ I looked for her, but she was far from here. ¹⁴ How far had she gone ? ¹⁵ She had gone as far as to Paris ; but she will return soon. ¹⁶ Do you like the country as much as the city ? ¹⁷ I have always liked the city better ; I do not like the country at all. ¹⁸ I go there often, but I do not stay there long. ¹⁹ Whence do you come now, and where have you been to-day and yesterday ? ²⁰ Formerly I often went to my uncle's, but I no longer go there ; he lives too far. ²¹ I have been sometimes at his house.

VERB-LESSON.

¹ Que faites-vous là ? ² Je ne fais rien. ³ Qu'est-ce qu'ils vont faire ? ⁴ Ils viennent de faire de jolis cadeaux. ⁵ Ferez-vous chercher vos gants ? ⁶ Je les ai fait chercher partout. ⁷ Que ferez-vous demain ? ⁸ Je ferais venir la servante, si elle était à la maison. ⁹ Si vous ne l'avez déjà fait, il faut que vous le fassiez tout de suite. ¹⁰ Il fait beau temps aujourd'hui, mais il fera très chaud demain. ¹¹ Quoi-qu'il fût froid hier, j'en étais content.

¹² They make ; will he not make ? let us make ; that you

may make ; she would not make ; I shall do what you do ; do what you wish to do. ¹³ Thou hadst not done ; they would have done nothing ; I should have done it if he had done it. ¹⁴ Is it cold ? it will be warm ; it would be fine weather if it was not too cold. ¹⁵ I have made him come ; he will make me come. ¹⁶ The cook has made bad bread to-day ; she must make better to-morrow. ¹⁷ I have just made bread, and I am going to make butter.

LESSON XXXIII.

PREPOSITIONS.

1. The prepositions most used in French were given in early lessons (III., VI.). Other simple prepositions are as follows :

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>contre</i> , <i>against</i> | <i>moyennant</i> , <i>by means of</i> |
| <i>depuis</i> , <i>since</i> | <i>outré</i> , <i>besides, beyond</i> |
| <i>dès</i> , <i>from, since</i> | <i>parmi</i> , <i>among</i> |
| <i>durant</i> , <i>during</i> | <i>pendant</i> , <i>during, pending</i> |
| <i>hors</i> , <i>hormis</i> , <i>out of, except</i> | <i>près</i> , <i>near, next</i> |
| <i>malgré</i> , <i>in spite of</i> | <i>selon</i> , <i>according to</i> |

2. Some prepositions are also used along with a preceding preposition or adverb, forming a prepositional phrase : thus,

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>à travers</i> , <i>across, through</i> | <i>par-dessus</i> , <i>over, beyond</i> |
| <i>jusqu'à</i> , <i>as far as</i> | <i>quant à</i> , <i>as for, as regards</i> |
| <i>d'après</i> , <i>according to</i> | <i>d'entre</i> , <i>from among</i> |
| <i>d'avec</i> , <i>from with, from</i> | <i>de par</i> , <i>by authority of</i> |

3. Many prepositional phrases are made of adverbs or adverbial phrases followed by *de of* ; some of the commonest are :

| | |
|---|----------------------------------|
| autour de, <i>around, about</i> | lors de, <i>at the time of</i> |
| faute de, <i>for lack of</i> | le long de, <i>along</i> |
| hors de, <i>out of</i> | près de, <i>near</i> |
| loin de, <i>far from</i> | vis-à-vis de, <i>opposite to</i> |
| au-devant de, <i>in front of, to meet</i> | au-delà de, <i>beyond</i> |

4. A few prepositions are followed by the infinitive directly; they are:

| | |
|---------------------|------------------------------|
| de, <i>of (to)</i> | pour, <i>in order to, to</i> |
| à, <i>to</i> | sans, <i>without</i> |
| après, <i>after</i> | par, <i>by</i> |

a. Of these, **par** is little used, and **après** almost only with the perfect infinitive: thus, **après avoir dîné** *after having dined*.

b. The English *to* as sign of the infinitive is represented by both **à** and **de**. Often, the reason for using **de**, as meaning properly *of, from*, is to be seen: thus, **il est temps de partir** *it is time to leave* (literally, *time of leaving*), **nous sommes défendus de parler** *we are forbidden to speak* (literally, *kept off from speaking*), **il a cessé d'être** *he has ceased to be* (literally, *ceased from being*), and so on. But in considerable part this is not the case, and the distinction has to be learned for each phrase. See the Second Part, § 171 etc.

5. Prepositional phrases often followed by the infinitive are:

| | |
|---------------------------------|--|
| afin de, <i>in order to, to</i> | loin de, <i>far from</i> |
| au lieu de, <i>instead of</i> | à moins de, <i>short of, without</i> |
| à force de, <i>by dint of</i> | de peur (crainte) de, <i>for fear of</i> |
| avant de, <i>before</i> | plutôt que de, <i>rather than</i> |

a. It is the English infinitive in *ing* that in very many cases corresponds to the French infinitive after a preposition or prepositional phrase: thus, **sans attendre** *without waiting*, **avant de mourir** *before dying*, **de peur de tomber** *for fear of falling*.

6. Frequent special uses of **à** and **de** are:

a. **À** is much used before the name of that by which anything is characterized (as possessing it, being for it, acting by it, and the like): thus, **un homme au cœur tendre** *a man of tender heart*, **le ver à soie** *the silk-worm*, **un bateau à vapeur** *a steamboat* (see Part Second, § 36).

b. **De** is much used before a numeral to express the measure of anything, or that by which one thing differs from another: thus,

âgée de seize ans *aged 16 years*, long de douze pieds *twelve feet long*, plus grand de la moitié *larger by a half* (see Part Second, § 61c).

VERB-LESSON.

7. *a.* Of the very common irregular verb *dire say*, *tell*, the synopsis of principal and derived parts is this:

| | | | | |
|--------|--------|-----------|-----|-------|
| dire | disant | dit | dis | dis |
| dirai | disais | avoir dit | dis | disse |
| dirais | dise | etc. etc. | | |

b. The inflection of the present indicative and imperative (the impf. subjunctive being quite regular) is:

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|--------------|--------|-------|--------|
| dis | disons | | disons |
| dis | dites | dis | dites |
| dit | disent | | |

c. Note the 2d plur. ending in *tes* (like *êtes, faites*).

d. Common phrases containing *dire* are: *on dit* (XXVII. 4) or *il se dit* (XXVIII. 4) *it is said*; *c'est à dire* *that is to say, that is*; *à dire vrai* *to tell the truth*; *pour ainsi dire* *so to speak*; *cela va sans dire* *that does not need to be stated or is a matter of course* (literally, *goes without saying*). *Vouloir dire* (literally, *wish to say*) means *signify, mean*.

VOCABULARY.

(Besides the prepositions and preposition phrases given in the Lesson.)

| | |
|--|--|
| le chemin, <i>road</i> | le chemin de fer, <i>railroad, railway</i> |
| le bateau, <i>boat</i> | le bateau à vapeur, <i>steamboat</i> |
| la gare, <i>station, depot</i> | le bateau à voiles, <i>sailboat</i> |
| la poste, <i>the post, post-office</i> | le voyage, <i>the journey</i> |
| le matelot, <i>the sailor</i> | la mer, <i>the sea</i> |
| le matin, <i>the morning</i> | le soir, <i>the evening</i> |
| le fleuve, <i>the river</i> | ordinairement, <i>usually, ordinarily</i> |

EXERCISE 33.

¹ Par où allez-vous à la ville? ² J'y vais par le chemin de fer. ³ Est-ce que la gare est près de votre maison? ⁴ Non, elle en est très loin; elle est hors du village. ⁵ Plutôt que d'aller par le chemin de fer, je n'irais jamais au dehors du village. ⁶ Quant à moi, j'aime extrêmement à

voyager. ⁷ Au lieu de rester chez moi, je suis allé autour du monde. ⁸ Je ne peux jamais aller sur la mer, de peur d'être malade. ⁹ Avant de quitter la France, j'en avais toujours peur ; mais à force d'avoir voyagé, je n'y pense plus. ¹⁰ Ce matelot est-il allé à travers la mer ? ¹¹ Selon lui, il est allé dix fois jusqu'en Amérique. ¹² Est-ce qu'il va en bateau à vapeur ou en bateau à voiles ? ¹³ Il voyage ordinairement en bateau à voiles. ¹⁴ Mon père vient d'arriver, et je suis allé au-devant de lui. ¹⁵ Depuis quelle heure est-il ici ? ¹⁶ Il est arrivé pendant la nuit. ¹⁷ Vous ne me quitterez point, sans faire ce que vous devez faire. ¹⁸ J'y suis venu pour le faire. ¹⁹ Après avoir déjeuné, il nous mènera sur son grand bateau à vapeur. ²⁰ Je n'ai pas le temps d'aller avec vous. ²¹ Au lieu d'aller au bateau, il me faut aller à l'école.

THEME 33.

¹ Where have you been since (the) morning ? ² I went to the post in order to find the old sailor. ³ He came to meet me, and we dined together on the steamboat. ⁴ After having dined, we went around the boat. ⁵ It is 300 feet long, larger by (the) half than most of the sailboats. ⁶ Did you talk with the sailors ? ⁷ No, one ought not to speak to them ; but, in spite of that, I spoke to one sailor. ⁸ Before arriving here, he had been around the world. ⁹ He had gone three times as far as America. ¹⁰ For lack of money, I have to remain here, without travelling. ¹¹ Instead of doing nothing, you must work, in order to have money. ¹² By dint of working, one can have as much money as one wants. ¹³ It is time to go to the station. ¹⁴ The station is opposite the house of my brother. ¹⁵ It is necessary to go along the river, in order to arrive there. ¹⁶ As for the railroad, I do not like it at all. ¹⁷ I have not the time to travel, but I am not content without going often to Paris. ¹⁸ Rather than travel by the railroad, I go usu-

ally by the steamer. ¹⁹ Far from loving to (à) travel, I hate it. ²⁰ I can never travel without being sick.

VERB-LESSON.

¹ Que dites-vous ? ² Je n'ai rien dit. ³ Qu'en dira-t-on ?
⁴ On dira que nous ne faisons rien. ⁵ Dis-moi ce que tu as fait.
⁶ Je n'en dirai rien à personne. ⁷ Qu'est-ce qu'ils vous disaient ?
⁸ Ils m'ont dit de m'en aller. ⁹ Qu'est-ce que cela veut dire ?
¹⁰ Cela veut dire qu'ils ne m'aiment pas. ¹¹ Dites-lui de venir ici. ¹² Il viendra tout de suite : c'est à dire, à six heures et demie.

¹³ Tell it to me ; I shall tell you nothing ; he told it to her ; will she not tell it to them ? we should tell it to you, if they had told it to us. ¹⁴ What were you saying ? ¹⁵ I was going to say that I do not like her. ¹⁶ That is a matter of course. ¹⁷ What does that mean ? ¹⁸ It means that she bores everybody. ¹⁹ It is said that the queen is in London : that is, she will arrive there soon. ²⁰ Don't tell me that.

LESSON XXXIV.

CONJUNCTIONS.

1. The conjunctions most used in French are :

| | |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| et, <i>and</i> | ou, <i>or</i> |
| mais, <i>but</i> | car, <i>for</i> |
| que, <i>that</i> | lorsque, <i>when, as</i> |
| puisque, <i>since, because, as</i> | quoique, <i>although, though</i> |
| si, <i>if, whether</i> | comme, <i>as</i> |

a. Of these conjunctions, **quoique** *although* requires the following verb to be always in the subjunctive: thus,

although he is ill, quoiqu'il soit malade
though we had nothing, quoique nous n'eussions rien

b. The conjunction **si** *if* (which in English especially

requires the subjunctive) is in French almost always followed by the indicative (pres. or impf.): thus,

if he come, s'il vient *if they were here, s'ils étaient ici*

But the subjunctive pluperfect is also allowed after *si*: thus, *if he had been here* is *s'il eût été ici* (or *s'il avait été ici*).

Si may be followed by the future (or conditional) when used in the sense of *whether*: thus, *qui sait s'il viendra* *who knows whether he will come?*

Note the abbreviation of *si* before *il* or *ils* (29*b*).

c. The conjunction *que* *that* (as well as the relative: XXVI. 11), though often omitted in English, must always be expressed in French: thus, *I believe you are right* *je crois que vous avez raison*.

2. The interrogative adverbs, in their relative sense (XXXII. 6*a*), have the value of conjunctions: thus, *quand je le vis, je ne savais pas d'où il était venu* *when I saw him, I did not know whence he had come*.

3. Correlative conjunctions, used in successive clauses, are:

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>et . . . et, both . . . and</i> | <i>ou . . . ou, either . . . or</i> |
| <i>ni . . . ni, neither . . . nor</i> | <i>soit . . . soit, whether . . . or</i> |
| <i>plus . . . plus, the more . . . the more</i> | <i>moins . . . moins, the less . . . the less</i> |
| <i>autant . . . autant, as much . . . as</i> | <i>tantôt . . . tantôt, now . . . now</i> |

4. Connectives of sentences, having the character rather of adverbs than of conjunctions, are:

| | |
|--------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| <i>aussi, also, too, accordingly</i> | <i>ainsi, thus, so</i> |
| <i>or, now</i> | <i>donc, then, consequently</i> |
| <i>puis, then, next</i> | <i>alors, then</i> |
| <i>néanmoins, nevertheless</i> | <i>toutefois, yet, however</i> |
| <i>cependant, meanwhile, however</i> | <i>pourtant, yet, still</i> |
| <i>autrement, otherwise</i> | <i>d'ailleurs, besides, moreover</i> |

5. Many phrases having a conjunctive value are made by adding the conjunction *que* *that* a preposition or adverb or adverbial phrase.

a. Some of those most commonly used are:

| | |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| <i>après que, after that, after</i> | <i>depuis que, since (the time that)</i> |
| <i>aussitôt que, as soon as</i> | <i>dès que, when, as soon as</i> |
| <i>pendant que, while</i> | <i>tandis que, while, whereas</i> |
| <i>parce que, because</i> | <i>ainsi que, as</i> |
| <i>tant que, so long as</i> | <i>autant que, as much as</i> |

b. Some such phrases require the following verb to be in the subjunctive; examples are:

| | |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| afin que, <i>in order that</i> | pour que, <i>in order that</i> |
| avant que, <i>before</i> | jusqu'à ce que, <i>until</i> |
| bien que, <i>although</i> | pourvu que, <i>provided that</i> |
| sans que, <i>without that</i> | au cas que, <i>in case that</i> |

After **sans que**, the verb can hardly be rendered except by our infinitive in *ing*: thus, **sans que personne s'en aperçoive** *without any one's perceiving it*.

c. One or two require the following subjunctive to be preceded by the negative **ne**: they are **à moins que** *unless*, **de crainte (or peur) que** *for fear that, lest*: thus, **à moins qu'il ne vienne** *unless he come*.

VERB-LESSON.

.6. a. Of the irregular verb **savoir** *know* (Lat. *sapere*) the synopsis of principal and derived parts is:

| | | | | |
|---------|---------|-----------|-------|-------|
| savoir | sachant | su | sais | sus |
| saurai | savais | avoir su | sache | susse |
| saurais | sache | etc. etc. | | |

b. The inflection of the present indicative and imperative (the pres. subj. being quite regular) is as follows:

| | | | |
|--------------|--------|-------|---------|
| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
| sais | savons | | sachons |
| sais | savez | sache | sachez |
| sait | savent | | |

c. The impf. indic. comes from another form of the pres. pple, **savant**, now used only as an adjective, meaning *learned*.

7. a. With an object and a predicate relating to it, **savoir** means *know to be*: thus, **je le sais modeste** *I know him to be modest*; with a following infinitive, it means *know how*: thus, **il sait se taire** *he knows how to hold his tongue*.

b. The pres. subj. **je sache** etc. is in certain phrases used like an indicative: thus, **je ne sache personne qui** *I know no one who* etc.; **que je sache** *so far as I know*. The conditional **saurais** is used (negatively) in the sense of *can, be able*: thus, **ils ne sauraient servir** *they are unable to be of use*.

c. The phrase **je ne sais quoi** (or **qui, quel**, etc.) is much used in the sense of *something, I can't tell what* etc.

d. **Savoir** is very often conjugated negatively with **ne** alone (**pas** being omitted).

VOCABULARY.

(Besides the conjunctions given in the lists above.)

| | |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| la fabrique, <i>the factory</i> | le fabricant, <i>the manufacturer</i> |
| le magasin, <i>the shop, store</i> | se marier, <i>marry, be married</i> |
| l'ouvrier m., <i>the workman</i> | l'ouvrière f., <i>the workwoman</i> |

EXERCISE 34.

¹ Il va geler ; allez-vous donc à Paris ? ² Bien qu'il gèle, il faut que j'y aille. ³ D'ailleurs je ne veux pas rester chez moi toute la journée. ⁴ Que ferez-vous pendant que vous y serez ? ⁵ Je vais chercher un cadeau pour mon amie, parce qu'elle vient de se marier. ⁶ Dès que je suis arrivé, j'ai cherché partout des cuillers d'argent ; mais je n'en ai trouvé de jolies, ni au magasin ni à la fabrique. ⁷ Pourtant on m'a dit que ce marchand en a de très belles. ⁸ Il me les a montrées ; mais plus je les regardais, plus je les trouvais laides. ⁹ Alors que me faut-il faire, afin que j'aie quelque chose pour elle ? ¹⁰ Il faut attendre jusqu'à ce qu'on en fasse de plus jolies. ¹¹ Est-ce qu'on aura le temps de les faire avant qu'elle se marie ? ¹² Depuis que je vous ai parlé, je suis allé à la fabrique. ¹³ Pourvu qu'il y ait assez de temps, le fabricant va me les faire. ¹⁴ Il ne pourrait les faire, sans qu'il eût de bons ouvriers. ¹⁵ Il en aura, dès qu'il voudra en avoir. ¹⁶ S'il eût eu de bons ouvriers, il aurait déjà de jolies choses.

THEME 34.

¹ Have you been at the shop since you left me ? ² I have been both at the shop and at the factory. ³ Then you have bought something. ⁴ I wanted to buy either forks or spoons ; but I have bought neither forks nor spoons. ⁵ If you had found some, should you not have bought them ? ⁶ Although I have found some, nevertheless they were not pretty. ⁷ Moreover, the manufacturer wishes that I wait (subj.) until he shall make some new ones. ⁸ Provided that he makes them at once, we can wait ; otherwise we

shall go elsewhere. ⁹ I wish to give them to my friend, before she is married. ¹⁰ The workmen go to the factory early, in order that they may work longer. ¹¹ Although she is ill, this poor workwoman works the whole day. ¹² Unless she works ten hours, the merchant will not give her money. ¹³ So long as she shall work, she will be ill. ¹⁴ However, she must work, in order that he may give her bread for her children. ¹⁵ She cannot work much, because she is ill. ¹⁶ She had to work, lest he should give her nothing. ¹⁷ As soon as she shall be better, she will work more. ¹⁸ The more she works (fut.), the more he will give her money. ¹⁹ You must stay at home, since you are not well. ²⁰ While you are working, I shall go to the school.

VERB-LESSON.

Sais-tu quelle heure il est ? ² Je ne sais pas. ³ Ils n'en savent rien. ⁴ Je ne saurais vous le dire. ⁵ Il sait travailler. ⁶ Il n'y a personne ici, que je sache. ⁷ Charles vous savait malade, et il n'est pas venu. ⁸ Savez-vous s'il viendra demain ? ⁹ Personne ne saurait dire où il sera demain. ¹⁰ Je saurai le trouver.

¹¹ Does he know ? you know ; she knew ; they were knowing ; we shall know ; that he might know. ¹² Has he known it ? we know what you know ; I knew, but I do not know now ; she knew and she had always known ; you would not have known it, if I had not told it to you. ¹³ Did you know that he was ill ? ¹⁴ I had known it, but I had forgotten it. ¹⁵ You know how to work. ¹⁶ I could not tell how he loves her. ¹⁷ I do not know whether he is going to Paris.

LESSON XXXV.

IRREGULAR VERBS ENDING IN *ire*.

1. *a.* The general account of the irregular verbs was given above, at XXIV. 5, and some of the commonest among them have been explained in full.

Those so explained are as follows: *avoir have*, X., *être be*, XI., *vouloir wish* at XXIV. 6 etc., *pouvoir be able* at XXV. 8 etc., *devoir owe* at XXVI. 12 etc., *aller go* at XXVII. 8 etc., *falloir must* at XXX. 6 etc., *venir come* at XXXI. 10 etc., *faire do* at XXXII. 8 etc., *dire say* at XXXIII. 7 etc., and *savoir know* at XXXIV. 6 etc.

b. It remains now to give the rest of the irregular verbs, and to explain their inflection.

2. The verbs *conduire conduct* etc., *instruire instruct* etc., and *cuire cook*, are conjugated alike, having past participles ending in *it*, and preterits in *isis*. Their derived parts are all made regularly. Thus:

| | | | | | |
|--------------|-------------------|-------------------|--------------------------|----------------|--------------------|
| <i>a. 1.</i> | <i>conduire</i> | <i>conduisant</i> | <i>conduit</i> | <i>conduis</i> | <i>conduisis</i> |
| | <i>conduirai</i> | <i>conduisais</i> | <i>avoir conduit</i> | <i>conduis</i> | <i>conduisisse</i> |
| | <i>conduirais</i> | <i>conduise</i> | <small>etc. etc.</small> | | |

b. The present indicative and imperative (the pres. subj. being entirely regular) are inflected thus:

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|----------------|-------------------|----------------|-------------------|
| <i>conduis</i> | <i>conduisons</i> | | <i>conduisons</i> |
| <i>conduis</i> | <i>conduisez</i> | <i>conduis</i> | <i>conduisez</i> |
| <i>conduit</i> | <i>conduisent</i> | | |

c. Like *conduire* are conjugated the other compounds of *-duire* (Lat. *ducere*): namely,

| | | |
|--------------------------|------------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>déduire, deduce</i> | <i>introduire, introduce</i> | <i>séduire, seduce</i> |
| <i>éconduire, remove</i> | <i>produire, produce</i> | <i>traduire, translate</i> |
| <i>enduire, do over</i> | <i>reconduire, reconduct</i> | |
| <i>induire, induce</i> | <i>réduire, reduce</i> | |

The simple verb, *duire suit*, is used only in the 3d sing. present. Of the other two verbs, it will be enough to give the principal parts only.

| | | | | | |
|--------------|------------------|--------------------|-----------------|-----------------|-------------------|
| <i>d. 2.</i> | <i>instruire</i> | <i>instruisant</i> | <i>instruit</i> | <i>instruis</i> | <i>instruisis</i> |
|--------------|------------------|--------------------|-----------------|-----------------|-------------------|

e. Like *instruire* are conjugated the other compounds of *-struire* (Lat. *struere*): namely,

construire, construct *détruire, destroy* *reconstruire, reconstruct*

f. 3. *cuire* *cuisant* *cuit* *cuis* *cuisis*

g. Like *cuire* (Lat. *coquere*) is conjugated its compound :

recuire, cook again

3. The verbs *nuire injure* and *luire shine* are conjugated in the same way, except that their past participle ends in *i* instead of *it*. Thus :

a. 4. *nuire* *nuisant* *nui* *nuis* *nuisis*

5. *luire* *luisant* *lui* *luis* ———

b. The pret. indic. and impf. subj. of *luire* are not in use. Like it is conjugated its compound :

reluire, shine, glisten

c. These verbs are Lat. *nocere* and *lucere* respectively.

4. The verbs *suffire suffice*, *confire preserve*, and *circoncire circumcise*, are conjugated alike, except the past participles, which end respectively in *i*, *it*, and *is*. Their preterit ends in *is* simply, like the present (not in *isis*, like the preceding verbs). Thus :

a. 6. *suffire* *suffisant* *suffi* *suffis* *suffis*

7. *confire* *confisant* *confit* *confis* *confis*

8. *circoncire* *circoncisant* *circoncis* *circoncis* *circoncis*

b. These verbs are respectively Lat. *sufficere*, *conficere*, and *circumcidere*.

c. Like *confire* is conjugated its compound :

déconfire, disconfit

5. The very common verb *dire say, tell* differs from *confire* only by having in the 2d plural pres. indic. and impv. *dites* (instead of *disez*). Its principal parts are :

9. *dire* *disant* *dit* *dis* *dis*

The complete inflection of this verb was given above, at XXXIII. 7 etc.

a. Of the compounds of *dire* (Lat. *dicere*), only

redire, say again

is conjugated precisely like it. Most of the others—namely,

contredire, contradict *interdire, interdict* *prédire, predict*

dédire, disown *médire, slander*

—are like *confire*, having *-disez* (instead of *-dites*) in the 2d

plural. But **maudire** *curse* (Lat. **maledicere**) is much more irregular, having double **ss** in the present participle and in all the forms that follow its analogy. Thus :

| | | | | | |
|------------|------------------|-------------------|---------------------|---------------|-----------------|
| 10. | maudire | maudissant | maudit | maudis | maudis |
| | maudirai | maudissais | avoir maudit | maudis | maudisse |
| | maudirais | maudisse | etc. etc. | | |

The inflection of the pres. indic. and impv. is :

| | | | | | |
|---------------|-------------------|---------------|--|-------------------|--|
| | PRES. INDIC. | | | IMPV. | |
| maudis | maudissons | | | maudissons | |
| maudis | maudissez | maudis | | maudissez | |
| maudit | maudissent | | | | |

6. **Lire** *read* forms its past participle in **u** and its pret-erit in **us**. The other parts and their inflection are like those of **conduire**, above (2). Thus :

| | | | | | |
|------------|---------------|---------------|-----------------|------------|--------------|
| 11. | lire | lisant | lu | lis | lus |
| | lirai | lisais | avoir lu | lis | lusse |
| | lirais | lise | etc. etc. | | |

a. Like **lire** (Lat. **legere**) are conjugated its compounds
élire, *elect* **relire**, *read again* **réélire**, *re-elect*

7. The verb **écrire** *write* is in the main like **conduire** ; but it has everywhere **v** instead of **s** after **i** in the full forms of the root. Thus :

| | | | | | | |
|-----------|------------|------------------|-----------------|--------------------|--------------|------------------|
| <i>a.</i> | 12. | écrire | écrivant | écrit | écris | écrivis |
| | | écrivrai | écrivais | avoir écrit | écris | écrivisse |
| | | écrivrais | écrive | etc. etc. | | |

b. The inflection of the pres. indic. and impv. is as follows :

| | | | | | |
|--------------|-----------------|--------------|--|-----------------|--|
| | PRES. INDIC. | | | IMPV. | |
| écris | écrivons | | | écrivons | |
| écris | écrivez | écris | | écrivez | |
| écrit | écrivent | | | | |

c. Like **écrire** (Lat. **scribere**) are conjugated the compounds :
circonscrire, *circumscribe* **prescrire**, *prescribe* **souscrire**, *subscribe*
décrire, *describe* **proscrire**, *proscribe* **transcrire**, *transcribe*
inscrire, *inscribe* **récrire**, *rewrite*

8. The verb **rire** *laugh* is still more unlike the above verbs. Thus :

| | | | | | | |
|-----------|------------|---------------|---------------|-----------------|------------|--------------|
| <i>a.</i> | 13. | rire | riant | ri | ris | ris |
| | | rirai | riaais | avoir ri | ris | risse |
| | | rirais | rie | etc. etc. | | |

b. The inflection of the present tenses is :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | | PRES. SUBJ. | |
|--------------|-------|-------|-------|-------------|--------|
| ris | rions | | rions | rie | riions |
| ris | riez | ris | riez | ries | riiez |
| rit | rient | | | rie | rient |

c. Like **rire** (Lat. **ridere**) is inflected its compound :

sourire, smile

9. The verb *frire* *fry* is like *rire*, except that its past participle ends in *it*, and that it lacks the present participle and all forms following its analogy—namely, the impf. indic., the pres. subj., and the plural of the pres. indicative. Thus :

14. frire — *frit* *fris* *fris*

VOCABULARY.

(Besides the verbs in the Lesson.)

le poète, *the poet*

la poésie, *poetry*

la tragédie, *the tragedy*

la comédie, *the comedy*

l'ouvrage m., *the work*

la manière, *the manner*

le journal, *the journal, newspaper*

le rédacteur, *the editor*

français, *French*

anglais, *English*

EXERCISE 35.

¹ Avez-vous lu les ouvrages de ce poète, madame ? ² Je lis toujours de la poésie, mais je ne sais ce que cet homme a écrit. ³ Je lus l'année dernière une de ses comédies, qui me fit beaucoup rire. ⁴ Nous lisons les tragédies, et nous ne rions jamais. ⁵ Vous écrivez beaucoup pour les journaux, n'est-ce pas ? ⁶ Ce sont les rédacteurs qui écrivent pour les journaux ; moi, je n'écris que de la poésie. ⁷ Qu'écriviez-vous hier ? ⁸ Nous traduisions les comédies de Molière. ⁹ Les avez-vous lues ? ¹⁰ Si vous les avez traduites, je les lirai certainement. ¹¹ Vous en rirez ; elles sont très amusantes. ¹² Nous en avons beaucoup ri, quand nous les lisions. ¹³ Pourquoi le poète maudissait-il le rédacteur ? ¹⁴ Parce que celui-ci lui a nuï. ¹⁵ Il a décrit sa dernière tragédie d'une manière amusante, et tout le monde en rit. ¹⁶ J'ai lu ce qu'il en a écrit, et je n'ai pas même souri en le

lisant. ¹⁷ Que faites-vous avec ces jeunes filles? ¹⁸ Nous les conduisons au théâtre, afin qu'elles s'y amusent. ¹⁹ Les bonnes comédies instruisent beaucoup les jeunes gens. ²⁰ Si vous voulez écrire de la poésie, il faut que vous lisiez les poètes français.

THEME 35.

¹ He will conduct; I have conducted; we were conducting; conduct him! they would conduct her, if she wished to go there. ² Read your letter; I have read it; we shall read it to you; let us not read it to her. ³ They were writing; she would write; we had written; you will never have written; I shall write to nobody; nobody has written to me. ⁴ Has he read the letter that she has written him? write him a letter, in order that he may read it. ⁵ He has laughed; she will laugh; they were laughing while I was reading; do not laugh at (de) the books which you read. ⁶ I read much poetry; but I have not read the works of all the poets. ⁷ Do you write nothing? ⁸ Yes, I have always written a great deal for the newspapers. ⁹ I translate many comedies, but I do not write any. ¹⁰ I was reading a tragedy, and I did not laugh at it. ¹¹ Why do you not read the newspapers? ¹² Because they do not instruct me. ¹³ My daughters write poetry, and my son has written a tragedy. ¹⁴ They have always read the best works of the French poets, and they have translated English poetry.

LESSON XXXVI.

IRREGULAR VERBS IN *aindre etc.*, AND *aitre etc.*

1. Among the other irregular verbs ending in *re*, there are two important groups which may be taken up first.
2. A considerable number of much-used verbs have

their infinitive in *ndre* preceded by one of the three digraphs *ai*, *ei*, *oi*—verbs in *aindre*, *eindre*, and *oindre*. They are conjugated precisely alike, and their derived parts are made with entire regularity from the principal parts—which, however, are quite irregular in their relations to one another.

3. As examples may be taken *craindre* *fear*, *peindre* *paint*, *joindre* *join*. Thus:

| | | | | | | |
|-----------|------------|-------------------|------------------|---------------------|---------------|-------------------|
| <i>a.</i> | 15. | <i>craindre</i> | <i>craignant</i> | <i>craint</i> | <i>crains</i> | <i>craignis</i> |
| | | <i>craindrai</i> | <i>craignais</i> | <i>avoir craint</i> | <i>crains</i> | <i>craignisse</i> |
| | | <i>craindrais</i> | <i>craigne</i> | <i>etc. etc.</i> | | |

b. The inflection of the pres. indic. and impv. (the pres. subj. being quite regular) is as follows:

| | | | |
|---------------|------------------|---------------|------------------|
| | PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. |
| <i>crains</i> | <i>craignons</i> | | <i>craignons</i> |
| <i>crains</i> | <i>craignez</i> | <i>crains</i> | <i>craignez</i> |
| <i>craint</i> | <i>craignent</i> | | |

c. Of the other two verbs, it will be enough to give the principal parts. Thus:

| | | | | | |
|------------|----------------|-----------------|--------------|--------------|----------------|
| 16. | <i>peindre</i> | <i>peignant</i> | <i>peint</i> | <i>peint</i> | <i>peignis</i> |
| 17. | <i>joindre</i> | <i>joignant</i> | <i>joint</i> | <i>joins</i> | <i>joignis</i> |

d. Like these verbs are conjugated:

| | | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>plaindre, pity</i> | <i>contraindre, constrain</i> | |
| <i>astreindre, constrain</i> | <i>enceindre, gird</i> | <i>geindre, groan</i> |
| <i>atteindre, attain</i> | <i>enfreindre, infringe</i> | <i>ratteindre, re-attain</i> |
| <i>ceindre, gird</i> | <i>épreindre, squeeze out</i> | <i>repeindre, paint again</i> |
| <i>dépeindre, depict</i> | <i>êteindre, extinguish</i> | <i>restreindre, restrain</i> |
| <i>déteindre, fade</i> | <i>êteindre, draw tight</i> | <i>reteindre, dye over</i> |
| <i>empreindre, imprint</i> | <i>feindre, feign</i> | <i>teindre, tinge</i> |
| <i>conjoindre, conjoin</i> | <i>enjoindre, enjoin</i> | <i>poindre, puncture</i> |
| <i>déjoindre, disjoin</i> | <i>oindre, anoint</i> | <i>rejoindre, rejoin</i> |
| <i>disjoindre, disjoin</i> | | |

e. These verbs end in Latin mostly in *-ngere*: thus. *plaindre*, Lat. *plangere*; *peindre*, Lat. *pingere*; *joindre*, Lat. *jungere*; *êteindre*, Lat. *extinguere*; and so on. Hence the *gn* in many of their forms. But *-preindre* and *geindre* are Lat. *-premere*, *gemere*.

4. A number of verbs in *aitre* and *oitre*, some of them very common ones, are conjugated nearly alike. They,

too, make their derived parts quite regularly from an irregular set of principal parts.

5. As models may be taken *paraître appear* and *croître grow*. Thus :

| | | | | | |
|--------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|---------------|----------------|
| a. 18. | <i>paraître</i> | <i>paraissant</i> | <i>paru</i> | <i>parais</i> | <i>parus</i> |
| | <i>paraîtrai</i> | <i>paraissais</i> | <i>avoir paru</i> | <i>parais</i> | <i>parusse</i> |
| | <i>paraîtrais</i> | <i>paraïsse</i> | etc. etc. | | |

b. The inflection of pres. indic. and impv. is :

| | | | | | |
|---------------|--------------------|---------------|--|--------------------|--|
| | PRES. INDIC. | | | IMPV. | |
| <i>parais</i> | <i>paraissions</i> | | | <i>paraissions</i> | |
| <i>parais</i> | <i>paraissez</i> | <i>parais</i> | | <i>paraissez</i> | |
| <i>paraît</i> | <i>paraissent</i> | | | | |

Note that the circumflex of the infinitive appears here in the 3d sing., but not elsewhere.

c. Like *paraître* are conjugated its compounds :

apparaître, appear *comparaître, appear* *disparaître, disappear*
also *connaître know, be acquainted with*, and its compounds :

méconnaître, fail to recognize *reconnaître, recognize*

also *paître graze* and its compound :

repâître, feed

But of *paître* the pret. indic. and impf. subj. are not in use.

d. Old infinitive forms are *apparoir* and *comparoir*, for *apparaître* and *comparaître*; from *apparoir* is made also the impersonal 3d sing. *il appert it appears*.

6. Of *croître grow* the principal and derived parts are :

| | | | | | |
|-----|------------------|------------------|------------------|--------------|---------------|
| 19. | <i>croître</i> | <i>croissant</i> | <i>crû</i> | <i>crois</i> | <i>crûs</i> |
| | <i>croîtrai</i> | <i>croissais</i> | <i>avoir crû</i> | <i>crois</i> | <i>crûsse</i> |
| | <i>croîtrais</i> | <i>croïsse</i> | etc. etc. | | |

a. The inflection of the pres. indic. and impv. is :

| | | | | | |
|--------------|------------------|--------------|--|------------------|--|
| | PRES. INDIC. | | | IMPV. | |
| <i>crois</i> | <i>croissons</i> | | | <i>croissons</i> | |
| <i>crois</i> | <i>croissez</i> | <i>crois</i> | | <i>croissez</i> | |
| <i>croît</i> | <i>croissent</i> | | | | |

Note that the circumflex of the infinitive appears here through the whole singular. The circumflex in past pple and pret. is chiefly for the purpose of distinguishing the forms from those of *croire believe* (below, XXXVII. 5).

ne pense pas qu'il nous reconnaîtra à présent. ⁷ Nous avons beaucoup crû, depuis qu'il nous a connus. ⁸ Les enfants croissent très vite, et après peu de temps on ne les reconnaît plus. ⁹ Il paraît que nous allons avoir une guerre avec l'Allemagne. ¹⁰ Tous les malheurs de la patrie naissent de la guerre. ¹¹ Aussitôt que la guerre commencera, le bonheur des citoyens aura disparu. ¹² Qui est-ce que vous plaigniez ? ¹³ Nous plaignions les pauvres soldats, qui doivent aller à la guerre. ¹⁴ Qui est-ce que cet homme veut peindre ? ¹⁵ Il a peint beaucoup de généraux de France ; maintenant il va peindre ce soldat-ci. ¹⁶ Napoléon naquit en Corse le 15 août, 1769. ¹⁷ La plupart de nos grands hommes sont nés en France. ¹⁸ Donnons-nous la main, et soyons bons amis. ¹⁹ Mon père naquit en 1796, et moi, je suis né en 1853. ²⁰ Nous ne craignons pas le malheur ; pourquoi le craindrions-nous ?

THEME 36.

¹ They fear ; we shall fear ; that he may not fear ; fear nothing ; did he never fear ? he would have feared it. ² I had recognized her ; do you not recognize me ? we should recognize him ; he will recognize them ; she recognized him as he was entering. ³ Will he not appear ? if he appears, we shall disappear ; although he had not yet appeared, we went away ; do they not appear ? he appeared yesterday ; we appear to-day ; they will appear to-morrow. ⁴ You paint ; was he not painting ? I will paint it, if you wish ; give me what you have painted. ⁵ What was the man painting ? ⁶ He has painted the beautiful flowers which grow in our garden. ⁷ Does he never paint men ? ⁸ Those painters always paint animals. ⁹ Do you not recognize this picture ? ¹⁰ Yes, I recognize it well ; it is the portrait of the young general. ¹¹ Did you know him ? ¹² I knew him very well, and we have always known his family. ¹³ Where is he now ? ¹⁴ He disappeared last year. ¹⁵ It appears that his family has had many misfortunes.

¹⁶ Yes, we pity them very much. ¹⁷ When was your son born? ¹⁸ He was born in 1878. ¹⁹ He has grown a good deal since I went away. ²⁰ Yes, he grows very fast; all the children are growing; he will still grow a little.

LESSON XXXVII.

FURTHER IRREGULAR VERBS IN *re*.

1. The verb **traire** *draw, milk* lacks the preterit and the imperfect subjunctive.

a. Its principal and derived parts are as follows :

| | | | | |
|-------------------|---------|-------------|-------|-----|
| 21. traire | trayant | trait | trais | ——— |
| trairai | trayais | avoir trait | trais | |
| trairais | traie | etc. etc. | | |

b. The inflection of pres. indic. and impv. is :

| | | | |
|--------------|---------|-------|---------|
| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
| trais | trayons | | trayons |
| trais | trayez | trais | trayez |
| trait | traient | | |

c. Like **traire** (Lat. *trahere*) are conjugated its compounds :

| | | |
|----------------------------|----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| abstraire, <i>abstract</i> | distraire, <i>distract</i> | rentraire, <i>darn</i> |
| attraire, <i>attract</i> | extraire, <i>extract</i> | retraire, <i>milk again</i> |
| | | soustraire, <i>subtract</i> |

2. The verb **braire** *bray* is conjugated like **traire**, but is hardly used except in the infinitive and the 3d sing. and pl. of pres. indic., fut., and conditional.

| | | | |
|-------------------|---------|----------|------------|
| 22. braire | brait | braira | brairait |
| | braient | brairont | brairaient |

a. This verb is from late Latin *bragire*, from Celtic.

3. The very common verb **faire** *make, do*, which is also very irregular, has been given in full above: see XXXII. 8.

a. **23.** Like **faire** (Lat. *facere*) are conjugated its compounds :

| | | |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------|----------------------------|
| contrefaire, <i>counterfeit</i> | malfaire, <i>do ill</i> | refaire, <i>remake</i> |
| défaire, <i>undo</i> | méfaire, <i>do harm</i> | satisfaire, <i>satisfy</i> |
| forfaire, <i>offend</i> | parfaire, <i>complete</i> | surfaire, <i>overdo</i> |

| | | | | | | |
|-----------|------------|----------------|---------------|------------------|-------------|--------------|
| <i>d.</i> | 27. | <i>boire</i> | <i>buvant</i> | <i>bu</i> | <i>bois</i> | <i>bus</i> |
| | | <i>boirai</i> | <i>buvais</i> | <i>avoir bu</i> | <i>bois</i> | <i>busse</i> |
| | | <i>boirais</i> | <i>boive</i> | <i>etc. etc.</i> | | |

Inflection of the three present tenses :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | | PRES. SUBJ. | |
|--------------|----------------|-------------|---------------|---------------|----------------|
| <i>bois</i> | <i>buvons</i> | | <i>buvons</i> | <i>boive</i> | <i>buvions</i> |
| <i>bois</i> | <i>buvez</i> | <i>bois</i> | <i>buvez</i> | <i>boives</i> | <i>buviez</i> |
| <i>boit</i> | <i>boivent</i> | | | <i>boive</i> | <i>boivent</i> |

e. Like *boire* (Lat. *bibere*) are conjugated its compounds :

emboire, imbibere imboire, imbibere, imbue reboire, drink again

6. There is one verb in *ore*, namely *clore close*, with its compound *éclore open, hatch* (taking *être* as auxiliary: XXVIII. 6*a*). Their conjugation is as follows (only a few of the forms being in actual use):

| | | | | | | |
|-----------|------------|----------------|--------------------|-----------------------|-------------|---|
| <i>a.</i> | 28. | <i>clore</i> | [<i>closant</i>] | <i>clos</i> | <i>clos</i> | — |
| | | <i>clorai</i> | — | <i>avoir clos</i> | — | — |
| | | <i>clorais</i> | <i>close</i> | (<i>être éclos</i>) | | |

b. The 3d sing. pres. indic. is *clôt* (and *éclôt*); of the plural only the 3d pers. *éclosent* is in use. The fut. and cond. of *éclore* are more usually written with the circumflex: *éclôra* etc. (only the 3d persons are in use).

c. Of *clore* (Lat. *claudere*) there are other compounds :

déclore, uncloze enclore, enclose foreclore, foreclose

but they are rarely used, and only in a few forms.

7. There is also a single verb ending in *ure*, namely *-clure* in *conclure conclude* etc. The conjugation is as follows :

| | | | | | | |
|-----------|------------|-------------------|------------------|---------------------|----------------|-------------------|
| <i>a.</i> | 29. | <i>conclure</i> | <i>concluant</i> | <i>conclu</i> | <i>conclus</i> | <i>conclus</i> |
| | | <i>conclurai</i> | <i>concluais</i> | <i>avoir conclu</i> | <i>conclus</i> | <i>concluisse</i> |
| | | <i>conclurais</i> | <i>conclue</i> | <i>etc. etc.</i> | | |

b. Inflection of the present tenses :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | | PRES. SUBJ. | |
|----------------|------------------|----------------|------------------|-----------------|-------------------|
| <i>conclus</i> | <i>concluons</i> | | <i>concluons</i> | <i>conclue</i> | <i>concluions</i> |
| <i>conclus</i> | <i>concluez</i> | <i>conclus</i> | <i>concluez</i> | <i>conclues</i> | <i>concluiez</i> |
| <i>conclut</i> | <i>concluent</i> | | | <i>conclue</i> | <i>concluent</i> |

c. Like *conclure* are conjugated also the other compounds of *-clure* (Lat. *-cludere*): namely,

exclure, exclude **reclure, shut up**
 but of **reclure** only a few forms are in use.

VOCABULARY.

(Besides the verbs given in the Lesson.)

| | |
|------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| la ferme, <i>the farm</i> | la fermière, <i>the farmer's wife</i> |
| le lis, <i>the lily</i> | la violette, <i>the violet</i> |
| le matin, <i>the morning</i> | le soir, <i>the evening</i> |

EXERCISE 37.

¹ Que buvez-vous? ² Je bois du lait frais; voulez-vous en boire? ³ Où l'avez-vous trouvé? ⁴ La fermière trayait ses vaches, et elle m'en a donné. ⁵ Croyez-vous que je puisse en avoir aussi? ⁶ Elle les a déjà traites, mais elle les traitera encore ce soir. ⁷ Alors j'en boirai ce soir. ⁸ Voilà de jolies fleurs; elles sont écloses ce matin. ⁹ Les roses écloront demain, je crois. ¹⁰ J'en veux quelques unes. ¹¹ Je crois vous avoir dit que j'aime extrêmement toutes les fleurs. ¹² Est-ce que ces petites filles ne vous plaisent pas? ¹³ Elles m'ont beaucoup déplu, parce qu'elles ne se taisent jamais. ¹⁴ Il faut qu'un enfant se taise lorsque les autres veulent parler. ¹⁵ Avant de m'en aller, il faut que je boive un peu de vin. ¹⁶ Vous en avez déjà bu, et nous ne croyons point qu'il vous en faille encore. ¹⁷ Mais le lait ne me plaît pas. ¹⁸ Taisez-vous, et buvez ce qu'on vous donne. ¹⁹ Je me tairai, mais je ne boirai pas ce qui me déplaît. ²⁰ Ne croient-ils pas ce que je leur ai dit? ²¹ Ils n'en ont rien cru.

THEME 37.

¹ He believes; does she not believe? they will believe; believe what I say; I have believed what she has said to me. ² Will he drink? do you drink? they would have drunk; drink, and go away; let us drink water; he would drink wine, if he had some. ³ Does she please you? that would never please me; they have pleased me. ⁴ She spoke

and I was silent ; be silent while your mother speaks ; if you do not keep silence, I shall say nothing. ⁵ I want to go to the farm this morning, if you please. ⁶ I will conduct you there ; but you must be silent while I speak to the farmer's wife. ⁷ Do you believe that she will milk the cows while we are there ? ⁸ If she milks them, she will give you some milk. ⁹ I drank some fresh milk formerly, and I shall drink some to-day. ¹⁰ We drink milk often, but we have never drunk wine. ¹¹ Do you think that the lilies have opened ? ¹² They have not yet opened, but they will open this evening. ¹³ These violets please me much ; give me some, if you please. ¹⁴ Be silent, my child ; you have displeased me. ¹⁵ We thought that we had pleased you. ¹⁶ Since you are silent, we conclude that we displease you. ¹⁷ Although we drink much milk, we are always thirsty.

LESSON XXXVIII.

THE REMAINING VERBS IN *re*.

1. The remaining verbs ending in the infinitive in *re* have a consonant next before the *r*. They are quite discordant, and in part very irregular, in their conjugation, and must be taken up one by one.

a. We will begin with two that are extremely common in use.

2. The verb *prendre* *take* is thus conjugated :

| | | | | |
|--------------------|----------------|-------------------|---------------|---------------|
| 30. <i>prendre</i> | <i>prenant</i> | <i>pris</i> | <i>prends</i> | <i>pris</i> |
| <i>prendrai</i> | <i>prenais</i> | <i>avoir pris</i> | <i>prends</i> | <i>prisse</i> |
| <i>prendrais</i> | <i>prenne</i> | <i>etc. etc.</i> | | |

Inflection of the present tenses :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | | PRES. SUBJ. | |
|---------------|-----------------|---------------|----------------|----------------|-----------------|
| <i>prends</i> | <i>prenons</i> | | <i>prenons</i> | <i>prenne</i> | <i>prenions</i> |
| <i>prends</i> | <i>prenez</i> | <i>prends</i> | <i>prenez</i> | <i>prennes</i> | <i>preniez</i> |
| <i>prend</i> | <i>prennent</i> | | | <i>prenne</i> | <i>prennent</i> |

a. For the doubling of the *n* in *prenne* etc., see 21.

b. Like **prendre** (Lat. *prehendere*) are conjugated its numerous compounds (some of them very much used) :

| | | |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| apprendre, <i>learn</i> | rapprendre, <i>relearn</i> | méprendre, <i>mistake</i> |
| désapprendre, <i>unlearn</i> | comprendre, <i>understand</i> | reprendre, <i>resume</i> |
| éprendre, <i>seize</i> | entreprendre, <i>undertake</i> | surprendre, <i>surprise</i> |

3. The verb **mettre** *put* is thus conjugated :

| | | | | |
|------------|---------|-----------|------|-------|
| 31. mettre | mettant | mis | mets | mis |
| mettrai | mettais | avoir mis | mets | misse |
| mettrais | mette | etc. etc. | | |

Inflection of the pres. indic. and impv. :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|--------------|---------|-------|---------|
| mets | mettons | | mettons |
| mets | mettez | mets | mettez |
| met | mettent | | |

a. Like **mettre** (Lat. *mittere*) are conjugated its numerous and much-used compounds :

| | | |
|--------------------------|---------------------------------|------------------------------|
| admettre, <i>admit</i> | omettre, <i>omit</i> | remettre, <i>remit</i> |
| commettre, <i>commit</i> | permettre, <i>permit</i> | soumettre, <i>submit</i> |
| démettre, <i>put out</i> | promettre, <i>promise</i> | transmettre, <i>transmit</i> |
| émettre, <i>emit</i> | compromettre, <i>compromise</i> | |

b. For the phrase **se mettre à** *begin* (literally, *set one's self at*), see above, XXIX. 7b.

4. The verb **vivre** *live* is very irregular in its preterit and past participle : thus,

| | | | | |
|-----------|--------|------------|-----|---------|
| 32. vivre | vivant | vécu | vis | vécus |
| vivrai | vivais | avoir vécu | vis | vécusse |
| vivrais | vive | etc. etc. | | |

Inflection of the pres. indic. and impv. :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|--------------|--------|-------|--------|
| vis | vivons | | vivons |
| vis | vivez | vis | vivez |
| vit | vivent | | |

a. Like **vivre** (Lat. *vivere*) are conjugated its compounds :

| | |
|------------------------|--------------------------|
| revivre, <i>revive</i> | survivre, <i>survive</i> |
|------------------------|--------------------------|

b. The pres. subj. is used in good wishes for English *long live* : thus, **vive le roi** *long live the king*. In the expression **qui vive** *who goes there?* (literally, *who is alive or stirring*) it is treated as an indicative.

5. The verb *sivre* *follow* is quite nearly regular. It is conjugated as follows :

| | | | | |
|------------------|----------------|--------------------|-------------|-----------------|
| 33. <i>sivre</i> | <i>sivant</i> | <i>suivi</i> | <i>suis</i> | <i>suivis</i> |
| <i>suivrai</i> | <i>suivais</i> | <i>avoir suivi</i> | <i>suis</i> | <i>suivisse</i> |
| <i>suivrais</i> | <i>suive</i> | etc. etc. | | |

Inflection of the pres. indic. and impv. :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|--------------|----------------|-------------|----------------|
| <i>suis</i> | <i>suivons</i> | | <i>suivons</i> |
| <i>suis</i> | <i>suivez</i> | <i>suis</i> | <i>suivez</i> |
| <i>suit</i> | <i>suivent</i> | | |

a. Notice the identity of *je suis* *I follow* with *je suis* *I am*.

b. Like *sivre* (Lat. *sequi*) are conjugated its compounds :

| | |
|-----------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>ensivre, ensue</i> | <i>poursivre, pursue</i> |
|-----------------------|--------------------------|

6. The verb *coudre* *sew* is thus conjugated :

| | | | | |
|-------------------|----------------|--------------------|--------------|-----------------|
| 34. <i>coudre</i> | <i>cousant</i> | <i>cousu</i> | <i>couds</i> | <i>cousis</i> |
| <i>coudrai</i> | <i>cousais</i> | <i>avoir cousu</i> | <i>couds</i> | <i>cousisse</i> |
| <i>coudrais</i> | <i>couse</i> | etc. etc. | | |

Inflection of the pres. indic. and impv. :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|--------------|----------------|--------------|----------------|
| <i>couds</i> | <i>cousons</i> | | <i>cousons</i> |
| <i>couds</i> | <i>cousez</i> | <i>couds</i> | <i>cousez</i> |
| <i>coud</i> | <i>cousent</i> | | |

a. Notice the unusual difference in the final vowel-sound of the pple *cousu* and pret. *cousis*. Such difference is found only in *coudre*, *vêtir* (XXXIX. 11), and *voir* (XLI. 4).

b. Like *coudre* (Lat. *consuere*) are conjugated its compounds :

| | |
|-----------------------------|---------------------------------|
| <i>découdre, unsew, rip</i> | <i>recoudre, sew over again</i> |
|-----------------------------|---------------------------------|

7. The verb *moudre* *grind* is thus conjugated :

| | | | | |
|-------------------|----------------|--------------------|--------------|-----------------|
| 35. <i>moudre</i> | <i>moulant</i> | <i>moulu</i> | <i>mouds</i> | <i>moulus</i> |
| <i>moudrai</i> | <i>moulais</i> | <i>avoir moulu</i> | <i>mouds</i> | <i>moulusse</i> |
| <i>moudrais</i> | <i>moule</i> | etc. etc. | | |

Inflection of the pres. indic. and impv. :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|--------------|----------------|--------------|----------------|
| <i>mouds</i> | <i>moulons</i> | | <i>moulons</i> |
| <i>mouds</i> | <i>moulez</i> | <i>mouds</i> | <i>moulez</i> |
| <i>moud</i> | <i>moulent</i> | | |

a. Like *moudre* (Lat. *molere*) are conjugated its compounds :

| | |
|----------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>émoudre, whet</i> | <i>remoudre, grind over</i> |
|----------------------|-----------------------------|

8. The very irregular verb *résoudre* *resolve* is thus conjugated :

| | | | | |
|---------------------|-----------|--------------|---------|-----------|
| 36. résoudre | résolvant | résolu | résouds | résolus |
| résoudrai | résolvais | avoir résolu | résouds | résolusse |
| résoudrais | résolve | etc. etc. | | |

Inflection of the pres. indic. and impv. :

| | | | |
|--------------|-----------|---------|-----------|
| PRES. INDIC. | | | IMPV. |
| résouds | résolvons | | résolvons |
| résouds | résolvez | résouds | résolvez |
| résoud | résolvent | | |

a. Nearly like **résoudre** are conjugated the other compounds of **-soudre** (Lat. *solvere*): namely,

absoudre, *absolve*

dissoudre, *dissolve*

except that their past participles are **absous** and **dissous** (fem. **-soute**). And **résous** (only masc.) is also a rarely used participle of **résoudre**, in the sense of *dissolved*.

9. Of **soudre** (Lat. *surgere*) *rise forth* are used only the infinitive and the 3d persons pres. indicative: thus,

37. **soudre** **sourd**, **sourdent**.

VOCABULARY.

(Besides the verbs given in the Lesson.)

la malle, *the trunk*

le mouchoir, *the handkerchief*

le col, *the collar*

la manchette, *the cuff*

la leçon, *the lesson*

le thème, *the exercise, theme*

anglais, *English*

allemand, *German*

EXERCISE 38.

¹ Qu'avez-vous appris de votre frère? ² J'apprends qu'il va entreprendre un long voyage. ³ Permettez-vous qu'il s'en aille? ⁴ Il l'a résolu, et il faut que je le lui permette. ⁵ Est-ce qu'il prendra toutes ces malles avec lui? ⁶ Il ne prend jamais qu'une malle. ⁷ Voilà la malle qu'il a prise l'année dernière. ⁸ Prenez ces mouchoirs et mettez-les dans la malle. ⁹ Est-ce que vous y avez mis les manchettes et les cols? ¹⁰ Il faut que je les couse avant de les y mettre. ¹¹ Ne les cousez pas, il en achètera d'autres. ¹² Si votre frère va en Angleterre, il lui faudra apprendre l'Anglais. ¹³ Il a résolu de l'apprendre, et il prend des leçons d'Anglais depuis un an. ¹⁴ Maintenant il l'aura appris très bien, je crois. ¹⁵ Comprenez-vous l'Allemand, mademoi-

selle? ¹⁶ Non, monsieur; mais je me suis mise à l'apprendre. ¹⁷ Ce qu'on a résolu d'apprendre, on l'apprend toujours. ¹⁸ Est-ce que votre chien vous suit? ¹⁹ Il m'a toujours suivi; mais il devient vieux, et je ne crois pas qu'il me suivra plus longtemps. ²⁰ Les chiens ne vivent pas aussi longtemps que les hommes. ²¹ Bien que celui-ci n'ait vécu que dix ans, il est déjà vieux, et il faut que je me résolve à en acheter un autre. ²² Nous vivrons désormais dans la ville.

THEME 38.

¹ You will take; they have taken; take it; we took it; will she not take it? I wish that you may take it; thou wast taking; I have taken nothing. ² We would put; that they may put; let us put it there; he put it in his pocket; will he not put it there? I shall put it where I wish; he will have put it on the table; I never put them there. ³ They were living; he lived; do we not live? live! I wish that the king may live long; you would have lived. ⁴ She sews; they were sewing; I did not sew; if you sew, we shall sew also; that he might sew; let us sew. ⁵ That he may resolve; I have resolved; we shall resolve; would he not resolve? they were resolving; let us resolve; she would not have resolved. ⁶ What have you done with (*de*) the handkerchiefs which I was sewing? ⁷ I put them in your trunk. ⁸ I did not permit you to (*de*) put them there. ⁹ If I had not put them there, my brother would not have been able to go away. ¹⁰ Which trunk has he taken? ¹¹ He has taken the old black trunk which he took last year. ¹² Have you learned why he leaves? ¹³ My father permits him to leave, in order that he may learn English. ¹⁴ Does he not understand English? ¹⁵ He does not understand it yet, but he is beginning to learn it, and he will understand it soon. ¹⁶ You take English lessons also, I believe. ¹⁷ No, sir; but I take German lessons. ¹⁸ This child must understand German, if he is going to Germany. ¹⁹ Where have

you put your little dog? ²⁰ It is dead; it lived only three months. ²¹ I took your pencil, and put it on the table; but it is no longer there. ²² Put your book where you will be able to find it again.

LESSON XXXIX.

IRREGULAR VERBS IN *ir*.

1. A number of verbs ending in the infinitive in *ir* are conjugated alike, and quite regularly.

Such are **partir** *set out, leave, depart*, **sortir** *go out*, **sentir** *feel*, **mentir** *lie, tell a lie*, **repentir** (reflexive) *repent*, **dormir** *sleep*, **servir** *serve*.

a. These verbs are more properly regular than the so-called regular verbs of the second conjugation (like *finir*), since they do not, like the latter, mix together simple and inceptive forms. But the verbs like *finir* are much the more numerous.

2. The verb *partir* is thus conjugated:

| | | | | | |
|------------|-----------|---------|--------------------------|------|----------|
| 38. | partir | partant | parti | pars | partis |
| | partirai | partais | être parti | pars | partisse |
| | partirais | partie | <small>etc. etc.</small> | | |

Inflection of the pres. indic. and impv.:

| PRES. INDIC. | | | IMPV. | |
|--------------|---------|--|-------|---------|
| pars | partons | | | partons |
| pars | partez | | pars | partez |
| part | partent | | | |

3. Of the others in *tir*, it will be enough to give the principal parts:

| | | | | | |
|------------|----------|-----------|---------|--------|----------|
| 39. | sortir | sortant | sorti | sors | sortis |
| 40. | sentir | sentant | senti | sens | sentis |
| 41. | mentir | mentant | menti | mens | mentis |
| 42. | repentir | repentant | repenti | repens | repentis |

a. Like these verbs (Lat. *partiri, sortiri, sentire, mentiri, -pœnitere*) are conjugated their compounds:

| | |
|----------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| départir, <i>distribute</i> | repartir, <i>set out again</i> |
| ressortir, <i>go out again</i> | |
| consentir, <i>consent</i> | pressentir, <i>foresee</i> |
| démentir, <i>give the lie to</i> | ressentir, <i>feel, resent</i> |

b. But **répartir** *distribute* is like **finir**; and so also **ressortir** when it means *resort*; and **assortir** *assort* is not a compound of **sortir**, and is regular.

c. As to the auxiliary with **partir** and **sortir**, see XXVIII. 7.

4. Of the two verbs in **mir** and **vir**, the principal parts are as follows:

| | | | | |
|------------|---------|-------|------|--------|
| 43. dormir | dormant | dormi | dors | dormis |
| 44. servir | servant | servi | sers | servis |

Their pres. indic. (with which the imperative persons, as usual, agree) are these:

| PRES. INDIC. | | PRES. INDIC. | |
|--------------|---------|--------------|---------|
| dors | dormons | sers | servons |
| dors | dormez | sers | servez |
| dort | dorment | sert | servent |

a. Like these verbs (Lat. **dormire**, **servire**) are conjugated their compounds:

| | | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| endormir, <i>put to sleep</i> | redormir, <i>sleep again</i> | rendormir, <i>put to sleep again</i> |
| desservir, <i>clear (a table)</i> | | |

But **asservir** *subjugate* is regular (like **finir**).

b. The phrase **se servir de** *use, make use of*, was given at XXIX. 7b.

5. Somewhat less regular is **assaillir** *assail*, which has a present indicative like a verb of the first conjugation.

a. The principal parts are:

| | | | | |
|---------------|------------|----------|----------|-----------|
| 45. assaillir | assaillant | assailli | assaille | assaillis |
|---------------|------------|----------|----------|-----------|

The pres. indic. and impv. are:

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|--------------|------------|----------|------------|
| assaille | assaillons | | assaillons |
| assailles | assaillez | assaille | assaillez |
| assaille | assaillent | | |

b. Like **assaillir** is conjugated another compound of **saillir**, **tressaillir**, *be startled*

but the simple **saillir** (Lat. **salire**) *gush forth* is like **finir**; in the sense of *jut out, project*, it has the 3d persons pres. indic. like **assaillir**.

6. The verb **cueillir** *gather* is still further irregular, in having also the future and conditional made after the manner of the first conjugation: thus,

ture. ¹⁶ Qui est cette femme, qui est vêtue de noir ? ¹⁷ C'est ma tante ; depuis la mort de son enfant elle se vêt toujours ainsi. ¹⁸ Elle a failli perdre aussi son mari. ¹⁹ J'ai ouï dire que les soldats avaient fui devant l'ennemi. ²⁰ On a menti ; les soldats français ne furent jamais. ²¹ Celui qui ment doit être puni. ²² Ne sortez pas, mon ami ; il fait trop froid.

THEME 39.

¹ Let us set out ; they were setting out ; she would depart ; shall you not set out ? that he might depart ; she has departed ; you would have departed. ² Is he not sleeping ? she slept ; if he had slept ; sleep ! that you may sleep ; if we had not slept. ³ You clothe ; they had not clothed ; do I not clothe ? that you might clothe ; let us clothe. ⁴ She gathers flowers ; we will gather flowers for her ; she has gathered them for us ; why have you not gathered any flowers ? ⁵ Go out of this room ; he will not go out of it ; we have gone out of the town ; he went out by the door ; you will go out by the window. ⁶ Why does this woman always dress herself in black ? ⁷ She dresses herself in black because she has lost her husband. ⁸ Let us gather some violets in order to give to her. ⁹ Where have you gathered these beautiful flowers ? ¹⁰ We went out of the house and gathered them in the garden. ¹¹ Did your cousins go away in the large carriage ? ¹² No, they made use of the small carriage. ¹³ Where have they gone ? ¹⁴ They did not sleep at all here. ¹⁵ I go to sleep very early, when I am in (à) the country. ¹⁶ We shall sleep before going out. ¹⁷ Has the teacher gone away without saying farewell to us ? ¹⁸ Although he has lied to us, we still feel friendship for him. ¹⁹ Why do these women dress themselves so badly ? ²⁰ They are very poor, and they use old dresses, which some one has given them. ²¹ Let us flee, while our enemies sleep.

LESSON XL.

OTHER IRREGULAR VERBS IN *ir*.

1. In this Lesson will be given the rest of the irregular verbs having the infinitive ending in *ir*.

2. The verb *courir* *run* is thus conjugated :

| | | | | |
|-------------------|-----------------|--------------------|--------------|-----------------|
| 52. <i>courir</i> | <i>courant</i> | <i>couru</i> | <i>cours</i> | <i>COURS</i> |
| <i>courrai</i> | <i>courrais</i> | <i>avoir couru</i> | <i>cours</i> | <i>courasse</i> |
| <i>courrais</i> | <i>coure</i> | etc. etc. | | |

The pres. indic. and impv. are :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|--------------|----------------|--------------|----------------|
| <i>cours</i> | <i>courons</i> | | <i>courons</i> |
| <i>cours</i> | <i>courez</i> | <i>cours</i> | <i>courez</i> |
| <i>court</i> | <i>courent</i> | | |

a. Note the double pronunciation of the *rr* in the (abbreviated) fut. and cond. of this verb (73*d*).

b. Like *courir* (Lat. *currere*) are conjugated its compounds :

| | | |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>accourir, run up</i> | <i>encourir, incur</i> | <i>recourir, recur</i> |
| <i>concourir, concour</i> | <i>parcourir, traverse</i> | <i>secourir, succor</i> |
| <i>discourir, discourse</i> | | |

c. An old form of the infinitive, *courre*, is sometimes used as a hunting term.

3. Four verbs—namely, *offrir* *offer*, *souffrir* *suffer*, *ouvrir* *open*, and *couvrir* *cover*—have *ert* as ending of the past participle, and *e* of the present indicative : thus,

| | | | | |
|----------------------|----------------|---------------------|--------------|-----------------|
| a. 53. <i>offrir</i> | <i>offrant</i> | <i>offert</i> | <i>offre</i> | <i>offris</i> |
| <i>offrirai</i> | <i>offrais</i> | <i>avoir offert</i> | <i>offre</i> | <i>offrisse</i> |
| <i>offrirais</i> | <i>offre</i> | etc. etc. | | |

The pres. indic. and impv. are :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|---------------|----------------|--------------|----------------|
| <i>offre</i> | <i>offrons</i> | | <i>offrons</i> |
| <i>offres</i> | <i>offrez</i> | <i>offre</i> | <i>offrez</i> |
| <i>offre</i> | <i>offrent</i> | | |

b. Of the others, it will be enough to give the principal parts :

| | | | | |
|---------------------|-----------|----------|---------|----------|
| 54. souffrir | souffrant | souffert | souffre | souffris |
| 55. ouvrir | ouvrant | ouvert | ouvre | ouvris |
| 56. couvrir | couvrant | couvert | couvre | couvris |

c. Of **offrir** (Lat. *offerre*) and **souffrir** (Lat. *sufferre*), there are no compounds ; like **ouvrir** (Lat. *aperire*) and **couvrir** (Lat. *cooperire*) are conjugated their compounds :

| | |
|----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>rouvrir, reopen</i> | <i>entr'ouvrir, half open</i> |
| <i>découvrir, discover</i> | <i>recouvrir, cover again</i> |

4. Certain verbs in *ir* are used in only a few forms :

a. **57. Férir** *strike* (Lat. *ferire*) occurs only in the infinitive (and, very rarely, the past participle **féru**).

b. **58. Issir** *issue* (Lat. *exire*) has only the past participle **issu** (and, according to some, also the present participle **issant**).

c. **Gésir** *lie* (Lat. *jacere*) has only the following parts :

| | | | | |
|------------------|--------|----|-----|----|
| 59. gésir | gisant | —— | gis | —— |
| | gisais | | | |

And of the pres. indic., only the 3d. sing. and the plural persons are in use : thus,

| | |
|-----|--------|
| | gisons |
| | gisez |
| gît | gisent |

especially in the phrase **ci gît** *here lies*, on a tombstone. As to the pronunciation of *s* in this verb, see 74c.

5. The remaining verbs in *ir* change the root-vowel in a part of their forms—namely, in those persons of the three present tenses which are accented on the root, being either monosyllables or followed only by a mute syllable.

6. The verbs **venir** *come* and **tenir** *hold* are conjugated precisely alike. They change their *e* to *ie* in the accented persons ; and also in the future and conditional, which are irregularly formed.

a. Of **venir** the whole conjugation has been already given (XXXI. 10) ; it takes (XXVIII. 6) **être** as auxiliary. Only its principal parts will be repeated here :

| | | | | |
|------------------|--------|------|-------|-------|
| 60. venir | venant | venu | viens | viens |
|------------------|--------|------|-------|-------|

b. The verb **tenir** is thus conjugated :

| | | | | |
|------------------|--------|------------|-------|--------|
| 61. tenir | tenant | tenu | tiens | tins |
| tiendrai | tenais | avoir tenu | tiens | tinsse |
| tiendrais | tienne | etc. etc. | | |

The inflection of the present tenses is as follows :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | | PRES. SUBJ. | |
|--------------|----------|-------|--------|-------------|----------|
| tiens | tenons | | tenons | tienne | tenions |
| tiens | tenez | tiens | tenez | tiennes | teniez |
| tient | tiennent | | | tienne | tiennent |

c. Like **venir** (Lat. *venire*) and **tenir** (Lat. *tenere*) are conjugated their numerous and much-used compounds :

| | | |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| advenir, <i>happen</i> | parvenir, <i>arrive</i> | ressouvenir, <i>remind again</i> |
| avenir, <i>happen</i> | intervenir, <i>intervene</i> | |
| circonvenir, <i>circumvent</i> | prévenir, <i>anticipate</i> | |
| contrevenir, <i>contra-vene</i> | provenir, <i>proceed</i> | |
| convenir, <i>agree</i> | redevenir, <i>become again</i> | se souvenir, <i>remember</i> |
| devenir, <i>become</i> | revenir, <i>return, come back</i> | subvenir, <i>assist</i> |
| disconvenir, <i>disagree</i> | | survenir, <i>come in addition</i> |
| abstenir, <i>abstain</i> | détenir, <i>detain</i> | obtenir, <i>obtain</i> |
| appartenir, <i>belong</i> | entretenir, <i>entertain</i> | retenir, <i>retain</i> |
| contenir, <i>contain</i> | maintenir, <i>maintain</i> | soutenir, <i>sustain</i> |

d. For the auxiliary used with **venir** and most of its compounds, see XXVIII. 6a.

7. The verb **mourir** *die* changes its *ou* to *eu* in the accented forms, and is also irregular in the future and conditional. It is conjugated thus :

| | | | | |
|-------------------|---------|-----------|-------|----------|
| 62. mourir | mourant | mort | meurs | mourus |
| mourrai | mourais | être mort | meurs | mourusse |
| mourrais | meure | etc. etc. | | |

The inflection of the three present tenses is :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | | PRES. SUBJ. | |
|--------------|---------|-------|---------|-------------|----------|
| meurs | mourons | | mourons | meure | mourions |
| meurs | mourez | meurs | mourez | meures | mouriez |
| meurt | meurent | | | meure | meurent |

With **mourir** (Lat. **mori**) are formed no compounds.

a. For the pronunciation of **rr** in the fut. and cond., see 73d.

8. Of the simple verb **querir** *seek*, only the infinitive is in use; but its compounds are fully conjugated.

As example may be taken **acquérir** *acquire*. The change of the root-vowel **e** is to **ie** (as in **venir**); the future is made as in **mourir** and **courir**.

| | | | | | |
|------------|------------|-------------|--------------|----------|----------|
| 63. | acquérir | acquérant | acquis | acquiens | acquis |
| | acquerrai | acquérerais | avoir acquis | acquiens | acquises |
| | acquerrais | acquière | etc. etc. | | |

The inflection of the three present tenses is :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | | PRES. SUBJ. | |
|--------------|-----------|----------|-----------|-------------|------------|
| acquiens | acquérons | | acquérons | acquière | acquérions |
| acquiens | acquérez | acquiens | acquérez | acquières | acquériez |
| acquiert | acquière | | | acquière | acquière |

a. In the same manner are conjugated the other compounds of **-querir** (Lat. **querere**) :

| | | |
|---------------------------|----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| conquérir, <i>conquer</i> | s'enquérir, <i>inquire</i> | reconquérir, <i>reconquer</i> |
| | | requérir, <i>require</i> |

9. The verb **bouillir** *boil* is conjugated nearly like **partir** (XXXIX. 2), being irregular only in the singular of the present indicative and imperative. Thus :

| | | | | | |
|------------|-------------|-----------|---------------|------|------------|
| 64. | bouillir | bouillant | bouilli | bous | bouillis |
| | bouillirai | bouillais | avoir bouilli | bous | bouillisse |
| | bouillirais | bouille | etc. etc. | | |

Inflection of the pres. indic. and impv. :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|--------------|-----------|-------|-----------|
| bous | bouillons | | bouillons |
| bous | bouillez | bous | bouillez |
| bout | bouillent | | |

a. Like **bouillir** (Lat. **bullire**) are conjugated its compounds :
ébouillir, *boil away* **rebouillir**, *boil again*

VOCABULARY.

(Besides the verbs given in the Lesson.)

| | |
|--------------------------------|--|
| l'air m., <i>the air</i> | le pied, <i>the foot</i> |
| le bas, <i>the stocking</i> | le soulier, <i>the shoe</i> |
| la poule, <i>the fowl, hen</i> | la basse-cour, <i>the poultry-yard</i> |
| froid, <i>cold</i> | chaud, <i>warm</i> |

EXERCISE 40.

¹ Est-ce que vous ne vous sentez pas bien, mon enfant ?
² J'ai mal à la tête, et je souffre beaucoup. ³ Il vous faut de l'air frais ; j'ouvrirai la fenêtre. ⁴ Si vous ouvrez la fenêtre, j'aurai froid. ⁵ Alors sortez, et courez dans le jardin. ⁶ Nous avons beaucoup couru ce matin, et nous avons mal aux pieds. ⁷ Nous courrons ce soir, si vous voulez. ⁸ Que faites-vous là ? ⁹ Je fais bouillir de l'eau ; nous allons avoir du thé. ¹⁰ Il faut que l'eau bouille, pour faire de bon thé. ¹¹ Lorsque j'aurai fait le thé, je vous en offrirai. ¹² Pourquoi ne m'avez-vous pas offert aussi des œufs ? ¹³ Les œufs ne m'appartiennent pas ; aussi je ne vous les offre pas. ¹⁴ Qu'est-ce que vous tenez dans la main ? ¹⁵ Un livre qui appartient à mon frère ; il a appartenu autrefois à Monsieur B. ¹⁶ Mon ami mourut l'année dernière. ¹⁷ Il était devenu très pauvre, et depuis qu'il est mort, on a dû vendre tout ce qui lui appartenait. ¹⁸ Mon père a acquis beaucoup de biens en travaillant ; si vous travaillez, vous en acquerrez aussi. ¹⁹ Je n'ai pas ouvert ce livre-là. ²⁰ Que quelqu'un ouvre la porte, ou je mourrai. ²¹ On vient d'ouvrir la porte de la basse-cour, et toutes les poules courent dans le jardin. ²² Si nous avions des bas et des souliers, nous ne souffririons pas du froid aux pieds.

THEME 40.

¹ They run ; we were running ; you ran ; he will run ; she would run ; let us run ; that I may run ; that thou mightest run. ² Offer ! we shall offer it to him ; they would have offered them to me ; I offered her nothing ; thou never offerest anything to anybody. ³ He holds ; will you not hold ? hold ! they were holding ; that she might hold ; we should have held ; do not hold it ; that he may hold them. ⁴ Why do not these children run ? ⁵ Their feet have become cold, and they cannot run any more. ⁶ If you run

very fast, your feet will become warm. ⁷ These poor children have been able to obtain neither shoes nor stockings. ⁸ Their father has died, and they have become very poor. ⁹ He died six months ago ; and now their mother is dying. ¹⁰ We have offered her a fowl, but she suffers so much that she cannot eat. ¹¹ They are suffering from headache. ¹² If they opened the window, they would have more air, and they would suffer less. ¹³ Where does he acquire all his money ? ¹⁴ He has sold all that which belonged to him, but he has not acquired much. ¹⁵ If he works well, he will acquire more. ¹⁶ This dress belongs to me, and I will offer it to her. ¹⁷ Let us offer to the children the old shoes which have belonged to us. ¹⁸ The water boils ; make the tea. ¹⁹ Give me some boiling water, and I will make it. ²⁰ If my uncle does not come back to-day, he will come back certainly to-morrow.

LESSON XLI.

IRREGULAR VERBS IN *oir*.

1. The verbs ending in *oir* are much less numerous than the irregular ones in *ir* and in *re*, but some of them are very common and important.

We may take up first among them a little group ending in the infinitive in *evoir*, which in many grammars are treated as a separate regular conjugation—called the third, the verbs in *re* being reckoned as the fourth.

2. The verb *recevoir* *receive* is thus conjugated :

| | | | | |
|---------------------|----------|------------|--------|---------|
| 65. recevoir | recevant | reçu | reçois | reçus |
| recevrai | recevais | avoir reçu | reçois | reçusse |
| recevrais | reçoive | etc. etc. | | |

The inflection of the present tenses is :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | | PRES. SUBJ. | |
|--------------|-----------|--------|----------|-------------|-----------|
| reçois | recevons | | recevons | reçoive | recevions |
| reçois | recevez | reçois | recevez | reçoives | receviez |
| reçoit | reçoivent | | | reçoive | reçoivent |

a. Like **recevoir** are conjugated the other compounds of **-cevoir** (Lat. **-cipere**) ; namely,

concevoir, *conceive* **décevoir**, *deceive* **percevoir**, *receive*
apercevoir, *perceive*

3. In the same manner is conjugated also the verb **devoir** *owe*, which has been given in full above (XXVI. 12 etc.) ; its principal parts are :

66. **devoir** **devoir** **dû** **dois** **due**

a. Like **devoir** (Lat. **debere**) is conjugated its compound :
redevoir, *owe again*

4. The verb **voir** *see* is thus conjugated :

67. **voir** **voyant** **vu** **vois** **vis**
verrai **voyais** **avoir vu** **vois** **visse**
verrais **voie** *etc. etc.*

The present tenses are thus inflected :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | | PRES. SUBJ. | |
|--------------|--------|-------|--------|-------------|---------|
| vois | voyons | | voyons | voie | voyions |
| vois | voyez | vois | voyez | voies | voyiez |
| voit | voient | | | voie | voient |

a. Like **voir** (Lat. **videre**) are conjugated two of its compounds :

revoir, *see again* **entrevoir**, *see partly*

b. But two other compounds, **prévoir** *foresee* and **pourvoir** *provide*, make regular futures and conditionals, and the latter also has the preterit in **us** instead of **is** : thus,

68. **prévoir** **prévoyant** **prévu** **prévois** **prévis**
prévoirai **prévoyais** **avoir prévu** **prévois** **prévisse**
prévoirais **prévoie** *etc. etc.*

c. Of **pourvoir** it will be enough to give the principal parts :

69. **pourvoir** **pourvoyant** **pourvu** **pourvois** **pourvus**

d. Like **pourvoir** is conjugated its compound

dépourvoir, *deprive*

5. Of the verb **choir** *fall*, only the infinitive and the past participle **chu** are now in use.

But its compound **déchoir** *fall, decay* is still conjugated in full.

| | | | | |
|--------------------|-------------|-------------|---------|----------|
| 70. déchoir | [déchoyant] | déchu | déchois | déchus |
| décherrai | déchoyais | avoir déchu | déchois | déchusse |
| décherrais | déchoie | etc. etc. | | |

The pres. indic. and impv. are thus inflected :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | |
|--------------|-----------|---------|-----------|
| déchois | déchoyons | | déchoyons |
| déchois | déchoyez | déchois | déchoyez |
| déchoit | déchoient | | |

a. The pres. pple is not in use, and in its value as gerund after **en** (X. 3*c, d*) is found **déchéant**.

b. The other compound of **choir** (Lat. *cadere*), namely **échoir**, *fall in*

is conjugated in the same way, but is used in only a few of its forms, chiefly the 3*d* persons singular: thus, pres. **échoit** (sometimes **échet**), pret. **échet**, gerund **échéant**, etc.

6. The verb **pleuvoir** *rain* is impersonal, or used only in the third persons singular (XXX. 1); it is thus conjugated :

| | | | | |
|---------------------|----------|-----------|-------|------|
| 71. pleuvoir | pleuvant | plu | pleut | plut |
| pleuvra | pleuvait | avoir plu | — | plût |
| pleuvrait | pleuve | etc. etc. | | |

a. Of **pleuvoir** (Lat. *pluere*) there are no compounds.

7. For **apparaître** and **comparaître**, see XXXVI. 5*d*.

VOCABULARY.

(Besides the verbs given in the Lesson.)

| | |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| le projet, <i>the plan, project</i> | le paquet, <i>the package</i> |
| le besoin, <i>the need, requirement</i> | la difficulté, <i>the difficulty</i> |
| le pouvoir, <i>the power</i> | peut-être, <i>perhaps, maybe</i> |

EXERCISE 41.

¹ J'ai reçu une lettre de mon ami. ² Qu'est-ce qu'il vous écrit? ³ Il me dit qu'il me verra demain, s'il ne pleut pas. ⁴ Il pleuvra certainement, et je ne le reverrai jamais. ⁵ Il faut que vous le voyiez avant de partir. ⁶ Je ne conçois point pourquoi vous voulez partir. ⁷ Il a conçu un projet,

dont il n'aperçoit pas encore toutes les difficultés. ⁸ N'avez-vous pas reçu le petit paquet dont je vous ai parlé ? ⁹ Nous ne l'avions pas trouvé, mais nous le voyons maintenant. ¹⁰ Est-ce que vous êtes pourvu d'argent pour tous vos besoins ? ¹¹ Oui, et nous en recevrons encore le mois prochain. ¹² Avez-vous vu le roi depuis qu'il est déchu du pouvoir ? ¹³ Il partit pour l'Angleterre, et il n'a jamais revu la France. ¹⁴ Avez-vous vu les soldats qui partaient pour la guerre ? ¹⁵ Je ne les ai pas vus ; il pleuvait, et je n'ai pas pu sortir. ¹⁶ Nous les reverrons dans quelques jours. ¹⁷ Avez-vous reçu des lettres du général B. ? ¹⁸ Les lettres ne sont pas encore venues ; il faut qu'il les reçoive demain. ¹⁹ Pourquoi n'êtes vous pas venu me voir hier ? ²⁰ Parce qu'il a tant plu. ²¹ Dès que je vous verrai chez nous, je vous montrerai le cadeau que je viens de recevoir de lui.

THEME 41.

¹ They will receive ; let us receive ; he received ; she was receiving ; you receive ; that she might receive ; we have received them ; they had received it ; that I may have received her. ² Do you see ? I have seen nothing ; he will see what I saw ; let us see ; did you not see him ? they will have seen us ; though he had not seen them, they saw him. ³ It rained ; it would have rained if it had not been too cold ; it has not rained to-day, but it will rain to-morrow ; if it rains to-day, it will not snow. ⁴ Have you seen the general to-day ? ⁵ No, but I saw him yesterday, and I shall perhaps see him to-morrow. ⁶ You will not see him again ; he has gone off to the war. ⁷ You have received a letter ; is it not so ? ⁸ Here is the letter which we have received this morning ; we shall receive a package this evening. ⁹ I shall receive money from my father next week. ¹⁰ He must receive many letters from us. ¹¹ Do you not perceive the difficulties of the plan which you have con-

ceived? ¹² I perceive all the difficulties, but I must provide for (à) the needs of my family. ¹³ Although I have seen my father, I have received no money from him. ¹⁴ Whom did you see in Paris? ¹⁵ I saw no one of my friends. ¹⁶ It rained so much that nobody came to see me. ¹⁷ Although it rained a good deal, I went to the shops, but I saw nothing there. ¹⁸ If it had not rained, I should have seen you there. ¹⁹ Does it not rain? ²⁰ I do not think that it rains now; but it will perhaps rain this evening. ²¹ We could see nothing, for it was night.

LESSON XLII.

THE REMAINING IRREGULAR VERBS (IN *oir* AND *er*).

1. The remaining verbs in *oir* are more irregular in their conjugation, and for the most part show changes of radical vowel in the inflection of their present tenses.

2. Of the extremely common verb *vouloir* *wish, be willing, will*, the conjugation has already (XXIV. 6 etc.) been given in full. The principal parts are here repeated:

72. vouloir voulant voulu veux voulos

a. Of *vouloir* (Lat. *velle*) there are no compounds.

3. The verb *valoir* *be worth, have the value of* is conjugated nearly like *vouloir*. Thus:

73. valoir valant valu vaux valus
 vandrai valais avoir valu vaux valusse
 vandrais vaille etc. etc.

The inflection of the present tenses is:

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | | PRES. SUBJ. | |
|--------------|--------|-------|--------|-------------|---------|
| vaux | valons | | valons | vaille | valions |
| vaux | valez | vaux | valez | vailles | valiez |
| vaut | valent | | | vaille | vailent |

seoir *seat one's self, sit down*—is conjugated in full. Thus :

| | | | | |
|--------------------|----------|-------------|---------|---------|
| 78. asseoir | asseyant | assis | assieds | assis |
| assiérai | asseyais | avoir assis | assieds | assisse |
| assiérais | asseye | etc. etc. | | |

The usual inflection of the present tenses is this :

| PRES. INDIC. | | IMPV. | PRES. SUBJ. | |
|--------------|----------|----------|-------------|----------|
| assieds | asseyons | asseyons | asseye | asseyons |
| assieds | asseyez | assieds | asseyez | asseyez |
| assied | asseyent | | asseye | asseyent |

a. The above are the more usual and accepted forms. But a variety of others are occasionally met with : thus, pres. indic. and impv. **assois**, **assoyons**, etc. ; impf. **assoyais** ; pres. subj. **assoie** ; fut. **assoirai**, or **asseyerai**. The compound **rasseoir** *seat again* is conjugated like **asseoir**.

b. Of the simple verb **seoir** (Lat. *sedere*) in the sense of *sit* are used almost only the infinitive and the two participles (**seyant** and **sis**) ; but in the sense of *sit on, fit* (said of clothes and the like), the 3d persons **sied siéent**, **seyait seyaient**, **siéra siéront**, **siée siéent**, are also met with. The compound **messeoir** *fit badly, misfit* is used in the same forms, except the infinitive.

c. Another compound of **seoir**—namely **surseoir** *supersede*—lacks the pres. participle and the parts made from it, and has the pres. indic. **sursois** and the fut. **surseoirai**.

9. **79.** Of the old verb **souloir** *be accustomed* (Lat. *solere*) is left in use only the imperfect **soulait**, itself antiquated and rare.

10. **80.** Of the common auxiliary **avoir** *have* the complete conjugation was given above (X.).

a. The sole compound of **avoir** (Lat. *habere*), namely **ravoir** *have again*, is used only in the infinitive.

11. There are only two irregular verbs having the infinitive ending in **er**.

One of these, **envoyer** *send*, is irregular only in the future and conditional (which are like those from **voir**).

It is thus conjugated :

| | | | | |
|--------------------|----------|--------------|--------|-----------|
| 81. envoyer | envoyant | envoyé | envoie | envoyai |
| enverrai | envoyais | avoir envoyé | envoie | envoyasse |
| enverrais | envoie | etc. etc. | | |

a. Like **envoyer** is conjugated its compound :

renvoyer, *send back*

12. The other irregular verb in *er*—namely, *aller* *go*—has been conjugated in full above (XXVII. 3 etc.). Its principal parts are repeated here :

82. *aller* *allant* *allé* *vais* *allai*

13. 83. The common auxiliary *être* *be* is, like *aller*, made up of the forms of more than one root. Its complete conjugation was given above (XI).

a. Of *être* (Lat. *esse, stare*) there is no compound.

VOCABULARY.

le tailleur, the tailor

le cordonnier, the shoemaker

le manteau, the cloak

le franc, the franc

près de, near to, near

la couturière, the dressmaker

la botte, the boot

le récit, the tale, story

le feu, the fire

autour de, around, about

EXERCISE 42.

¹ Qui vous a envoyé cet habit? ² Mon tailleur me l'envoya il y a deux jours; mais il ne me sied pas bien. ³ Vous le lui renverrez, n'est-ce pas? ⁴ Il vaut mieux en acheter un autre. ⁵ Allons, nous irons chez la couturière acheter un manteau. ⁶ Celui que vous portiez l'hiver dernier vous seyait trop mal. ⁷ Je vous en donnerai un qui vous siéra mieux. ⁸ Asseyez-vous pendant que je le cherche. ⁹ Est-ce que celui-ci vous plaît? ¹⁰ Combien vaut-il? ¹¹ Il vaut cent vingt-cinq francs; mais ce manteau-là vaudra deux cents francs. ¹² Mon vieux manteau ne valait que quatre-vingts francs. ¹³ Pourquoi le cordonnier ne m'a-t-il pas envoyé mes bottes? ¹⁴ Le pauvre homme est malade; il les enverra dès qu'il se portera mieux. ¹⁵ Il m'a fait le récit de ses malheurs; et j'en suis tout ému. ¹⁶ Les malheurs des pauvres émeuvent tous les cœurs. ¹⁷ Assieds-toi, mon enfant. ¹⁸ J'ai très froid, madame; il ne faut pas que je m'asseye. ¹⁹ Tu t'assiéras près du feu, n'est-ce pas? ²⁰ Pendant que tu y seras assis, nous enverrons chercher des gâteaux pour toi et ta petite sœur. ²¹ Cela ne vaut pas la peine, madame; nous n'avons pas faim.

THEME 42.

¹ They have sat down ; sit down ; do not sit down there ; I will sit down ; we sat down ; that she may sit down ; he sits down. ² What is that worth ? it is worth nothing ; they were worth ten francs last month ; they will be worth twelve francs to-morrow. ³ That is not worth the trouble. ⁴ Those books are worth more than these. ⁵ Will the dress-maker send you anything to-day ? ⁶ She has already sent me a cloak. ⁷ Does it fit you ? ⁸ No, the things that she sends me never fit me ; I shall send it back to her to-morrow. ⁹ Are you going to take the coat which the tailor has sent you ? ¹⁰ That one was worth a hundred francs, and I shall buy one which is worth (fut.) only seventy-five francs. ¹¹ Who makes your boots ? ¹² An English shoemaker makes them, and they fit me always well. ¹³ I must send [and] buy some. ¹⁴ How much are they worth ? ¹⁵ They are very dear ; they are worth fifty francs. ¹⁶ It is not worth the trouble to (de) show them to me ; I shall not buy them. ¹⁷ It will be better to buy our boots from this poor French shoemaker. ¹⁸ Why have you seated yourselves about the fire ? and what has moved you so much ? ¹⁹ Charles is telling (faire) the tale of the poor king. ²⁰ Sit down also, and hear the tale. ²¹ This tale does not move me, and I do not wish to sit down. ²² The tale is finished ; let us go away.

INDEX OF IRREGULAR VERBS, SIMPLE AND COMPOUND.

The references are to the number in the series of verbs, and to the page where the conjugation is explained.

| | No. | p. | | No. | p. | | No. | p. |
|--------------|-----|-----|--------------|-----|-----|--------------|-----|-----|
| absoudre | 36 | 178 | comparoir | 18 | 168 | décrire | 12 | 164 |
| abstenir | 61 | 187 | complaire | 24 | 172 | décroire | 26 | 172 |
| abstraire | 21 | 171 | comprendre | 30 | 176 | décroitre | 19 | 168 |
| accourir | 52 | 185 | compromettre | 31 | 176 | dédire | 9 | 163 |
| accroire | 26 | 172 | concevoir | 65 | 191 | déduire | 1 | 162 |
| accroître | 19 | 168 | conclure | 29 | 173 | défaillir | 50 | 183 |
| accueillir | 46 | 182 | concourir | 52 | 185 | défaire | 23 | 171 |
| acquérir | 63 | 188 | conduire | 1 | 162 | déjoindre | 17 | 167 |
| admettre | 31 | 176 | confire | 7 | 163 | démencir | 41 | 180 |
| advenir | 60 | 187 | conjoindre | 17 | 167 | démettre | 31 | 176 |
| aller | 82 | 128 | connaître | 18 | 168 | départir | 38 | 180 |
| apercevoir | 65 | 191 | conquérir | 63 | 188 | dépeindre | 16 | 167 |
| apparaître | 18 | 168 | consentir | 40 | 180 | déplaire | 24 | 172 |
| apparaître | 18 | 168 | construire | 2 | 163 | dépourvoir | 69 | 191 |
| appartenir | 61 | 187 | contenir | 61 | 187 | désapprendre | 30 | 176 |
| apprendre | 30 | 176 | contraindre | 15 | 167 | desservir | 44 | 181 |
| assaillir | 45 | 181 | contredire | 9 | 163 | déteindre | 16 | 167 |
| asseoir | 78 | 196 | contrefaire | 23 | 171 | détenir | 61 | 187 |
| astreindre | 16 | 167 | contrevenir | 60 | 187 | détruire | 2 | 163 |
| atteindre | 16 | 167 | convaincre | | 96 | devenir | 60 | 187 |
| attirer | 21 | 171 | convenir | 60 | 187 | dévêtir | 51 | 183 |
| avenir | 60 | 187 | coudre | 34 | 177 | devoir | 66 | 124 |
| avoir | 80 | 58 | courir | 52 | 185 | dire | 9 | 155 |
| bébir | | 92 | courre | 52 | 185 | disconvenir | 60 | 187 |
| boire | 27 | 173 | couvrir | 56 | 186 | discourir | 52 | 185 |
| bouillir | 64 | 188 | craindre | 15 | 167 | disjoindre | 17 | 167 |
| braire | 22 | 171 | croire | 26 | 172 | disparaître | 18 | 168 |
| bruire | 48 | 182 | croître | 19 | 168 | dissoudre | 36 | 178 |
| ceindre | 16 | 167 | cueillir | 46 | 182 | dormir | 43 | 181 |
| choir | 70 | 191 | cuire | 3 | 163 | distraire | 21 | 171 |
| circoncire | 8 | 163 | décevoir | 65 | 191 | duire | 1 | 162 |
| circonscrire | 12 | 164 | déchoir | 70 | 192 | ébouillir | 64 | 188 |
| circonvenir | 60 | 187 | déclore | 28 | 173 | échoir | 70 | 192 |
| clore | 28 | 173 | déconfire | 7 | 163 | éclore | 28 | 173 |
| commettre | 31 | 176 | découdre | 34 | 177 | éconduire | 1 | 162 |
| comparaître | 18 | 168 | découvrir | 56 | 186 | écrire | 12 | 164 |

| | No. | p. | | No. | p. | | No. | p. |
|-----------------|-----|-----|-------------|-----|-----|--------------|-----|-----|
| élire | 11 | 164 | lire | 11 | 164 | quérir | 63 | 188 |
| emboire | 27 | 173 | luire | 5 | 163 | rapprendre | 30 | 176 |
| émettre | 31 | 176 | maintenir | 61 | 187 | rasseoir | 78 | 196 |
| émoudre | 35 | 177 | malfaïre | 23 | 171 | ratteindre | 16 | 167 |
| énuvoïr | 76 | 195 | maudire | 10 | 164 | ravoïr | 80 | 196 |
| empreindre | 16 | 167 | méconnaître | 18 | 168 | reboïre | 27 | 173 |
| enceindre | 16 | 167 | médire | 9 | 163 | rebouïllir | 64 | 188 |
| enclore | 28 | 173 | méfaire | 23 | 171 | recevoïr | 65 | 190 |
| encourir | 52 | 185 | mentir | 41 | 180 | reclure | 29 | 174 |
| endormir | 43 | 181 | mépandre | 30 | 176 | reconduire | 1 | 162 |
| enduire | 1 | 162 | messeoir | 78 | 196 | reconnaître | 18 | 168 |
| enfrendre | 16 | 167 | mettre | 31 | 176 | reconquérir | 63 | 188 |
| enfuir | 47 | 182 | moudre | 35 | 177 | reconstruire | 2 | 163 |
| enjoindre | 17 | 167 | mourir | 62 | 187 | recoudre | 34 | 177 |
| enquérir | 63 | 188 | mouvoïr | 76 | 195 | recourir | 52 | 185 |
| ensuivre | 33 | 177 | naître | 20 | 169 | recouvrir | 56 | 186 |
| entreprendre | 30 | 176 | nuire | 4 | 163 | récrire | 12 | 164 |
| entretenir | 61 | 187 | obtenir | 61 | 187 | recroître | 19 | 168 |
| entrevoïr | 67 | 191 | offrir | 53 | 185 | recueïllir | 46 | 182 |
| entr'ouvoïr | 55 | 186 | oindre | 17 | 167 | recuire | 3 | 163 |
| envoyer | 81 | 196 | omettre | 31 | 176 | redevenir | 60 | 187 |
| épreindre | 16 | 167 | ouïr | 49 | 182 | redevoïr | 66 | 191 |
| éprendre | 30 | 176 | ouvoïr | 55 | 186 | redire | 9 | 163 |
| équivaloïr | 73 | 195 | paître | 18 | 168 | redormir | 43 | 181 |
| êteindre | 16 | 167 | paraître | 18 | 168 | réduire | 1 | 162 |
| être | 83 | 62 | parcouïr | 52 | 185 | réécrire | 11 | 164 |
| êteindre | 16 | 167 | parfaire | 23 | 171 | refaire | 23 | 171 |
| exclure | 29 | 174 | partir | 38 | 180 | rejoindre | 17 | 167 |
| extraire | 21 | 171 | parvenir | 60 | 187 | relire | 11 | 164 |
| faïllir | 50 | 182 | peindre | 16 | 167 | remettre | 31 | 176 |
| faire | 23 | 150 | percevoïr | 65 | 191 | reluire | 5 | 163 |
| falloïr | 74 | 141 | permettre | 31 | 176 | remoudre | 35 | 177 |
| feindre | 16 | 167 | plaindre | 15 | 167 | rendormir | 43 | 181 |
| férir | 57 | 186 | plaïre | 24 | 172 | renaître | 20 | 169 |
| fleurir, florir | | 92 | pleuvoïr | 71 | 192 | rentraïre | 21 | 171 |
| forclore | 28 | 173 | poindre | 17 | 167 | renvoïer | 81 | 196 |
| forfaire | 23 | 171 | poursuivre | 33 | 177 | repaitre | 18 | 168 |
| frïre | 14 | 165 | pourvoïr | 69 | 191 | repartir | 38 | 180 |
| fuir | 47 | 182 | pouvoïr | 75 | 119 | repeindre | 16 | 167 |
| geindre | 16 | 167 | prédire | 9 | 163 | repentir | 42 | 180 |
| gésir | 59 | 186 | prendre | 30 | 175 | repandre | 30 | 176 |
| haïr | | 92 | prescrire | 12 | 164 | requérir | 63 | 188 |
| imboïre | 27 | 173 | pressentir | 40 | 180 | résoudre | 36 | 178 |
| induire | 1 | 162 | prévaloïr | 73 | 195 | ressentir | 40 | 180 |
| inscrire | 12 | 164 | prévenir | 60 | 187 | ressortir | 39 | 180 |
| instruire | 2 | 162 | prévoïr | 68 | 191 | ressouvenir | 60 | 187 |
| interdire | 9 | 163 | produire | 1 | 162 | restreindre | 16 | 167 |
| intervenir | 60 | 187 | promettre | 31 | 176 | reteindre | 16 | 167 |
| introduire | 1 | 162 | promouvoïr | 76 | 195 | retenir | 61 | 187 |
| issir | 58 | 186 | proscrire | 12 | 164 | retraïre | 21 | 171 |
| joindre | 17 | 167 | provenir | 60 | 187 | revaloïr | 73 | 195 |

| | No. | p. | | No. | p. | | No. | p. |
|------------|-----|-----|------------|-----|-----|-------------|-----|-----|
| revenir | 60 | 187 | souloir | 79 | 196 | survivre | 32 | 176 |
| revêtir | 51 | 183 | soumettre | 31 | 176 | taire | 25 | 172 |
| revivre | 32 | 176 | sourdre | 37 | 178 | teindre | 16 | 167 |
| revoir | 67 | 191 | sourire | 13 | 165 | tenir | 61 | 187 |
| rire | 13 | 164 | souscrire | 12 | 164 | traduire | 1 | 162 |
| rouvrir | 55 | 186 | soustraire | 21 | 171 | traire | 21 | 171 |
| saillir | 45 | 181 | soutenir | 61 | 187 | transcrire | 12 | 164 |
| satisfaire | 23 | 171 | souvenir | 60 | 187 | transmettre | 31 | 176 |
| savoir | 77 | 159 | subvenir | 60 | 187 | tressaillir | 45 | 181 |
| secourir | 52 | 185 | suffire | 6 | 163 | vaincre | | 96 |
| séduire | 1 | 162 | suivre | 33 | 177 | valoir | 73 | 194 |
| sentir | 40 | 180 | surcroître | 19 | 168 | venir | 60 | 145 |
| seoir | 78 | 196 | surfaire | 23 | 171 | vêtir | 51 | 183 |
| servir | 44 | 181 | surprendre | 30 | 176 | vivre | 32 | 176 |
| sortir | 39 | 180 | surseoir | 78 | 196 | voir | 67 | 191 |
| souffrir | 54 | 186 | survenir | 60 | 187 | vouloir | 72 | 114 |

INFINITIVE CONSTRUCTIONS.

WITHOUT A PREPOSITION, OR WITH *à* OR *de*, AFTER VERBS.

The following list gives in alphabetical order the verbs which are followed by a dependent infinitive (X. 2*b*), either with *à* or with *de*, or without either (in the latter case the verb has 0 after it in the list) : e.g. **j'aime à lire** *I like to read*, **il achève de parler** *he finishes speaking*, **accourez m'aider** *run to help me*. A prefixed *se* shows that the verb is used reflexively ; a *le* or *lui*, that it has an object, direct or indirect : e.g. **il s'amuse à le faire** *he amuses himself by doing it*, **il le pria de venir** *he begged him to come*, **je lui ai dit de venir** *I told him to come*.

The list does not include verbs having a grammatical subject anticipating an infinitive which is the real or logical subject : e.g. **il m'appartient de rester** *it is my part to remain here*, **il dépend de vous d'y réussir** *it depends upon you to succeed in it*.

For details and illustrations, see the Second Part, §§ 175-83.

l'abaisser *à*, stoop.
s'abstenir *de*, abstain.
aboutir *à*, result (in).
s'accommoder *de*, be pleased (with).
s'accorder *à*, agree.
accourir 0, run.
accoutumer (*intr.*) *de*, accustom.
l', s'accoutumer *à*, accustom.
l'accuser *de*, accuse.
s'acharner *à*, strive.
achever *de*, finish.
l'admettre *à*, admit.
affecter *de*, affect.
affirmer 0, affirm.
s'affliger *de*, be afflicted.
s'agir (*imps.*) *de*, be the question.
l', s'aguerrir *à*, become inured.
le or lui aider à, help.
aimer *à*, love, like.
aimer mieux 0, prefer.

aimer autant 0, like as well.
aller (p. 129) 0, go.
ambitionner *de*, aspire.
l'amener *à*, lead.
s'amuser *à*, be amused.
s'animer *à*, be animated.
l'apercevoir 0, perceive.
l', s'applaudir *de*, praise.
s'appliquer *à*, endeavor.
appréhender *de*, apprehend.
apprendre *à*, learn.
lui apprendre *à*, teach.
s'apprêter *à*, make ready.
l', s'arrêter *à or de*, stop.
arriver *à*, arrive.
aspirer *à*, aspire.
l'assigner *à*, summon.
s'assujettir *à*, subject one's self.
assurer 0, assure.
l', s'astreindre *à*, subject, compel.

s'attacher à, apply.
 s'attendre à, expect.
 attendre de *or* à, await, defer.
 augmenter à, augment.
 l'autoriser à, authorize.
 l'avertir de, inform.
 s'avilir à, debase one's self.
 s'aviser de, bethink one's self.
 avouer 0, confess.
 avoir à, have to.
 avoir beau 0, try in vain.
 avoir raison, tort, etc. de, be right,
 wrong, etc.
 avoir peine, etc., à, be sorry, etc.
 balancer à, hesitate.
 le, se blâmer de, blame.
 le, se borner à, limit.
 brûler de, wish ardently.
 cesser de, cease.
 se chagriner de, grieve.
 le, se charger de, charge. under-
 take.
 chercher à, seek.
 choisir de, choose.
 citer à, summon.
 lui commander de, order.
 commencer de *or* à, begin.
 se complaire à, delight (in), acqui-
 esce.
 compter 0, intend.
 conclure de, conclude. decide.
 concourir à, concur, coöperate.
 le, se condamner à, condemn.
 condescendre à, condescend.
 le conjurer de, beseech.
 lui conseiller de, advise.
 consentir à *or* de, consent.
 consister à, consist (in).
 le, se consoler de, console.
 conspirer à, conspire.
 se consumer à, wear out.

se contenter de, content.
 continuer de *or* à, continue.
 le contraindre de *or* à, compel.
 contribuer à, contribute.
 le convaincre de, convince.
 convenir de, agree, suit.
 le convier à *or* de, invite.
 courir 0, run.
 craindre de, fear.
 croire 0 (p. 172), believe.
 daigner 0, deign.
 décider de, decide.
 le, se décider de, determine.
 déclarer 0, declare.
 dédaigner de, disdain.
 lui défendre de, forbid.
 le défier de, defy.
 délibérer de, deliberate.
 demander à, ask.
 lui demander de, ask.
 demeurer à, linger, delay.
 se dépêcher de, hurry.
 le, se désaccoutumer de, lose the
 habit.
 désirer 0 *or* de, desire.
 se désoler de, grieve.
 le destiner à, destine.
 déterminer de, determine.
 le, se déterminer à, determine.
 lui devoir de, owe it to any one
 devoir 0 (p. 124), ought, be to.
 différer de, defer.
 dire 0, say.
 lui dire de, tell.
 discontinuer de, stop.
 le, se dispenser de, exempt.
 le, se disposer à, dispose.
 le dissuader de, dissuade.
 se divertir à, amuse.
 lui donner à, give.
 douter de, doubt.

| | |
|--|--|
| éclater de (rire), burst out (laughing). | se fâcher de, be angry, be sorry. |
| l'écouter O, hear. | faillir O <i>or</i> de, just miss. |
| lui écrire de, write. | faire O (p. 151), make, cause. |
| s'édifier de, edify. | faire bien, etc., de, do well. |
| s'efforcer de <i>or</i> à, endeavor. | falloir O (p. 141), be necessary, must. |
| s'effrayer de, be afraid. | se fatiguer à, weary one's self. |
| s'émerveiller de, be astonished. | feindre de, feign. |
| l', s'empêcher de, prevent. | le, se féliciter de, congratulate. |
| l', s'employer à, employ. | finir de, finish. |
| s'empresser à <i>or</i> de, hasten. | se flatter de, flatter one's self. |
| l', s'encourager à, encourage. | le, se forcer à <i>or</i> de, force. |
| s'endurcir à, harden. | frémir de, shudder. |
| l', s'engager à <i>or</i> de, recommend, take upon one's self. | gagner à, gain, win. |
| s'enhardir à, grow bold. | se garder de, take care not (to). |
| lui enjoindre de, charge. | gémir de, lament. |
| s'ennuyer de, be bored. | se glorifier de, pride one's self (on). |
| s'enorgueillir de, be proud. | le gronder de, scold. |
| enrager de, be vexed. | l', s'habituer à, habituate. |
| lui enseigner à, teach. | haïr à, hate. |
| l'entendre O, hear. | ne pas haïr de, not hate. |
| s'entendre à, understand. | hasarder de, venture. |
| s'entêter à, be obstinate. | se hasarder à, venture. |
| l'entraîner à, drag. | se hâter de, hasten. |
| entreprendre de, undertake. | hésiter à <i>or</i> de, hesitate. |
| l'envoyer O, send. | s'imaginer O, imagine. |
| s'épuiser à, exhaust one's self. | lui imputer de, impute. |
| espérer O <i>or</i> de, hope. | l'inciter à, incite. |
| essayer à <i>or</i> de, try. | incliner à, incline. |
| s'étonner de, be astonished. | s'indigner de, be indignant. |
| être à, be occupied with, be to be. | l'induire à, induce. |
| être O, go. | s'ingérer de, meddle. |
| s'étudier à, endeavor. | s'inquiéter de, be anxious. |
| éviter de, avoid. | lui inspirer de, inspire. |
| exceller à, excel. | l'instruire à, instruct. |
| l', s'exciter à, excite. | lui interdire de, forbid. |
| l', s'excuser de, excuse. | l', s'intéresser à, interest. |
| l', s'exercer, à practise. | l', s'inviter à, invite. |
| l'exhorter à, exhort. | juger nécessaire, etc., de, think necessary. |
| s'exposer à, expose. | jurer de <i>or</i> O, swear. |

le, se justifier de, justify.
 laisser 0, let, cause.
 laisser de, cease.
 lui laisser à, leave.
 se lasser à *or* de, be tired.
 le, se limiter à, limit.
 le, se louer de, praise.
 lui mander de, send, order.
 manquer à *or* de, miss.
 méditer de, think, intend.
 se mêler de, meddle.
 menacer de, threaten.
 le mener 0, lead.
 mériter de, deserve.
 le, se mettre à, set (about) .
 lui montrer à, show.
 mourir de, long (to).
 négliger de, neglect.
 nier de *or* 0, deny.
 l'obliger de *or* à, oblige.
 s'obstiner à, persist.
 obtenir de, obtain.
 l', s'occuper de *or* à, occupy.
 offrir de, offer.
 s'offrir à, propose one's self.
 omettre de, omit.
 s'opiniâtrer à, be obstinate.
 lui ordonner de, order.
 oser 0, dare.
 oublier de *or* à, forget.
 ouïr 0, hear.
 paraître 0, appear.
 lui pardonner de, pardon.
 parler de, speak.
 parvenir à, arrive (at).
 passer à. pass (time).
 se passer de, do without.
 pencher à, lean, incline.
 penser 0, intend, plan.
 penser à, think.
 lui permettre de, permit.

persévérer à, persevere.
 persister à, persist.
 lui persuader de, persuade.
 se piquer de, plume one's self.
 le, se plaindre de, pity.
 se plaire à, take pleasure.
 le porter à, lead.
 le pousser à, impel.
 pouvoir 0 (p. 119), be able.
 préférer 0 *or* de, prefer.
 le, se préparer à, prepare.
 lui prescrire de, prescribe.
 le, se presser de, urge, hurry.
 présumer de, presume.
 prétendre 0 *or* à, intend, aspire.
 prier de, pray, beg.
 professer de, profess.
 profiter de, profit.
 projeter de, plan.
 promettre de, promise.
 proposer de, propose.
 protester de, protest.
 le provoquer à, incite.
 le punir de, punish.
 lui rappeler de, remind.
 se rappeler 0 *or* de, remember.
 se rassasier de, satisfy one's self.
 le, se rebuter de, forbid, be reluctant.
 lui recommander de, recommend.
 le récompenser de, reward.
 reconnaître de *or* 0, recognize.
 redouter de, dread.
 le réduire à, reduce.
 refuser de, refuse.
 se refuser à, refuse.
 le regarder 0, watch.
 regretter de, regret.
 se réjouir de, rejoice.
 le remercier de, thank.
 renoncer à, give up.

- rentrer 0, come in.
 se repentir de, repent.
 le reprendre de, censure.
 le reprimander de, censure.
 lui reprocher de, reproach (for).
 le requérir de, require.
 se résigner à, be resigned.
 résoudre de, resolve.
 se résoudre à, make up one's mind.
 se ressouvenir de, remember.
 rester à, be left.
 le retenir de, restrain.
 retourner 0, return.
 réussir à, succeed.
 revenir 0, come back (to do).
 revenir de, come back (from doing).
 rêver de, dream.
 rêver à, imagine.
 rire de, laugh.
 risquer à, risk.
 rougir de, blush.
 savoir 0 (p. 159), know how.
 se scandaliser de, be scandalized.
 sembler 0, seem.
 le, se sentir 0, perceive.
 sentir de, feel.
 servir à, be useful.
 le solliciter de *or* à, urge, beg.
 le sommer de, summon.
 songer à, think.
 se soucier de, care.
 souffrir de *or* à, suffer.
 souhaiter de *or* à, wish.
 le soupçonner de, suspect.
 soutenir 0, assert.
 se souvenir de, remember.
 suffire à, be sufficient.
 lui suggérer de, suggest.
 le supplier de, beg.
 le surprendre à, surprise.
 tâcher à *or* de, try.
 tarder à *or* de, be late.
 tendre à, tend, aim.
 tenir à, hold on, wish.
 se tenir de, keep (from).
 tenter de, try.
 travailler à, work.
 trembler de *or* à, tremble.
 trouver à, find.
 le trouver 0, think.
 trouver bon *or* mal de, think well
or ill.
 se tuer à, kill one's self.
 se vanter de, boast.
 venir 0 (p. 146), come.
 venir à, happen.
 venir de (p. 146), have just.
 viser à, aim.
 le voir 0, see.
 se vouer à, devote.
 vouloir 0 (p. 115), wish.

VOCABULARIES TO THE EXERCISES.

I.—FRENCH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

ABBREVIATIONS.

| | | | |
|----------------|---------------------|--------------|---------------------------------|
| <i>adj.</i> | adjective. | <i>irr.</i> | irregular (the list-no. added). |
| <i>adv.</i> | adverb. | <i>It.</i> | Italian. |
| <i>art.</i> | article. | <i>L.</i> | Latin. |
| <i>conj.</i> | conjunction. | <i>LL.</i> | Low or late Latin. |
| <i>f.</i> | feminine noun. | <i>num.</i> | numeral. |
| <i>F.</i> | French. | <i>m.</i> | masculine noun. |
| <i>fr.</i> | from, derived from. | <i>OF.</i> | Old French. |
| <i>G.</i> | German, Germanic. | <i>ppl.</i> | participle. |
| <i>Gr.</i> | Greek. | <i>prep.</i> | preposition. |
| <i>impers.</i> | impersonal. | <i>pron.</i> | pronoun. |
| <i>inf.</i> | infinitive. | <i>refl.</i> | reflexive. |
| <i>interj.</i> | interjection. | <i>v.</i> | verb. |

Words irregularly pronounced have * prefixed, and reference to the Rules of Pronunciation added immediately after them.

A ' before initial *h* shows it to be aspirate (64*a-d*).

References are made in the same manner as above in the text.

Phrases are given and explained under their principal words.

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>à prep.</i> to, toward, unto; at, in; of, for, with, etc. (characterized by); about, in respect <i>or</i> reference to; on, by; from; belonging to. [L. <i>ad</i> .] | <i>agir v.</i> act, behave, proceed, exert one's self: <i>s'agir de impers.</i> concern, be question of, be the matter in hand. [L. <i>agere</i> .] |
| absolument <i>adv.</i> absolutely. [fr. <i>absolu</i> , L. <i>absolutus</i> .] | * <i>aiguille</i> (62 <i>f</i>) <i>f.</i> needle, spire. [L. <i>aciculum</i> .] |
| <i>acheter v.</i> buy, purchase. [LL. <i>ut captare</i> .] | <i>ailleurs adv.</i> elsewhere, some <i>or</i> anywhere else: <i>d'ailleurs</i> , otherwise, besides, moreover. [L. <i>aliorsum</i> .] |
| <i>acquérir v. (irr. 63)</i> acquire, gain. [L. <i>acquiere</i> .] | <i>aimer v.</i> love, like, be fond of <i>or</i> attached to: <i>aimer mieux</i> , like better, prefer. [L. <i>amare</i> .] |
| <i>adieu m.</i> adieu, farewell, good-by. [<i>à Dieu</i> , (I commend you) to God.] | <i>ainsi adv.</i> thus, so, in this <i>or</i> that way, likewise: <i>ainsi que</i> , as, so as, as well as, as also. [L. <i>æque sic or in sic</i> .] |
| <i>a fin adv.</i> to end: <i>a fin de</i> , for the purpose of, in order to, to; <i>a fin que</i> , in order that, that. [<i>à fin</i> .] | <i>air m.</i> air (atmosphere); air, look, mien, aspect: <i>avoir l'air</i> , have the look <i>or</i> aspect; appear, seem to be. [L. <i>aerem</i> .] |
| <i>Afrique f.</i> Africa. | |
| <i>âge m.</i> age. [L. <i>ætaticum</i> .] | |
| <i>âgé adj.</i> (as if <i>ppl.</i> of <i>âger</i>) aged, old, on in years. [fr. <i>âger</i> .] | |

- alentour** *adv.* around, roundabout. [à l'entour, in the neighborhood.]
- allemand** *adj.* German. [OG. *aleman*, *Allemani*.]
- Allemagne** *f.* Germany.
- aller** *v.* (*irr.* 82 ; p. 128) go, be going : allons, come, come on ; s'en aller (XXIX. 7c), go off or away, be going ; y aller de *impers.* concern. [See XXVII. 9b.]
- alors** *adv.* then, at that time ; in that case : alors que, at the time that, when. [L. *ad illam horam*, at that hour.]
- Alpes** *f.* Alps (mountains of Switzerland).
- amener** *v.* bring, lead ; draw on, induce. [fr. *mener*.]
- *amer** (73b) *adj.* bitter, sharp. [L. *amarum*.]
- Amérique** *f.* America
- ami** *m.* amie *f.* friend. [L. *amicum*, *amican*.]
- amitié** *f.* friendship. [L. *amicitiam*.]
- amour** *m. f.* love : amour propre, self-love. [L. *amorem*.]
- amoureux** *adj.* amorous, enamoured, in love (with, de). [fr. *amour*.]
- amuser** *v.* amuse, divert, entertain. [à and *muser*, stare.]
- an** *m.* year (esp'ly in definitions of length of time). [L. *annum*.]
- ancien** *adj.* ancient, old, former. [LL. *antianum*.]
- anciennement** *adv.* anciently, of old. [fr. *ancien*.]
- anglais** *adj.* English. [fr. *angli*, *Angles*.]
- Angleterre** *f.* England.
- animal** *m.* animal, living being. [L. *animal*.]
- année** *f.* year (esp'ly as a continuous space of time). [fr. *an*.]
- *août** (14) *m.* August. [L. *augustum*.]
- apercevoir** *v.* (*irr.* 65) perceive, notice, observe. [L. *ad-percipere*.]
- appartenir** *v.* (*irr.* 61) appertain, belong. [L. *ad-pertinere*.]
- appeler** *v.* (XXI. 3c) call, summon, appeal to. [L. *appellare*.]
- apporter** *v.* bring, convey, procure. [L. *apportare*.]
- apprendre** *v.* (*irr.* 30) apprehend, learn ; teach, make known, in form. [L. *apprehendere*.]
- approcher** *v.* bring near, draw near, approach (to, de) ; s' . . . , approach, draw near (to, de). [fr. *proche*, near.]
- après** *prep.* after, next following : *adv.* afterward, later ; further. proceed . d'après, according to ; après que, after that, after (*conj.*). [L. *ad-pressum*.]
- après-demain** *adv.* day after tomorrow.
- après-midi** *m.* afternoon.
- arbre** *m.* tree. [L. *arbores*.]
- argent** *m.* silver ; money, treasure. [L. *argentum*.]
- armée** *f.* army. [L. *armatam*.]
- arrêter** *v.* arrest, bring to rest, stop, check ; stay, (*of a dog*) point, set . s' . . . , arrest one's self, stop, stay. [fr. *rester*, stay.]
- arriver** *v.* arrive : arrivé, person arrived, arrival. [L. *ad-ripere*, fr. *ad ripam*, to the shore.]
- Asie** *f.* Asia.
- *aspect** (70a) *m.* aspect, appearance. [L. *aspectum*.]
- asseoir** *v.* (*irr.* 78) sit down, take a seat : s' . . . , sit down. [L. *ad-sidere*.]
- assez** *adv.* (V. 4a) enough, sufficiently ; tolerably, fairly, rather. [L. *ad satis*.]
- assiette** *f.* plate. [fr. L. *ad situs*, site.]
- atelier** *m.* workshop, studio. [LL. *hastellarium* (?).]
- attendre** *v.* wait for, await ; wait, stay : s' . . . à, await, expect, be prepared for ; en attendant, while waiting, meanwhile, in the meantime. [L. *attendere*.]
- aucun** *pron.* not any, none, no. [L. *aliquem unum*.]
- au-delà** *adv.* beyond : . . . de, beyond (*prep.*). [au (à le), de, and là. ;

- au-dessous** *adv.* below : . . . **de**, below, beneath (*prep.*). [au (à le), de, and sous.]
au-dessus *adv.* above : . . . **de**, above (*prep.*). [au (à le), de, and sus, sur.]
au-devant *adv.* in front : . . . **de**, in front of, to meet. [au (à le) and devant.]
Auguste *m.* Augustus (first emperor of Rome).
aujourd'hui *adv.* to-day, nowadays. [au (à le) jour, de, and hui, L. *hodie*, to-day.]
auprès *adv.* near, at hand : . . . **de**, near to, in presence of, in the eyes of, before. [au (à le) and près, near.]
aussi *adv.* also, too ; as ; as much, equally ; accordingly. [L. *aliud sic*, else so.]
aussitôt *adv.* as soon : . . . **que**, as soon as (*conj.*). [aussi and tôt, soon.]
autant *adv.* as much or many : . . . **que**, as much as (*conj.*). [L. *aliud tantum*.]
***automne** (69*a*) *m.* autumn. [L.]
autour *adv.* around, roundabout : . . . **de**, around, about (*prep.*). [au (à le) and tour, turn.]
autre *pron.* other (XXVII. 6, 7). [L. *alterum*.]
autrefois *adv.* formerly, of old. [autre and fois, time.]
autrement *adv.* otherwise, differently. [fr. *autre*.]
Autriche *f.* Austria.
autrui *pron.* others than one's self, other people. [fr. *autre*.]
avant *prep.* before, previous to : . . . **de** (*with inf.*), before ; . . . **que**, before that, before (*conj.*). [L. *ab ante*.]
avant-hier *adv.* day before yesterday.
avec *prep.* with, along with, by : **d'avec**, from with, from. [L. *apud hoc*.]
aveugle *adj.* blind. [LL. *aboculum*.]
aveuglément *adv.* blindly. [fr. *aveugle*.]
avoir *v.* (*irr.* 80 ; p. 58) have : **y avoir** (XXX. 4), there is, etc. ; **en avoir à**, have to deal with ; *as auxil.*, see XXVIII. 5-7 ; for phrases, see the nouns used : cf. XIII. 6. [L. *habere*.]
***avril** (68*d*) *m.* April. [L. *aprilis*.]
bal *m.* ball, dance. [fr. L. *ballare*, dance.]
***baptême** (71*a*) *m.* baptism. [fr. Gr.]
***baptiser** (71*a*) *v.* baptize. [fr. Gr.]
bas *adj.* low, base, mean : **à bas**, downward, down ; **en bas**, below, down-stairs. [LL. *bassum*.]
bas *adv.* (XXXI. 9) low, in a low tone.
bas *m.* stocking, hose. [fr. *bas* *adj.*]
basse-cour *f.* poultry yard. [lit'y lower yard.]
bateau *m.* boat : . . . **à vapeur**, steamboat, steamer ; . . . **à voiles**, sailboat, sailing vessel. [LL. *batum*, fr. G.]
bâtir *v.* build. [fr. *bât*, LL. *bas-tum*.]
battre *v.* (XX. 3*c*) beat, strike : **se . . .**, fight, fence. [L. *batuere*.]
beau, bel (VII. 7) *adj.* beautiful, handsome, fine : **avoir beau**, do or try in vain, make useless effort to. [L. *bellum*.]
beaucoup *adv.* (V. 4) much, a good deal, many ; very much, very. [beau and coup, stroke.]
beau-frère *m.* brother-in-law. [beau and frère.]
bel, see *beau*.
Belgique *f.* Belgium.
bénir *v.* bless. [L. *benedicere*.]
berger *m.* shepherd. [LL. *berbicarium*, fr. *berbez*, ram.]
besoin *m.* need, necessity, requirement : **avoir besoin**, have need, be in need or want, need. [?]
beurre *m.* butter. [L. *butyrum*, fr. Gr.]
bibliothèque *f.* library. [Gr.]
bien *adv.* well, rightly ; all right,

- very well ; quite, indeed, truly, surely ; very ; much, many (V. 4b) : *bien que*, though, although. [L. *bene*.]
- bien m.* what is well *or* good, good thing, good ; wealth, fortune : *homme (or femme or gens) de bien*, honest *or* excellent person. [= *bien adv.*]
- bientôt adv.* very soon, soon. [*bien and tôt*, soon.]
- blanc adj.* (VII. 6b) white. [fr. G.]
- bœuf m.* (**bœufs pl.* 61a) ox. [L. *bovem*.]
- boire v. (irr. 27)* drink. [L. *bibere*.]
- bois m.* wood, timber ; wood, forest. [LL. *boscum*, fr. G.]
- bon adj.* good (for, à), excellent ; right ; kind : *à quoi bon*, good for what ? of what use ? what avails it ? *de bonne heure*, in good time, early ; *à bon marché*, *bon marché*, cheap. [L. *bonum*.]
- bonheur m.* happiness, good fortune, felicity, blessing. [L. *bonum augurium*.]
- bonjour m.* good day, good morning, one's greeting *or* compliments. [*bon and jour*, day.]
- botte f.* boot. [fr. G.]
- bouche f.* mouth. [L. *buccam*.]
- bouillir v. (irr. 64)* boil. [L. *bulhære*.]
- boulangier m.* baker. [fr. *boule*, ball, loaf.]
- bouteille f.* bottle. [L. *buticulam*.]
- bras m.* arm. [L. *brachium*.]
- brebis f.* sheep. [L. *berbicem*.]
- brun adj.* brown. [fr. G.]
- **Bruxelles (81c) f.* Brussels.
- ça pron.* (XXIV. 3) that, that thing (*or* person). [fr. *cela*.]
- cadeau m.* gift, present. [L. *catellum*, chainlet.]
- café m.* coffee. [fr. Arabic.]
- campagne f.* field ; fields, country (as distinguished from city). [LL. *campaniam*, fr. *campus*.]
- **cap [71a] m.* cape, headland. [L. *caput*.]
- car conj.* for. [L. *quare*.]
- cas m.* case, hap, event : *en tout cas*, in any case, at any rate ; *en or au cas que (conj.)*, in case that, supposing. [L. *casum*.]
- casser v.* break ; quash. [fr. L. *cassus*.]
- ce, cet pron.* (XI. 2 ; XIII. 2, 3 ; XXIV.) this, that ; it (they, these, those) : *ce qui or que*, that which, what ; *jusqu'à ce que*, until, till. [fr. L. *ecce hoc, ecce istum*.]
- ceci pron.* this. [ce and ci.]
- cela pron.* that. [ce and là : XXIV. 3.]
- celui, celle, etc.* (XXIV. 4) this *or* that one. [L. *ecce illum*, etc.]
- cent num.* hundred (XV.). [L. *centum*.]
- centaine f.* century, five score, a hundred *or* so. [fr. *cent*.]
- centième num.* hundredth, hundredth part. [fr. *cent*.]
- centre m.* centre. [L. *centrum*.]
- cependant adv.* pending *or* during this, meanwhile ; however, nevertheless. [ce and *pendant*.]
- certain adj.* certain, sure ; certain, some, sundry (VIII. 5c). [fr. L. *certus*.]
- certainement adv.* certainly, surely. [fr. *certain*.]
- cet, see ce.*
- chacun pron.* each one, each, every one. [L. *quemque unum*.]
- chaise f.* chair, seat. [L. *cathe-dram*, fr. Gr.]
- chambre f.* chamber, room : *femme de chambre*, lady's maid. [L. *cameram*.]
- champ m.* field : *sur le champ*, on the spot, at once, directly. [L. *campum*.]
- chanter v.* sing. [L. *cantare*.]
- chapeau m.* hat. [fr. OF. *chape*, cape, cape.]
- chapitre m.* chapter. [L. *capitulum*.]
- chaque pron.* (XIV. 6) each, every. [abbrvn. of *chacun*.]
- Charles m.* Charles.
- chasser v.* chase, hunt ; chase

- away, drive off, expel; dismiss (as a servant). [L. *capture.*]
- chat *m.* cat. [L. *cuttum.*]
- château *m.* castle, chateau. [L. *castellum*]
- chaud *adj.* warm: avoir chaud (XIII. 6), be warm, feel warm (of persons); faire chaud (XXXII. 9*a*), be warm (of weather). [L. *calidum.*]
- chemin *m.* road, way: chemin de fer, railroad, railway. [LL. *caminum*, fr. Celtic?]
- cher *adj.* (VIII. 5*c*) dear, costly, precious, loved, valued. [L. *carum.*]
- chercher *v.* seek, look for, try to find: aller chercher, go for, fetch. [L. *circare*, run about.]
- chèrement *adv.* dearly, at much cost, at a high price. [fr. *cher.*]
- cheval *m.* horse: à cheval, on horseback. [L. *caballum.*]
- cheveu *m.* (*gen'y pl.*) hair. [L. *capillum.*]
- chez *prep.* at or to the house of, where (one) lives, with, among. [L. *casa*, in the house.]
- chien *m.* dog. [L. *canem.*]
- Chine *f.* China.
- choisir *v.* chose, choose, select, cull: choisi, select. [fr. G.]
- chose *f.* thing, object, matter, affair: quelque chose, something; toute chose, everything; autre chose, some or any thing else. [L. *causam.*]
- ci *adv.* (XIII. 3, XXIV.) here. [L. *ecce hic.*]
- ciel *m.* (II. 5) heaven, sky, clime; canopy, awning; Heaven. [L. *cælum.*]
- *cinq (72*c*) *num.* five. [L. *quinque.*]
- cinquante *num.* fifty. [L. *quingenta.*]
- cinquième *num.* fifth. [fr. *cinq.*]
- citoyen *m.* citizen. [fr. *cité*, city.]
- cœur *m.* heart; courage, resolution: à cœur ouvert, with open heart, openly, frankly; de bon cœur, with all one's heart, heartily, sincerely. [L. *cor.*]
- col *m.* collar. [L. *collum*, neck.]
- combien *adv.* how much or many? how much or many (*relative*), how, in what measure or degree: combien que, however much. [comme and bien.]
- comédie *f.* comedy; Comédie française, name of a certain company of actors at Paris. [L., fr. Gr.]
- comme *adv. conj.* as, just as, like; in character of, as being. [L. *quomodo.*]
- commencer *v.* commence, begin. [L. *cum-initiare.*]
- comment *adv.* how? how! how (*relative*). [fr. *comme* (-ment, XXXI. 2).]
- comprendre *v.* (*irr.* 30) comprehend, include; understand: y compris, being included, with inclusion of. [L. *comprehendere.*]
- *compte (71*a*) *m.* account, computation, reckoning. [fr. *computer.*]
- *compute (71*a*) *v.* compute, count, reckon [L. *computare.*]
- conclure *v.* (*irr.* 29) conclude; infer. [L. *concludere.*]
- conduire *v.* (*irr.* 1) conduct, lead, guide, manage, drive. [L. *conducere.*]
- confiture *f.* sweetmeat, preserve, jam. [fr. *confire*, L. *conficere*, put together.]
- connaître *v.* (*irr.* 18) know, have knowledge of, be acquainted with, be informed of, have cognizance of. [L. *cognoscere.*]
- constamment *adv.* constantly. [fr. *constant*, L. (XXXI. 4*a*).]
- conte *m.* story, tale. [fr. *conter.*]
- content *adj.* content, satisfied, glad, happy. [L. *contentum.*]
- continuellement *adv.* continually. [fr. *continuel*, fr. *continuer.*]
- contre *prep.* against, in opposition to; in exchange for. [L. *contra.*]
- cordonnier *m.* shoemaker. [lit'y, worker in Cordovan leather.]
- corps *m.* body; corpse. [L. *corpus.*]

- côté *f.* side, part. [fr. L. *costa*, rib.]
- coucher *v.* lay down, put to rest or to bed : se . . . , retire to rest, go to bed. [L. *collocare*.]
- coudre *v.* (*irr.* 34) sew. [L. *consuere*.]
- coup *m.* blow, stroke, hit ; discharge, shot : tout-à-coup, suddenly, all at once ; à coup sûr, assuredly, to a certainty, without fail ; coup d'œil, glance, sudden look ; and compare beaucoup. [L. *colaphum*, fr. Gr.]
- cour *f.* court ; courtyard, yard. [L. *chortem*.]
- courir *v.* (*irr.* 52) run ; be current, circulate ; run after, hunt. [L. *currere*.]
- court *adj.* short, brief, curt. [L. *curtum*.]
- cousin *m.* *cousine f.* cousin. [L. *consobrinum*.]
- couteau *m.* knife. [L. *cultellum*.]
- couturière *f.* seamstress, dressmaker. [fr. *couture*, L. *consuturam*, sewing.]
- couvert *m.* cover, plate etc. for eating, seat at table. [pple of *couvrir*.]
- couvrir *v.* (*irr.* 56) cover, envelop ; fill. [L. *coopere*.]
- craindre *v.* (*irr.* 15) fear, be afraid ; be afraid of, dread. [L. *tremere*, tremble.]
- crayon *m.* pencil. [fr. L. *cretam*, chalk.]
- créer *v.* create. [L. *creare*.]
- croire *v.* (*irr.* 26) believe, think, be of opinion, suppose ; believe to belong, credit ; with *infin.* think one's self. [L. *credere*.]
- croître *v.* (*irr.* 19) grow, increase. [L. *crescere*.]
- cruel *adj.* cruel. [L. *crudelium*.]
- cruellement *adv.* cruelly. [fr. *cruel*.]
- cueillir *v.* (*irr.* 46) collect, gather, pick, cull. [L. *colligere*.]
- *cuiller (73*b*) *f.* spoon. [L. *cochleare*.]
- cuisine *f.* kitchen. [L. *coquinam*.]
- cuisinière *f.* cook. [fr. *cuisine*.]
- dame *f.* lady. [L. *dominam*.]
- Danemark *m.* Denmark.
- dans *prep.* in, into, to. [L. *de intus*.]
- davantage *adv.* yet more, more, further, in addition. [de and *avantage*.]
- de *prep.* (III.-V.) of ; from ; about, respecting ; out of, because of, on account of, for ; with, by, through ; at, in, on ; to ; some or any (IV.) ; than (XV. 9) ; as. [L. *dē*.]
- debout *adv.* on end, in upright position, erect, standing, not thrown down. [de and *bout*, end.]
- décembre *m.* December. [L.]
- déchoir *v.* (*irr.* 70) fall, sink, decay. [L. *decidere*.]
- dedans *adv.* within. [de and *dans*.]
- défier *v.* defy : se . . . de, distrust, doubt. [L. *diffidere*.]
- dégeler *v.* thaw, melt. [dé- (L. *dis*) and *geler*.]
- dehors *adv.* without, outside. [de and *hors*, without.]
- déjà *adv.* already. [dès and *jà*, L. *jam*, now.]
- déjeuner *m.* breakfast. [LL. *disjunare*, relieve of hunger.]
- demander *v.* ask, request. [L. *demandare*.]
- demain *adv.* to-morrow : après-demain, day after to-morrow. [L. *de* and *mane*, in the morning.]
- demeurer *v.* continue, abide, dwell, live. [L. *demorari*.]
- demi *adj.* half : demi-heure, half-hour ; demi-savant, half-learned, sciolist. [L. *dimidium*.]
- dent *f.* tooth. [L. *dentem*.]
- dépêcher *v.* despatch : se . . . , make haste, hasten. [LL. *dispedicare*, dis impede.]
- déplaire *v.* (*irr.* 24) displease, be disagreeable to. [dé- (L. *dis*) and *plaire*.]
- depuis *prep.* from, since, during

- . . . past, for, ago : depuis que, since (*conj.*). [de and puis, then.]
- dernier *adj.* (VIII. 5c) last, concluding ; last past, next preceding the present. [fr. OF. *der-rain*, fr. L. *de retro.*]
- dernièrement *adv.* lastly ; lately, recently. [fr. *dernier.*]
- derrière *prep.* behind. [fr. L. *de retro.*]
- dès *prep.* from, starting from, beginning with, since : dès que, from the time that, as soon as. [L. *de ex ?*]
- descendre *v.* descend, come down, fall. [L. *descendere.*]
- désir *m.* desire, wish. [fr. *désirer*, L. *desiderare.*]
- désormais *adv.* henceforth. [L. *de ipsa hora magis.*]
- *dessous (18*d*) *adv. prep.* under, beneath. [de and sous, L. *subtus.*]
- *dessus (18*d*) *adv. prep.* above, upon, on. [de and sus, L. *susum.*]
- deux *num.* two. [L. *duo.*]
- deuxième (81*c*) *num.* second. [fr. *deux.*]
- devant *prep. adv.* before, in front of, in front : au-devant de, to the front of, so as to meet, to meet. [de and avant (L. *ab ante.*)]
- devenir *v.* (*irr.* 60) become, come to be, turn. [L. *devenire.*]
- devoir *v.* (*irr.* 66) owe, be under obligation, be required, have to, be appointed or intended or destined, be to (*with infin.* : XXVI. 12*f*), be sure to. [L. *debere.*]
- devoir *m.* duty. [inf. of *devoir.*]
- Dieu *m.* God. [L. *deum.*]
- difficile *adj.* difficult, hard. [L. *difficilem*]
- difficulté *f.* difficulty. [L.]
- dimanche *m.* Lord's day, Sunday [L. *dominicum*, of the Lord]
- dîner *v.* dine. [?]
- dîner *m.* dinner. [inf. of *dîner.*]
- dire *v.* (*irr.* 9 ; p. 155) say, tell ; name, appoint. [L. *dicere.*]
- disparaître *v.* (*irr.* 18) disappear, vanish. [dis and paraître.]
- divers *adj.* diverse, different, various. [L. *diversum.*]
- *dix (81*b*, 85*c*) *num.* ten. [L. *decem.*]
- *dix-huit (81*b*) *num.* eighteen. [dix and huit.]
- *dix-huitième (81*b*) *num.* eighteenth. [fr. *dix-huit.*]
- *dixième (81*c*) *num.* tenth. [fr. *dix.*]
- *dix-neuf (81*b*) *num.* nineteen. [dix and neuf.]
- *dix-sept (81*b*) *num.* seventeen. [dix and sept.]
- domestique *adj.* domestic : as *noun*, domestic, servant. [L. *domesticum.*]
- donc *adv.* then ; therefore, consequently ; pray, do (*with impo.*). [L. *ad tunc.*]
- donner *v.* donate, give, bestow. [L. *donare.*]
- dont *adv. pron.* (XXVI. 7) whence ; of whom, whose. [L. *de unde.*]
- dormir *v.* (*irr.* 43) sleep. [L. *dormire.*]
- double *adj.* double. [L. *duplum*]
- doucement *adv.* sweetly, softly, mildly. [fr. *doux.*]
- douter *v.* doubt, question (about, de) : se . . . de, suspect. [L. *dubitare.*]
- doux *adj.* (VII. 8) sweet, soft, pleasant. [L. *dulcem.*]
- douzaine *f.* dozen, twelve or so. [fr. *douze.*]
- douze *num.* twelve. [L. *duodecim.*]
- douzième *num.* twelfth. [fr. *douze.*]
- drap *m.* cloth. [?]
- droit *adj.* direct, straight, right : *adv.* (XXXI. 9) straight, directly. [L. *directum.*]
- droit *m.* right. [L. *directum.*]
- durant *prep.* during, pending. [pple of *durer*, L. *durare.*]
- eau *f.* water. [L. *aquam.*]
- échauffer *v.* warm, heat : s' . . . , become warm or hot, grow excited. [fr. L. *calfacere.*]

- éclore v. (irr. 28) unclose, open, bud, hatch.* [L. *ex* and *claudere*.]
école f. school. [L. *scholam*, fr. Gr.]
écouter v. listen to, hear. [L. *auscultare*.]
écrier v. s' . . . , cry out, exclaim. [e- (L. *ex*) and *crier*, cry.]
écrire v. (irr. 12) write. [L. *scribere*.]
Édouard m. Edward.
effet m. effect, result : en effet, in fact, indeed, really, to be sure. [L. *effectum*.]
église f. church. [L. *ecclesiam*, fr. Gr.]
Égypte f. Egypt.
élève m. one brought up, pupil. [fr. *élever*.]
élever v. raise, elevate ; bring up, educate : s' . . . , rise, arise, go up. [L. *elevare*.]
Elisabeth f. Elizabeth.
elle pron. she ; it. [L. *illam*]
**emmener (53a) v. lead away, carry off.* [en (L. *inde*) and *mener*.]
**-ement (26a) adv. ending*
émouvoir v. (irr. 76) touch with emotion, move, agitate. [L. *emovere*.]
empereur m. emperor. [L. *imperatorum*.]
empire m. empire. [L. *imperium*.]
employer v. employ. [L. *implicare*.]
en adv. pron. (XXIII. 5-8) thence, away ; of it, of them, of him or her ; its, their ; in respect to or about it or them ; some or any (XXIII. 7) ; one or ones. [L. *inde*.]
en prep. (VI. 1a) in, at, on ; to, into ; in the act or course of, while (X. 3c) ; in character of, as, like. [L. *in*.]
encore (or encor) adv. to this time, yet, still ; further, in addition, besides, more, again : encore que, although, even though. [L. *hanc horam*.]
encre f. ink. [L. *encaustum*, encaustic, fr. Gr.]
endormir v. (irr. 43) put to sleep : s' . . . , fall asleep, go to sleep. [L. *indormire*.]
enfant m. (and f.) child. [L. *infantem*, infant.]
enfin adv. in fine, at the end, at last, finally. [en and fin.]
ennemi m. ennemie f. enemy. [L. *inimicum*.]
**ennuyer (53a) v. weary, bore : s' . . . , be wearied or bored or tired.* [fr. *ennui*, L. *in odio*.]
**ennuyeux (53a) adj. wearisome, tedious.* [fr. *ennui*.]
énorme adj. enormous, immense. [L. *enormem*.]
ensemble adv. together, at the same time, in company or union. [L. *in simul*.]
ensuite adv. in the next place, next, afterward, then. [en and *suite*, succession.]
entendre v. hear ; attend to, understand : s' . . . à, understand about, be a judge of. [L. *intendere*.]
entre prep. between, among : d'entre, from among. [L. *inter*.]
entreprendre v. (irr. 30) undertake. [entre and *prendre*, take.]
envers prep. toward. [en and *vers*, toward.]
envoyer v. (irr. 81) send, despatch. [L. *inviare*]
épaule f. shoulder. [L. *spatulam*.]
Espagne f. Spain.
espérance f. hope. [fr. *espérer*.]
espérer v. hope. [L. *sperare*.]
espoir m. hope. [fr. *espérer*.]
esprit m. spirit, soul ; mind, intellect ; wit, cleverness, brightness. [L. *spiritum*.]
essayer v. try, make trial or essay of, attempt. [fr. *essai*, L. *exagium*.]
**est (76a) m. east.* [G.]
**estomac (58g) m. stomach.* [L., fr. Gr.]
et (86a) conj. and : et . . . et, both . . . and. [L. *et*.]
etc. (et cætera) and so forth. [L.]

- été *m.* summer. [L. *æstatem.*]
 être *v.* (*irr.*, p. 62) be; *as auxil.*, be, have (XXVIII. 6-8); go: c'est que, the thing or fact or reason is; être à, belong to; y être, be up to anything, understand; en être, be with respect to things, be at a point. [L. *stare, esse.*]
 être *m.* being, creature; existence; essence, characteristic. [inf. of être.]
 Europe *f.* Europe.
 eux *pron.* them. [L. *illos.*]
 excellent *adj.* excellent. [fr. *exceller*, L. *excellere.*]
 extrême *adj.* extreme. [L.]
 extrêmement *adv.* extremely. [fr. *extrême.*]
 fabricant *m.* manufacturer, maker. [pple of fabriquer, L. *fabricari.*]
 fabrique *f.* factory. [L. *fabricam*, workshop.]
 fâcher *v.* offend, disturb, fash, anger: se . . ., be offended or disturbed, be angry. [fr. L. *fastidium*, aversion.]
 facile *adj.* easy. [L. *facilem.*]
 facilement *adv.* easily. [fr. *facile.*]
 faible *adj.* feeble, weak. [L. *febilem*, pitiful.]
 faillir *v.* (*irr.* 50) fail, come short; come just short, be close upon or near to, just miss of. [L. *fallere*, deceive.]
 faim *m.* hunger, famine: avoir faim, be hungry (XIII. 6). [L. *famem.*]
 faire *v.* (*irr.* 23, p. 150) make, do, act; cause, make (XXXII. 9b); be (*of weather*) (XXXII. 9a); put in order, fix: se . . . à, accustom or reconcile one's self to; en être fait, be all over; bien fait, well shaped, shapely, of good figure; faire voir, show, exhibit. [L. *facere.*]
 fait (76) *m.* feat, deed, action, exploit. [pple of faire.]
 falloir *v.* (*irr.* 74, p. 141) *impers.* be obliged, must, have to; be lacking, need, want: peu s'en faut, there is little lacking. [L. *fallere*, deceive.]
 famille *f.* family. [L. *familiam.*]
 fatiguer *v.* fatigue, tire, weary: se . . ., be tired or weary. [L. *fatigare.*]
 faute *f.* lack, deficiency, fault: faut de, for lack of, in default of. [fr. *faillir.*]
 *femme (26a) *f.* woman, wife: . . . de chambre, *see* chambre. [L. *feminam.*]
 fenêtre *f.* window. [L. *fenestram.*]
 ferme *f.* farm. [fr. *fermer*, L. *firmare*, make firm.]
 fermier *m.* fermière *f.* farmer. [fr. *ferme*, noun.]
 feu *m.* fire. [L. *focum.*]
 feuille *f.* leaf, sheet. [L. *folia*, leaves.]
 février *m.* February. [L.]
 fier *v.* confide: se . . . à, trust one's self to, trust. [L. *fidere.*]
 *fil (68d) *m.* thread. [L. *filum.*]
 fille *f.* daughter, girl. [L. *filiam.*]
 *fils (68c, 74d) *m.* son. [L. *filius.*]
 fin *f.* end, finis: à la fin, in the end, at length; sans fin, without end, to all eternity; a fin, *see the word.* [L. *finem.*]
 fin *adj.* fine, delicate, elegant. [L. *finitum*, finished.]
 finir *v.* finish, bring to an end: en finir, make a finish or close. [L. *finire.*]
 fleur *f.* flower. [L. *florem.*]
 fleurir *v.* (XIX. 3b) flourish. [fr. *fleur.*]
 fleuve *m.* river. [L. *fluvium.*]
 fois *f.* time (successive), turn in succession: à la fois, at the same time, at once. [L. *vicem.*]
 force *f.* force, strength, might, power: à force de, by dint or means of. [L. *fortia*, strong.]
 fort *adj.* strong: *adv.* strongly, greatly, much, very much, very. [L. *fortem.*]
 fourchette *f.* fork. [fr. L. *furca.*]
 frais, fraîche (VII. 8) *adj.* fresh. [fr. G.]

- franc, franche** (VII. 6*b*) *adj.* frank, free; prepaid. [fr. G.]
franc *m.* franc (piece of money). [fr. inscription *Francorum rex*, king of the French.]
français *adj.* French. [fr. France.]
France *f.* France.
franchement *adv.* frankly. [fr. franc.]
François *m.* Francis, Frank.
Françoise *f.* Frances, Fanny.
Frédéric *m.* Frederick.
frère *m.* brother; holy brother; friar. [L. *fratrem*.]
froid *adj.* cold, cool: **avoir froid** (XIII. 6) be cold (in, à). [L. *frigidum*.]
fromage *m.* cheese. [LL. *formaticum*, shaped.]
fruit *m.* fruit; valuable result, profit. [L. *fructum*.]
fuir *v.* (*irr.* 47) flee, fly; fly from, shun. [L. *fugere*.]
furieux *adj.* furious, raging, angry. [L. *furiosum*.]

gai *adj.* gay. [fr. G.]
garçon *m.* boy, lad, fellow, servant, waiter, bachelor. [?]
gare *f.* station, terminus, depot. [fr. G. (Eng. *ware*).]
gâteau *m.* cake. [fr. G.]
gauche *adj.* awkward, clumsy; left (hand *or* side). [fr. G. (Eng. *awk*).]
***gaz** (83*a*) *m.* gas.
geler *v.* solidify, stiffen, freeze. [L. *gelare*.]
général *adj.* general: **en général**, in general, ordinarily. [L.]
général *m.* general officer, general. [=général *adj.*]
Genève *f.* Geneva.
gens *f. pl.* folks, people, persons; servants. [L. *gentem*.]
***gentil** (68*c*) *adj.* nice, good, well-behaved, pretty. [L. *gentilem*.]
gentilhomme (*pl.* *gentilshommes, 68*c*) *m.* man of good birth *or* breeding, gentleman. [gentil and homme.]
grand *adj.* great, grand, large, tall: grand chose, something *or* anything great, matter of importance. [L. *grandem*.]
grandement *adv.* greatly, largely, grandly. [fr. grand.]
grand'mère *f.* grandmother. [grand and mère.]
grand-père *m.* grandfather. [grand and père.]
***gratis** (74*d*) *adv.* gratis. [L.]
gréler *v. impers.* hail. [fr. grêle, gravel-stone, fr. ?]
gros *adj.* big, stout, large. [L. *grossum*.]
guère *adv.* (*with ne*) hardly, scarcely, but little. [fr. G. *weigaro*, much.]
guerre *f.* war. [fr. G., =war.]
Guillaume *m.* William.

habiller *v.* dress, clothe: **s'...**, dress one's self. [fr. *habile* (?).]
habit *m.* coat, dress. [L. *habitum*.]
'haine *f.* hate, hatred, aversion: **avoir en haine**, regard with hate, have an aversion for. [fr. hair.]
'haïr *v.* (XIX. 3*a*) hate, detest, dislike. [fr. G., =Eng. *hate*.]
'Hanovre *m.* Hanover.
'hâter *v. se...*, hurry one's self, hasten. [fr. hâte, haste, fr. G., =Eng. *haste*.]
'haut *adj.* high, tall, lofty, uplifted: **en haut**, on high, above, upstairs. [L. *altum*.]
'haut *adv.* (XXXI. 9) in a high *or* loud tone, aloud. [=haut *adj.*]
'hautement *adv.* highly, haughtily, boldly, loudly. [fr. haut.]
le 'Havre (VI. 5*f*), Havre (city of France).
Henri *m.* Henry.
Henriette *f.* Henrietta, Harriet.
heure *f.* hour; time of day, o'clock (XVII. 4): **de bonne heure**, in good time, early; **à la bonne heure**, in good time, very well, well done; **tout à l'heure**, at this moment, immediately, just now, presently. [L. *horam*.]

- heureusement *adv.* happily, luckily. [fr. *heureux*.]
 heureux *adj.* happy, fortunate, lucky. [fr. *heur*, L. *augurium*, *augury*.]
 hier (73*a*) *adv.* yesterday : *avant-hier*, day before yesterday. [L. *heri*.]
 histoire *f.* history ; story. [L. *historiam*.]
 *hiver (73*b*) *m.* winter. [L. *hibernum*.]
 'Hollande *f.* Holland.
 homme *m.* man : être homme à, be the right person for, be the one to. [L. *hominem*.]
 honnête *adj.* (VIII. 5*c*) honest ; worthy, excellent ; respectable, creditable. [L. *honestum*.]
 'honte *f.* shame : avoir honte (XIII. 6), feel shame, be ashamed. [fr. G., Saxon *honda*, dishonor.]
 hormis *prep.* except. [hors and mis, pple of *mettre*, put.]
 horreur *f.* horror. [L.]
 'hors *adv. prep.* out. out of, outside : hors de, outside of, out of. [L. *foras*.]
 *huit (64*c*, 76*a*) *num.* eight. [L. *octo*.]
 'huitième *num.* eighth. [fr. *huit*.]
 ici *adv.* here. [L. *ecce hic*.]
 ignorant *adj.* ignorant, unlearned. [L.]
 il, ils (68*d*) *pron.* he, it, they ; there ; as *indef. subject* (XI. 2, XXIV. 2), it ; as *impers. subject* (XXX. 1), it. [L. *illum*, *illos*.]
 immense *adj.* immense. [L.]
 importer *v.* be important or of consequence, matter, signify, concern : n'importe, it is of no consequence, no matter, never mind. [L. *importare*.]
 impossible *adj.* impossible. [L.]
 impunément *adv.* with impunity, unpunished. [fr. *impuni*, fr. *punir*, punish.]
 Indes *f. pl.* the Indies, India.
 indigne *adj.* unworthy. [L. *indignum*.]
 inquiet *adj.* unquiet, disturbed, restless. [L. *inquietum*.]
 insolent *adj.* insolent, impertinent. [L.]
 instruire *v.* (*irr.* 2) instruct. [L. *instruere*.]
 intéressant *adj.* interesting. [pple of *intéresser*, fr. L. *interesse*.]
 interrompre *v.* (XX. 3*b*) interrupt, break in upon. [L. *interrumpere*.]
 inviter *v.* invite. [L. *invitare*.]
 Italie *f.* Italy.
 Jacques *m.* James.
 *jadis (74*d*) *adv.* of old, in old times, formerly. [L. *jam diu*.]
 jamais *adv.* (*with ne*) never, not ever ; ever. [L. *jam magis*.]
 jambe *f.* leg. [LL. *gambam*.]
 janvier *m.* January. [L. *januarius*.]
 jardin *m.* garden. [fr. G., =Eng. *garden*.]
 Japon *m.* Japan.
 je *pron.* I. [L. *ego*.]
 Jean *m.* John.
 Jeanne *f.* Jane, Joan, Joanna.
 jeter *v.* (XXI. 3*c*) throw, cast, hurl ; spread. [fr. *jet*, jet, L. *jactum*.]
 jeudi *m.* Thursday. [L. *Jovis diem*, Jupiter's day.]
 jeune *adj.* young. [L. *juvenem*.]
 joindre *v.* (*irr.* 17) join, unite. [L. *jungere*.]
 joli *adj.* pretty, nice, pleasing. [fr. G., =Eng. *jolly*.]
 joliment *adv.* prettily. [fr. *joli*.]
 jouer *v.* play. [L. *jocari*.]
 jouet *m.* plaything, toy. [fr. *jouer*.]
 jour *m.* day ; daylight, light : faire jour (XXXII. 9*a*), be daylight. [L. *diurnum*.]
 journal *m.* journal, daily paper, newspaper. [L. *diurnalem*.]
 juillet *m.* July. [L. *julium*.]
 juin *m.* June. [L. *junium*.]
 Jules *m.* Julius.
 Julie *f.* Julia.
 jusque *adv.* as far as, all the way

- jusqu'à**, all the way to, as far as, clear to; **jusqu'à ce que**, until; **jusqu'où**, how far? [L. *de* and *usque*.]
juste *adj.* just, correct, suitable; exact, precise: **au juste**, precisely, exactly. [L. *justum*.]
juste *adv.* exactly, correctly, in tune. [= **juste** *adj.*: XXXI. 9.]
- la** *art. pron.* the; her, it. [L. *illam*.]
là *adv.* (XIII. 3, XXIV.) there: **de là**, from there, thence; **par là**, that way, by that route [L. *illuc*.]
là-bas *adv.* down there, over there, yonder; in the other world [**là** and **bas**.]
laborieux *adj.* laborious, industrious. [L. *laboriosum*.]
là-dessus *adv.* thereupon, with regard to that, in that respect. [**là** and **dessus**.]
laid *adj.* ugly, homely. [fr. G., = Eng. *loathe*.]
laine *f.* wool. [L. *lanam*.]
laisser *v.* leave, quit, abandon; let, leave, allow, permit, cause; leave off (from, de), omit, fail, fall short of. [L. *laxare*.]
lait *m.* milk. [L. *lac*.]
langue *f.* tongue; language, speech: **tirer la langue**, thrust out the tongue, make faces or grimaces. [L. *linguam*.]
largeur *f.* breadth, width. [fr. *large*, L. *largum*.]
le *art. pron.* the; him, it; so (XXIII. 3e). [L. *illum*.]
leçon *f.* lesson. [L. *lectionem*.]
léger *adj.* light, nimble, lively; frivolous, empty. [fr. L. *levis*.]
légume *m.* vegetable, pot-herb. [L. *legumen*.]
lendemain *m.* morrow, following day. [le, en, and **demain**.]
lent *adj.* slow, tardy. [L. *lentum*.]
lentement *adv.* slowly. [fr. **lent**.]
lequel *pron.* (XXV. 5, XXVI. 4-7) which one, who, that. [le and **quel**.]
- les** *art. pron.* the; them. [L. *illos, illas*.]
lettre *f.* letter. [L. *literam*.]
leur *pron.* to them; their, theirs (XIV. 1, 3, XXVII. 1). [L. *illorum*.]
lever *v.* raise, lift; se . . ., rise, get up. [L. *levare*.]
libre *adj.* free, at liberty. [L. *liberum*.]
lieu *m.* place: **avoir lieu**, take place, happen; **tenir lieu de**, take the place of, serve as; **au lieu de**, instead of. [L. *locum*.]
lire *v.* (*irr.* 11) read, peruse. [L. *legere*.]
***lis** (74*d*) *m.* lily. [L. *lilium*.]
lit *m.* bed, couch. [L. *lectum*.]
livre *m.* book. [L. *librum*.]
livre *f.* pound; **livre** (piece or amount of money, nearly = franc). [L. *libram*.]
loi *f.* law. [L. *legem*.]
loin *adv.* far, to or at a distance: **loin de**, far from; **loin que**, far from its being the case that. [L. *longe*.]
Londres *m.* London.
long *adj.* (VII. 6*b*) long; a long story, lengthy, tedious: **le long de**, the length of, along. [L. *longum*.]
longtemps *adv.* for a long time, for a great while, long. [long and **temps**.]
longuement *adv.* at length, lengthily. [fr. **long**.]
longueur *f.* length. [fr. **long**.]
lors *adv.* then: **lors de**, at the time of [L. *illa hora*, at that hour.]
lorsque *conj.* at the time that, when, as. [lors and **que**.]
1 louer *v.* let out, lend, hire. [L. *locare*.]
2 louer *v.* praise. [L. *laudare*.]
Louis *m.* Lewis, Louis.
louis *m.* louis, louis d'or (piece of money, of 20 or 24 francs). [fr. **Louis**, name of king.]
Louise *f.* Louisa.
lui *pron.* him; to him or her. [L. *illi huic*.]

- luire *v.* (*irr.* 5) shine. [L. *lucere.*]
 lumière *f.* light; *pl.* lights, enlightenment, intelligence and knowledge. [fr. L. *lumen*, light.]
 lundi *m.* Monday. [L. *lunæ diem*, moon's day.]
 Lyon *m.* Lyons.
- madame *sing.* mesdames *pl.* (XIV. 4) *f.* my lady, the lady, madam, Mrs. [ma and dame.]
 mademoiselle *sing.* mesdemoiselles *pl. f.* my young lady, the young lady, Miss. [ma and demoiselle, damsel.]
 magasin *m.* magazine, store, shop. [fr. Arabic.]
 mai *m.* May. [L. *maim.*]
 main *f.* hand: à la main, in the hand; entre les mains, between or into the hands, into the charge. [L. *manum.*]
 maintenant *adv.* now, at present. [pple of maintenir, maintain, fr. main and tenir, keep in hand.]
 mais *conj.* but [L. *magis*, more.]
 *mais (74d) *m.* maize, Indian corn. [Indian word]
 maison *f.* house, mansion: à la maison, in the house, at home. [L. *mansionem.*]
 maître *m.* master, owner, ruler, teacher: maître chanteur, master or chief singer. [L. *magistrum.*]
 maîtresse *f.* mistress, owner, director. [fem. to maître.]
 mal *adv.* badly, ill. [L. *male.*]
 mal *m.* evil, ill, harm, hurt, pain, disease: avoir mal à (XIII. 6a) have pain or ache in. [L. *malum.*]
 malade *adj.* sick, ill: *as noun*, sick person, patient. [L. *male aptum.*]
 malgré *prep.* in spite of, notwithstanding. [fr. L. *malum gratum.*]
 malheur *m.* unhappiness, misfortune. [fr. L. *malum augurium.*]
 malheureux *adj.* unfortunate, unhappy. [fr. malheur.]
- malle *f.* trunk, mail. [fr. G.]
 manche *m. f.* handle; sleeve. [fr. L. *manus*, hand.]
 manchette *f.* cuff. [fr. manche.]
 manger *v.* eat. [L. *manducare*, chew.]
 manière *f.* manner, way, method: de manière, in such a way, in such wise, so; de . . . que, so that. [fr. L. *manus*, hand.]
 manteau *m.* mantle, cloak. [L. *mantellum.*]
 marchand *m.* dealer, retail merchant, shopkeeper. [fr. L. *mercari.*]
 marché *m.* market: bon marché or à bon marché, in a favorable market, cheaply, cheap. [L. *mercatum.*]
 marcher *v.* march, walk, advance, get on, make progress. [?]
 mardi *m.* Tuesday. [L. *martis diem*, day of Mars.]
 mari *m.* husband. [L. *maritum.*]
 mariage *m.* marriage. [fr. marier.]
 Marie *f.* Mary, Maria.
 marier *v.* marry, give in marriage: se . . . , get married, marry. [L. *maritare.*]
 Marguerite *f.* Margaret.
 *mars (74d) *m.* March. [L. *martium.*]
 *mat (76a) *adj.* dull, dead; checkmated. [fr. G. *matt.*]
 matelot *m.* sailor. [?]
 matin *m.* morning: de grand or bon matin, very early. [L. *matutinum.*]
 maudire *v.* (*irr.* 10) curse, accurse. [L. *maledicere.*]
 mauvais *adj.* bad, evil, wicked, naughty, wrong [?]
 me *pron.* me, to me. [L. *me.*]
 méchant *adj.* wicked, bad, evil, malicious, mischievous. [fr. *méschoir*, L. *minus cadere*, turn out ill.]
 méconnaître *v.* (*irr.* 18) misunderstand, misappreciate. [mé-, mis-, and connaître, know.]
 mécontent *adj.* ill-content, dissatisfied. [mé-, mis-, and content.]

- Méditerranée** *f.* Mediterranean (sea).
- meilleur** *adj.* (IX. 3) better : le meilleur, best. [L. *melioerem.*]
- même** *adj.* self, -self (XXIII. 3c) ; self-same, same, very ; *as adv.* even : de même, in the same manner, all the same. [fr. L. *semet ipsissimum*, very own self.]
- mener** *v.* lead, conduct, take. [L. *minare*, drive.]
- ment** *adv.* ending (XXXI. 2) =-ly. [L. *mente*, with mind.]
- mentir** *v.* (*irr.* 41) lie, tell a lie, speak falsely. [L. *mentiri.*]
- mer** *f.* sea. [L. *mare.*]
- merci** *m.* gratitude, thanks. [L. *mercedem*, recompense]
- mercredi** *m.* Wednesday. [L. *mercurii diem*, Mercury's day.]
- mère** *f.* mother. [L. *matrem.*]
- mesdames**, see **madame**.
- ***messieurs**, see **monsieur**.
- mètre** *m.* meter, (a little more than a) yard. [L. *metrum*. fr. Gr.]
- mettre** *v.* (*irr.* 31) put, place, set : **mettre à**, put in a state of, reduce or drive to ; **mettre à la porte**, turn out of doors ; **se . . . à**, set one's self at, begin, commence. [L. *mittere*, send.]
- Mexique** *m.* Mexico.
- midi** *m.* midday, noon, twelve o'clock. [L. *medium diem.*]
- mien** *adj.* (XXVII. 1) mine. [fr. L. *meum.*]
- mieux** *adv.* (XXXI. 8) better ; more : le mieux, best ; **aimer mieux**, like better, prefer ; **de son mieux**, one's best or utmost, the best one can. [L. *melius.*]
- ***mil** (68*d*), see **mille**.
- milieu** *m.* middle, midst. [L. *medium locum*, mid place.]
- ***mille** (68*f*), ***mil** (XV. 7) *num.* thousand. [L. *mille.*]
- ***mille** (68*f*) *f.* mile. [L. *millia*, thousand (paces).]
- million** *m.* million. [fr. *mille.*]
- minuit** *m.* midnight, twelve o'clock at night. [fr. L. *mediam noctem.*]
- minute** *f.* minute, moment, sixtieth of an hour. [L. *minutam*, small, minute.]
- modérément** *adv.* moderately. [fr. **modéré**, pple of **modérer.**]
- modeste** *adj.* modest. [L.]
- modestement** *adv.* modestly. [fr. **modeste.**]
- moi** *pron.* me, to me, I. [L. *me.*]
- moindre** *adj.* (IX. 3) less : le moindre, least. [L. *minorem.*]
- moins** *adv.* (XXXI. 8) less, the less (XXXIV. 3) : le moins, least ; **au or du moins**, at least, at any rate ; **à moins de**, short of, without ; **à moins que**, unless. [L. *minus.*]
- mois** *m.* month. [L. *mensem.*]
- moitié** *f.* moiety, half. [L. *medietatem.*]
- moment** *m.* moment, instant. [L.]
- mon, ma, mes** *pron.* (XIV. 1) my. [L. *meum.*]
- monde** *m.* world ; company, society, set, audience : **tout le monde**, everybody. [L. *mundum.*]
- ***monsieur** (18*d*. 73*c*) *sing.* ***messieurs** (73*c*) *pl. m.* (XIV. 4) the gentleman, sir, Mr., Messrs. [mon and sieur, L. *senioreum.*]
- montagne** *f.* mountain. [L. *montaneum.*]
- monter** *v.* mount, ascend, climb, rise ; get on to (a horse, etc.) ; go upstairs. [fr. L. *montem*, mountain.]
- montrer** *v.* show, set forth, exhibit. [L. *monstrare.*]
- moquer** *v.* mock : **se . . . de**, deride, scoff, ridicule, make fun or game of. [?]
- morceau** *m.* bit, morsel, small piece, extract. [fr. L. *morsum*, pple of *mordere*. bite.]
- mort** *f.* death. [L. *mortem.*]
- mort** *adj.* dead ; *as noun*, dead person, corpse [pple of *mourir.*]
- mot** *m.* word, term, expression, utterance. [LL. *muttum*, fr. ?]
- mouchoir** *m.* handkerchief. [fr. **moucher**, fr. LL. *muccare*, fr. *mucus*, mucus.]

- mourir** *v.* (*irr.* 62) die, decease. [L. *mori.*]
- mouvoir** *v.* (*irr.* 76) move. [L. *movere.*]
- moyenner** *v.* mediate, bring about : **moyennant**, by means of, in consideration of. [fr. *moyen*, means, fr. L. *medianum.*]
- musique** *f.* music. [L., fr. Gr.]
- naître** *v.* (*irr.* 20) be born, come into being or existence, spring up, arise. [L. *nasci.*]
- nappe** *f.* table cloth. [L. *mappam.*]
- nation** *f.* nation. [L.]
- ne** *adv.* not. [L. *non.*]
- néanmoins** *adv.* nevertheless. [néant, nothing (fr. L. *ne ens*). and moins.]
- ***net** (76*a*) *adj.* neat, clean, fair. [L. *nitidum.*]
- nettement** *adv.* neatly, clearly, distinctly. [fr. *net.*]
- nettoyer** *v.* make neat or clean, clean, put in order. [fr. *net.*]
- neuf** *adj.* new, fresh [L. *novum.*]
- neuf** (61*a*, 85*c*) *num.* nine. [L. *novem.*]
- neuvième** *num.* ninth. [fr. *neuf num.*]
- neveu** *m.* nephew. [L. *nepotem.*]
- nez** *m.* nose. [L. *nasum.*]
- ni** *adv.* (XII. 5) neither, nor. [L. *neq.*]
- nièce** *f.* niece. [L. *neptiam.*]
- noir** *adj.* black. [L. *nigrum.*]
- nom** *m.* name ; reputation, character, note. [L. *nomen.*]
- nombre** *m.* number ; great number of, many ; **sans nombre**, numberless, innumerable. [L. *numerus.*]
- nommer** *v.* name, call or mention by name. [L. *nominare.*]
- non** *adv.* not, no : **non plus**, not any more, either. [L. *non.*]
- nord** *m.* north. [fr. G.]
- Norvège** *f.* Norway.
- notre, nos** *pron.* (XIV. 1) our. [L. *nostrum.*]
- nôtre** *pron.* (XXVII. 1) ours. [L. *nostrum.*]
- nous** *pron.* we, us, to us. [L. *nos.*]
- nouveau, nouvel** *adj.* (VII. 7) new, recent, novel, new-fashioned. [L. *novellum.*]
- novembre** *m.* November. [L.]
- nuire** *v.* (*irr.* 4) injure, harm, do hurt (to, à). [L. *nocere.*]
- nuit** *f.* night. [L. *noctem.*]
- nul** *pron.* not any, none, no ; no one ; null, of no value or effect : **nulle part**, nowhere. [L. *nulum.*]
- nullement** *adv.* in no wise, not at all. [fr. *nul.*]
- obéir** *v.* be obedient (to, à), obey. [L. *obedire.*]
- obtenir** *v.* (*irr.* 61) obtain. [L. *obtinere.*]
- octante** *num.* (XV. 3*a*) eighty. [L. *octaginta.*]
- octobre** *m.* October. [L.]
- œil** *m.* (*yeux pl.*) eye. [L. *oculum.*]
- œuf** *m.* (*œufs [61*a*] *pl.*) egg. [L. *ovum.*]
- offrir** *v.* (*irr.* 53) offer, set before, present : **s' . . .**, make offer of one's self, offer. [fr. L. *offerre.*]
- oh** *interj.* oh ! ah !
- ***oignon** (43*a*) *m.* onion. [L. *unionem.*]
- oiseau** *m.* bird. [LL. *avicellum*, fr. *avis*, bird.]
- on** *pron.* (XXVII. 4) one, people, they. [OF. *hom*, L. *hominem.*]
- oncle** *m.* uncle. [L. *avunculum.*]
- onze** (64*f*) *num.* eleven. [L. *undecim.*]
- onzième** (64*f*) *num.* eleventh. [fr. *onze.*]
- or** *adv. conj.* now. [L. *horam*, *hour.*] or *m.* gold. [L. *aurum.*]
- ordinairement** *adv.* ordinarily, usually. [fr. *ordinaire*, L. *ordinarium.*]
- oreille** *f.* ear. [L. *auriculam*]
- orphelin** *m.* orpheline *f.* orphan, orphaned. [fr. L. *orphanus.*]
- oser** *v.* dare. [fr. L. *audere.*]
- ôter** *v.* take away, take off, remove. [?, = Eng. *oust.*]

- ou *conj.* or; ou . . . ou, either . . . or. [L. *aut.*]
- où *adv. pron.* (XXVI. 8) where? where; to or at or in which; d'où, from where, whence; par où, by what way or route; où que, wherever. [L. *ubi.*]
- oublier *v.* forget. [fr. L. *oblivisci.*]
- *ouest (76a) *m.* west. [G.]
- oui (64f) *adv.* yes. [L. *hoc illud*, that same.]
- ouïr *v.* (*irr.* 49) hear. [L. *audire.*]
- *ours (74d) *m.* course *f.* bear. [L. *ursum.*]
- *outil (68c) *m.* tool, instrument. [fr. L. *uti*, use.]
- outré *prep.* beyond; besides. [L. *ultra.*]
- ouvrage *m.* work, labor; result of labor. product, work. [fr. *ouvrer*, L. *operari.*]
- ouvrier *m.* *ouvrière f.* worker, laborer, workman or workwoman. [L. *operarium.*]
- ouvrir *v.* (*irr.* 55) open; open the door. [L. *aperire.*]
- page *f.* page (of a book). [L. *paginam.*]
- pain *m.* bread: petit pain, roll, biscuit. [L. *panem.*]
- panier *m.* basket. [L. *panarium*, for bread.]
- *paon (31a) *m.* peacock. [L. *pavonem.*]
- papier *m.* paper. [L. *papyrus*]
- paquet *m.* packet, package, parcel. [fr. G.]
- par *prep.* by, through, by means of: par où, by what route or way. [L. *per.*]
- paraître (*v. irr.* 18) appear, be visible, show one's self; seem. [L. *parescere.*]
- parce que *conj.* because, for the reason that. [par ce, by this.]
- par-dessus *adv.* above, over and above, beyond. [par and dessus.]
- pardon *m.* pardon, forgiveness. [fr. *pardoner*, LL. *perdonare.*]
- parent *m.* relative, parent. [L. *parentem.*]
- paresseux *adj.* idle, lazy. [fr. *parresse*, L. *pigrítium*, laziness.]
- parfaitement *adv.* perfectly. [fr. *parfait*, L. *perfectum.*]
- Paris *m.* Paris.
- parler *v.* speak, talk, discourse. [fr. *parole.*]
- parmi *prep.* among. [L. *per medium*, through the midst.]
- parole *f.* word; speech, language. [fr. L. *parabóan*, fr. Gr.]
- part *f.* part, portion, share; side; concern: à part, aside, apart; de la part de, on the part of, in the name of, on behalf of, as from; pour ma (etc.) part, for my (etc.) part, so far as I (etc.) am concerned; autre or quelque or nulle part, elsewhere or somewhere or nowhere; prendre part, take a part, share; se donner part, make one's self a sharer, assume a share. [L. *partem.*]
- parti *m.* division, party, side; determination, resolution. [fr. *partir.*]
- partant *adv.* accordingly, hence. [par and tant.]
- partie *f.* part, portion, share. [fr. *partir.*]
- partir *v.* (*irr.* 38) set out, start, go away, leave, depart. [L. *partire*, divide.]
- partout *adv.* everywhere. [par and tout.]
- parvenir *v.* (*irr.* 60) arrive, attain, reach one's object, succeed. [L. *pervenire.*]
- pas *m.* step, pace; footstep, track. [L. *passum.*]
- pas *adv.* (*with ne*) not (XII.). [same as pas, noun.]
- passer *v.* pass, go on or by or through; spend: se . . ., take place, occur, happen; se . . . de, dispense with, do without, forego. [probably fr. *pas.*]
- patrie *f.* one's own country, fatherland. [L. *patriam.*]
- pauvre *adj.* (VIII. 5c) poor, needy, pitiful, miserable. [L. *pauperem.*]

- ***pays** (37) *m.* country, land : Pays-Bas, Low Countries, Netherlands. [L. *pagensem*, fr. *pagus*, village.]
- ***paysan** (37*a*) *m.* peasant. [fr. *pays*.]
- pêche** *f.* peach. [L. *persicum*, Persian.]
- pêche** *f.* fishing. [fr. *pêcher*, fish, L. *piscari*.]
- péché** *m.* sin, trespass. [L. *peccatum*.]
- peindre** *v.* (*irr.* 16) paint. [L. *pingere*.]
- peine** *f.* pain, distress, grief, anxiety ; trouble, difficulty ; penalty : **à peine**, with difficulty, hardly, scarcely, but just. [L. *pœnam*.]
- peintre** *m.* painter. [L. *pictor*.]
- peinture** *f.* painting. [L. *picturam*.]
- pendant** *prep.* during, pending : **pendant que**, during the time that, while. [pple of *pendre*, L. *pendere*, hang.]
- penser** *v.* think : **penser à**, think on or of, turn one's thoughts to ; **penser de**, think about, have an opinion of. [L. *pensare*, fr. *pendere*, hang.]
- perdre** *v.* lose ; ruin, undo. [L. *perdere*.]
- père** *m.* father. [L. *patrem*.]
- périr** *v.* perish, go to destruction. [L. *perire*.]
- permettre** *v.* (*irr.* 31) permit, allow. [L. *permittere*.]
- personne** *f.* person, individual ; own self : *with ne* (XII. 4), nobody, no one, not any one. [L. *personam*.]
- persuader** *v.* persuade, convince. [L.]
- petit** *adj.* little, small, petty : *as noun*, little one, child, boy or girl. [?]
- petit-fils** *m.* grandson. [petit and fils.]
- peu** *adv.* (and *as noun, m*) little, not much, not very ; few : **peu à peu**, little by little, by degrees ; **à peu près**, within a little, al-
- most nearly ; **pour peu que**, however little ; **tant soit peu**, ever so little, slightly. [L. *paucum*.]
- peuple** *m.* people. [L. *populum*.]
- peur** *f.* fear, fright, terror ; **avoir peur** (XIII. 6), feel fear, be afraid ; **faire peur**, cause fear, frighten ; **de peur de**, for fear of ; **de peur que . . . ne**, for fear that or lest. [L. *purorem*.]
- peut-être** *adv.* may be, perhaps. [fr. *il peut (pouvoir) être*.]
- pied** *m.* foot : **à pied**, on foot. [L. *pedem*.]
- pierre** *f.* stone. [L. *petram*, fr. Gr.]
- pire** *adj.* (IX. 3) worse. [L. *pejorem*.]
- pis** *adv.* (XXXI. 8) worse. [L. *pejus*.]
- place** *f.* place, room, stead ; fortified place, stronghold. [L. *plateam*, fr. Gr.]
- plaindre** *v.* (*irr.* 15) weep over, lament, pity : **se . . .**, complain ; lament. [L. *plangere*.]
- plaire** *v.* (*irr.* 24) please, be pleasing or give pleasure : **plût à Dieu**, would to God. [L. *placere*.]
- plaisir** *m.* pleasure : **faire plaisir**, cause or give pleasure, gratify. [old inf. = **plaire**.]
- plat** *m.* dish, plate. [fr. G., = *flat*.]
- plein** *adj.* full. [L. *plenum*.]
- pleinement** *adv.* fully. [fr. **plein**.]
- pleurs** *m. pl.* tears, cries, weeping. [fr. **pleurer**.]
- pleurer** *v.* lament, shed tears, weep. [L. *plorare*.]
- pleuvoir** *v.* (*irr.* 71) rain. [L. *pluere*.]
- pluie** *f.* rain. [L. *pluviam*.]
- plume** *f.* feather, pen, plume. [L. *plumam*.]
- plupart** *f.* greater part, majority : **la plupart de** (*with art.*, V. 4*b*), most of, most. [plus and part.]
- plus** *adv.* (IX. 1*a*, XXXI. 8) more ; the more (XXXIV. 3) ; (*with ne*) no longer, no further, no more ;

- de plus, moreover, besides, further. [L. *plus*.]
- plusieurs *pron. pl.* several. [fr. *plus*.]
- plutôt *adv.* sooner, rather, by preference: plutôt que de (*with inf.*), rather than. [plus and tôt.]
- poche *f.* pocket. [fr. G.]
- poème *m.* poem. [L., fr. Gr.]
- poésie *f.* poesy, poetry. [L., fr. Gr.]
- poète *m.* poet. [L., fr. Gr.]
- point *m.* point, dot, spot: à point, at the right point, in due time; (*with ne*) not, not at all, by no means. [L. *punctum*.]
- poire *f.* pear. [L. *pirum*.]
- pois *m.* pea. [L. *pisum*.]
- poisson *m.* fish. [fr. L. *pisces*.]
- poivre *m.* pepper. [L. *pipere*.]
- pomme *f.* apple: pomme de terre, potato. [L. *pomum*.]
- porte *f.* door, gate. [L. *portam*.]
- porter *v.* carry, bear, convey; wear; reach, extend: se . . ., carry one's self, be (in respect to health). [L. *portare*.]
- portrait *m.* portrait. [fr. L. *portrahere*.]
- poste *f.* post, post-office. [fr. L. *posita*.]
- poule *f.* fowl, hen. [L. *pullam*.]
- *pouls (67*a*) *m.* pulse. [L. *pulsus*.]
- pour *prep.* for, on account of, for the sake of, in favor of; in order to, to; as: pour que, in order that. [L. *pro*.]
- pourquoi *adv. conj.* for what, why. [pour and quoi.]
- poursuivre *v. (irr. 33)* pursue, follow, follow out, continue. [L. *prosequi*.]
- pourtant *adv.* for all that, yet, still, nevertheless. [pour and tant.]
- pourvoir *v. (irr. 69)* provide: pourvu que, provided that, provided. [L. *providere*.]
- pouvoir *v. (irr. 75, p. 119)* be able, have power, can; may, might (XXV. 8*f*): il se peut, etc. (XXV. 8*f*), it is possible, etc. [L. *posse*.]
- pouvoir *m.* power. [inf. of pouvoir.]
- premier *adj.* first. [L. *primarium*]
- prendre *v. (irr. 30)* take, take up, seize, take hold of, capture: s'y . . ., set one's self about something, proceed, manage; s'en . . . à, lay the blame on, impute, find fault with, come back upon; prendre garde, beware. [L. *prehendere*.]
- préparer *v.* prepare, make ready. [L.]
- près *adv. prep.* near, next: près de, near, near by, next to. [L. *pressum*.]
- présence *f.* presence. [L.]
- présent *adj.* present: à présent, at present, now. [L.]
- presque *adv.* almost, nearly. [près and que.]
- prêt *adj.* ready, prepared. [LL. *præstum*.]
- prêtre *m.* priest. [L. *presbyterum*, fr. Gr.]
- prime *adj.* first. [L. *primum*.]
- probable *adj.* probable. [L. *probabilem*.]
- probablement *adv.* probably. [fr. probable.]
- prochain *adj.* next, next following or to come. [fr. *proche*.]
- proche *adj.* near (to, de). [L. *proprium*.]
- profiter *v.* profit (by, de), take or get advantage. [fr. *profit*, fr. L. *profectum*.]
- projet *m.* project, plan. [L. *projectum*.]
- promener *v.* lead forth, take or send about: se . . ., take a walk. [L. *prominare*.]
- promettre *v. (irr. 31)* promise. [L. *promittere*.]
- propre *adj.* own; very; suitable; nice, clean: amour propre, self-love. [L. *proprium*.]
- protéger *v.* protect. [L. *protegere*.]
- *prudemment (26*a*) *adv.* prudently. [fr. *prudens*.]

- prudence *f.* prudence. [L.]
 prudent *adj.* prudent, discreet. [L. *prudenter.*]
 Prusse *f.* Prussia.
 public *adj.* public. [L. *publicum.*]
 public *m.* public. [same as *adj.*]
 puis *adv.* then, next, thereafter. [L. *post.*]
 puisque *conj.* since, because, as. [puis and *que.*]
 punir *v.* punish. [L. *punire.*]
 Pyrénées *f.* Pyrenees (mountains).
 quand *adv. conj.* when; if, supposing that. [L. *quando.*]
 quant *pron.* how much or many: quant à, as for, as regards, in respect to. [L. *quantum.*]
 quarantaine *f.* two score, some forty. [fr. *quarante.*]
 quarante *num.* forty. [L. *quadraginta.*]
 quart *num.* fourth: as *noun*, quarter, fourth part. [L. *quartum.*]
 quatorze *num.* fourteen. [L. *quatuordecim.*]
 quatre *num.* four. [L. *quatuor.*]
 quatre-vingts *num.* four twenties, four-score, eighty. [quatre and *vingt.*]
 quatrième *num.* fourth. [fr. *quatre.*]
 que *pron. : interrog.* (XXV. 4) what, which; *relat.* (XXVI. 2) which, that, whom; what; *after qui, quoi, etc., ever; sometimes expletive; ce que* (XXVI. 10), that which, what. [L. *quem, quam, quod, quid.*]
 que *adv.* how, why (*interrog., relat., exclam.*). [L. *quam, quod.*]
 que *conj.* that; *sign of subj.* (VIII. 7b); *making conj. phrases*, XXXIV. 5; in order that; *que . . . ne, unless, until; que in comparison* (IX. 4), than, as; *after quelque etc., ever: ne . . . que* (XII. 5), only. [L. *quod, quam.*]
 quel *pron.* (XIII. 4) what, what a, which: quel que, whatever. [L. *qualem.*]
 quelconque *pron.* whatever, whatsoever, of some sort. [L. *qualemcumque.*]
 quelque *pron.* (XIV. 6) some; about, nearly, some: quelque chose, something, anything; quelque . . . que, whatever, however; quelque part, somewhere. [L. *qualemquam.*]
 quelquefois *adv.* sometimes. [quelque and *fois.*]
 quelqu'un *pron.* (XXVII. 5) some one, somebody, some people, some. [quelque and *un.*]
 qui *pron. : interrog.* (XXV.) who, whom, what; *relat.* (XXVI.) who, whom, that, which; whoever, any one who, what: qui que, whoever. [L. *qui.*]
 quiconque *pron.* (XXVI. 9) whoever, any one who. [L. *quicumque.*]
 quint *num.* fifth; fifth part (XVI. 4c). [L. *quintum.*]
 quinze *num.* fifteen. [L. *quindécim.*]
 quinzième *num.* fifteenth. [fr. *quinze.*]
 quoi *pron. : interrog.* (XXV.) what, *relat.* (XXVI. 6) what, which; *exclam.* (XXV. 4c) what! *quoi que, whatever; de quoi, where-with, the means* (XXVI. 6a). [L. *quid.*]
 quoique *conj.* (XXXIV. 1a) though, although. [quoi and *que.*]
 ragoût *m.* stew, ragout. [fr. *re and agoûter, fr. goût, taste.*]
 raison *f.* reason, sense; motive, cause; ratio, proportion; justice, right: à raison, rightly; avoir raison (XIII. 6a), be right, have the right of it. [L. *rationem.*]
 ramener *v.* bring back. [fr. *amener.*]
 rappeler *v.* (XXI. 3c) recall, call back. [re and *appeler.*]
 recevoir *v.* (*irr.* 65) receive. [L. *recipere.*]

- récit** *m.* recital, narrative, story, tale. [fr. *réciter*, L. *recitare*.]
- reconnaître** *v.* (*irr.* 18) know again, recognize. [re and *connaître*.]
- rédacteur** *m.* editor. [fr. L. *reductum*, put in shape.]
- reine** *f.* queen: *reine-mère*, queen-mother, king's mother. [L. *reginam*.]
- remettre** *v.* (*irr.* 31) put back, put again, set again; hand over, consign: *se . . . à*, begin or commence again. [re and *mettre*.]
- remuer** *v.* move, stir. [L. *remutare*.]
- rencontrer** *v.* meet, fall in with. [re and *encontrer*, encounter, fr. *contra*, against.]
- rendre** *v.* render, return, give back, restore; make, cause to be; give, pay, do. [L. *reddere*.]
- rentrer** *v.* re-enter, go back in. [re and *entrer*.]
- renvoyer** *v.* (*irr.* 81) send back. [re and *envoyer*.]
- repentir** *v.*: *se . . .*, repent. [fr. L. *repentire*.]
- répondre** *v.* respond, reply, answer; . . . *de*, be answerable or responsible for, warrant. [L. *respondere*.]
- reprendre** *v.* (*irr.* 30) take again, resume, recover; begin again, go on to say. [re and *prendre*.]
- république** *f.* republic. [L.]
- résoudre** *v.* (*irr.* 36) resolve. [L. *resolvere*.]
- rester** *v.* remain, be left, stay, continue. [L. *restare*.]
- retenir** *v.* (*irr.* 61) hold back, retain, restrain. [L. *retinere*.]
- retirer** *v.* draw back, draw, derive: *se . . .*, draw one's self back, withdraw, retire, retreat. [re and *tirer*.]
- retourner** *v.* return, turn back or the other way: *se . . .*, turn around or back; *s'en . . .*, go or come back, return. [re and *tourner*.]
- retrouver** *v.* find again. [re and *trouver*.]
- réussir** *v.* succeed (in, à). [re and *ussir*, L. *exire*.]
- revenir** *v.* (*irr.* 60) come back, return. [L. *revenire*.]
- revêtir** *v.* (*irr.* 51) put on again, clothe one's self in, put on. [re and *vêtir*.]
- revoir** *v.* (*irr.* 67) see again; review. [L. *revidere*.]
- Rhin** *m.* Rhine (river).
- *rhum** (51*b*) *m.* rum. [fr. English.]
- riche** *adj.* rich. [fr. G.]
- rien** *pron.* (with *ne*: XII. 4) not anything, nothing; anything: *rien qu'à* or *rien que de*, merely by, by nothing but. [L. *rem*.]
- rire** *v.* (*irr.* 13) laugh. [L. *ridere*.]
- rire** *m.* laugh. [inf. of *rire*.]
- robe** *f.* dress, frock. [fr. G.]
- roi** *m.* king. [L. *regem*.]
- roman** *m.* romance, novel. [fr. L. *romanus*.]
- rompre** *v.* (XX. 3*b*) break, burst. [L. *rumpere*.]
- rose** *f.* rose. [L. *rosam*.]
- rouge** *adj.* red. [L. *rubeum*.]
- royaume** *m.* kingdom, realm. [fr. *roi*.]
- ruban** *m.* ribbon. [?]
- rue** *f.* street. [LL. *rugam*, furrow.]
- Russie** *f.* Russia.
- saisir** *v.* seize, take hold of. [LL. *sacire*, fr. G.]
- salle** *f.* hall, room; fencing-school: *salle à manger*, dining-room. [fr. G., = Germ. *saal*.]
- salon** *m.* saloon, large room, parlor. [fr. *salle*.]
- samedi** *m.* Saturday. [L. *sabbati diem*, day of sabbath (Hebrew).]
- sans** *prep.* without; apart from, but for: *sans que conj.* (XXXIV. 5*b*) without that, without, unless. [L. *sine*.]
- savant** *adj.* knowing, wise, learned; as *noun*, scientific man, scholar. [old pple of *savoir*.]
- savoir** *v.* (*irr.* 77; p. 159) know;

- know as, know to be; (*with inf*) know how. [L. *sapere*.]
- *sculpter (71a) v. sculpture, cut or carve in stone. [fr. L. *sculperere*.]
- *sculpteur (71a) m. sculptor. [L.]
- *sculpture (71a) f. sculpture. [L.]
- se pron. (XXIII. 4; XXIX. 2) one's self. [L. *se*.]
- *second (58f) num. second. [L. *secundum*.]
- *seconde (58f) f. second, sixtieth of a minute. [same as num.]
- *seconder (58f) v. second, stand by, support. [fr. *second*.]
- Seine f. Seine (French river running through Paris).
- seize num. sixteen. [L. *sedecim*]
- sel m. salt. [L. *sal*.]
- selon prep. according to, on the authority of. [L. *sub-longum*, along.]
- semaine f. week. [L. *septimanam*.]
- sembler v. seem, appear. [L. *simulare*.]
- *sens (74d) m. sense, intellect, understanding; sense, meaning; way, direction: bon sens, good sense, sensibleness. [L. *sen-sum*.]
- sentir v. (*irr.* 40) feel, be sensible or have a sense of, be conscious. [L. *sentire*.]
- soir v. (*irr.* 78) sit. [L. *sedere*.]
- *sept (71a, 76a) num. seven. [L. *septem*.]
- septante num. (XV. 3a) seventy. [L. *septuaginta*.]
- septembre m. September. [L.]
- *septième (71a) num. seventh. [fr. *sept*.]
- serviette f. napkin. [fr. *servir*.]
- servir v. (*irr.* 44) serve; be of use, avail, advantage, help; serve up, put on the table: servir de, serve as, take or fill the place of; se servir de, serve one's self with, make use of, employ. [L. *servire*.]
- seul adj. sole, alone, only, single. [L. *solum*.]
- seulement adv. only, solely, simply. [fr. *seul*.]
- si conj. (XXXIV. 1b) if; whether. [L. *si*.]
- si adv. so, as; yes: si... que, however. [L. *sic*.]
- siècle m. age, century. [L. *seculum*.]
- sien pron. (XXVII. 1) his, hers, its. [L. *suum*.]
- silence m. silence: garder... keep silence, be silent. [L.]
- *six (81b, 85c) num. six. [L. *sex*.]
- *sixaine (81c) f. half a dozen, some six. [fr. *six*.]
- *sixième (81c) num. sixth. [fr. *six*.]
- sœur f. sister. [L. *soror*.]
- soi pron. (XXIII. 4) one's self. [same as *se*.]
- soie f. silk. [L. *setam*.]
- soif f. thirst: avoir soif, be thirsty (XIII. 6). [L. *sitim*.]
- soir m. evening, latter part of the day. [L. *serum*, late.]
- soit conj. whether, or; be it; be it so. [subj. pres. 3d sing. of être.]
- *soixantaine (81c) f. three score, some sixty. [fr. *soixante*.]
- *soixante (81c) num. sixty. [L. *sexaginta*.]
- soldat m. soldier. [LL. *soldatum*, paid.]
- soleil m. sun; sunshine. [L. *solium*. fr. *sol*, sun.]
- *solennel (26a) adj. solemn. [fr. L. *solemnis*.]
- sommeil m. sleep: avoir sommeil, be sleepy (XIII. 6). [fr. L. *somnus*.]
- son, sa, ses pron. (XIV. 1) his, her, its. [L. *suum*]
- son m. sound. [L. *sonum*.]
- sortir v. (*irr.* 39) come or go forth, issue, proceed; go out (from room, etc.): sortir de, quit, leave, abandon. [L. *sortiri*.]
- soudain adj. sudden; as adv. (XXXI. 9) suddenly. [L. *subitanum*.]
- souffrir v. (*irr.* 54) suffer. [L. *sufferre*.]
- soulier m. shoe. [?]

- soupe** *f.* soup. [fr. G.]
soupière *f.* soup-dish, tureen. [fr. soupe.]
***sourcil** (68*c*) *m.* eyebrow. [L. *supercilium*.]
sourd *adj.* low-toned, obscure in sound, dull; deaf. [L. *surdum*.]
sourire *v.* (*irr.* 13) smile. [L. *subridere*, laugh slightly.]
sourire *m.* smile. [inf. of *sourire*.]
sous *prep.* under, beneath, below. [L. *subtus*.]
souvenir *v.* (*irr.* 60) come into the mind; have come into the mind, remember: *se . . .*, remember, recollect, be reminded (of, de). [L. *sub-venire*.]
souvenir *m.* remembrance, recollection; memorial, memento, souvenir. [inf. of *souvenir*.]
souvent *adv.* often, frequently. [L. *subinde*.]
sucré *m.* sugar. [fr. Arabic.]
***sud** (60*a*) *m.* south. [fr. G.]
Suède *f.* Sweden.
suffire *v.* (*irr.* 6) suffice, be sufficient or enough. [L. *sufficere*.]
Suisse *f.* Switzerland.
suite *f.* what follows, sequel, train; succession, series, suite: *tout de suite*, at once, immediately. [L. *secutam*.]
suivre *v.* (*irr.* 33) follow. [L. *sequi*.]
sur *prep.* on, upon; over, above; about, near to; on account of, on the strength of: *sur le champ*, on the spot, at once, immediately. [L. *super*.]
sûr *adj.* sure, secure, steady, trustworthy. [L. *securum*.]
surprendre *v.* (*irr.* 30) take by surprise, surprise. [sur and *prendre*.]
surprise *f.* surprise, astonishment [fr. *surprendre*.]
surtout *adv.* above all, especially. [sur and *tout*.]
sus *adv.* above, upon: *en *sus* (74*d*), over and above, besides. [L. *susum*, *sursum*.]
***tabac** (58*g*) *m.* tobacco. [Indian word.]
table *f.* table. [L. *tabulum*.]
tableau *m.* picture, painting. [fr. table.]
tâche *f.* task. [LL. *taxam*, fr. L. *taxare*, tax.]
tailleur *m.* tailor. [fr. *tailler*, cut, fr. L. *taleam*, cut branch.]
taire *v.* (*irr.* 25) keep secret or silent: *se . . .*, be silent, keep silence, hold one's peace. [L. *tacere*.]
Tamise *f.* Thames.
tandis que *conj.* whilst, while, whereas. [L. *tam diem quod*.]
tant *adv.* so much or many, as much or many: *si tant est que*, if so be that, supposing that; *tant soit peu*, ever so little, slightly, in some measure; *tant que*, so long as. [L. *tantum*.]
tante *f.* aunt. [ta and ante, L. *amitam*.]
tantôt *adv.* presently, soon: *tantôt . . . tantôt*, now . . . now. [tant and tôt.]
tard *adv.* late. [L. *tardum*, slow.]
tasse *f.* cup. [fr. Arabic.]
te *pron.* thee, to thee. [L. *te*.]
tel *pron.* such (such a, un tel); such a one, so and so; one, another, as . . . so: *tel que*, whatever, any soever; *telle quelle*, such as it is, in whatever condition. [L. *talem*.]
temps *m.* time; weather. [L. *tempus*.]
tenir *v.* (*irr.* 61) hold, keep: *tenez*, hold, look here, well now; *se . . .*, keep one's self, stay, stand; *tenir lieu de*, see lieu; *tenir tête à*, see tête. [L. *tenere*.]
terre *f.* earth, ground, land: *de terre*, earthen; *à terre*, on the ground. [L. *terram*.]
tête *f.* head: *tenir tête à*, make head against, cope with, resist; *perdre la tête*, lose one's head or wits or presence of mind. [L. *testam*, potsherd.]

- tête-à-tête *m.* private interview, tête-à-tête. [lit'ly, head to head.]
- taé *m.* tea. [fr. Chinese.]
- théâtre *m.* theater, stage. [L., fr. Gr.]
- thème *m.* theme, exercise. [Gr.]
- tien *pron.* thine. [L. *tuum.*]
- tiers, tierce *num.* third. [L. *tertium.*]
- toi *pron.* thee, to thee. [L. *te.*]
- tomber *v.* fall, tumble. [fr. G. (?)]
- tome *m.* tome, volume. [L., fr. Gr.]
- ton, ta, tes *pron.* thy. [L. *tuum*]
- tonner *v. impers.* thunder. [L. *tonare.*]
- tort *m.* wrong, harm : avoir tort (XIII. 6*a*), be in the wrong, be wrong ; à tort, wrongly. [L. *tortum*, twisted.]
- tôt *adv.* soon. [L. *tostum*, burnt (?)]
- toucher *v.* touch, be in contact with, be close upon, approach ; lay the hand upon, handle, meddle with ; touch with emotion, move : toucher à, be close upon or in contact with, meddle with [?]
- toujours *adv.* always, all the time ; even now, still, yet, all the same. [fr. *tous jours*, all days.]
- tout (*tous, 74*d*) *pron.* (XIV. 6*b*) all, every, whole ; everything, everybody, the whole : *us adv.* wholly, entirely, quite, altogether : toute chose, everything ; tous deux or tous les deux (XXVII. 7*a*), both ; tout le monde (XXVII. 7*b*), everybody ; du tout, at all ; tout . . . que, however ; tout à coup, all at once, suddenly ; tout à fait, wholly, entirely ; tout à l'heure, just now ; tout de suite, at once, immediately. [L. *totum.*]
- toutefois *adv.* yet, however, nevertheless. [toute fois, every time.]
- traduire *v. (irr. 1)* translate. [L. *traducere.*]
- tragédie *f.* tragedy. [L., fr. Gr.]
- traire *v. (irr. 21)* draw, milk. [L. *trahere.*]
- *tranquille (68*f*) *adj.* tranquil, calm. [L.]
- *tranquille (68*f*) *adv.* tranquilly, calmly. [fr. *tranquille.*]
- *trans- (74*b*).
- *transit (74*b*, 76*a*) *m.* transit. [L.]
- travail *m.* work, labor, toil, travail. [fr. L. *trabes*, beam (?)]
- travailler *v.* work, toil, labor. [fr. *travail.*]
- travers *m.* oddity, whim, caprice, eccentricity : à travers, across, athwart, through. [L. *transversum*, crosswise.]
- traverser *v.* traverse, cross, pass over or through. [fr. *travers.*]
- treize *num.* thirteen [L. *tredecim*]
- treizième *num.* thirteenth. [fr. *treize.*]
- trentaine *f.* some thirty. [fr. *trente.*]
- trente *num.* thirty. [L. *triginta.*]
- très *adv.* very, very much. [L. *trans.*]
- triste *adj.* sad, dull, dreary. [L. *tristem.*]
- tristement *adv.* sadly. [fr. *triste.*]
- trois *num.* three. [L. *tres.*]
- troisième *num.* third. [fr. *trois.*]
- tromper *v.* deceive, mislead, cheat, baffle, disappoint : se . . . , deceive one's self, be mistaken, make a mistake. [?]
- trop *adv.* too, too much, in excess, beyond what is called for : de trop, superfluous, not wanted, better away ; trop peu, too little. [?]
- trouver *v.* find, discover, come or hit upon ; find to be, regard as, consider, think : se . . . , find one's self, chance to be, be. [L. *turbare*, disturb (?).]
- tu *pron.* thou. [L. *tu.*]
- un *num. art.* one ; an, a. [L. *unum.*]
- utile *adj.* useful, advantageous. [L. *utilem.*]

- vache *f.* cow. [L. *vaccam.*]
 vaincre *v.* (XX. 3a) vanquish, conquer. [L. *vincere.*]
 valoir *v.* (*irr.* 73) be worth, have the value of; have as much value as, be equal to; be good for, win, procure: valoir mieux, be worth more, be better or preferable. [L. *valere.*]
 vapeur *f.* steam, vapor; *m.* steamer. [L.]
 vase *m.* vase, vessel. [L. *vas.*]
 vaste *adj.* vast. [L.]
 velours *m.* velvet. [fr. L. *villosus*, hairy.]
 vendre *v.* sell. [L. *vendere.*]
 vendredi *m.* Friday. [L. *veneris diem*, Venus's day.]
 venir *v.* (*irr.* 60; p. 145-6) come, be coming; venu, one arrived, come; venir de (*with inf.*, XXXI. 11b) have just (done anything); en venir à, come to the point of, have recourse to, resort to. [L. *venire.*]
 Venise *f.* Venice.
 vent *m.* wind. [L. *ventum.*]
 verre *m.* glass, drinking glass, tumbler. [L. *vitrum.*]
 vers *prep.* toward; about. [L. *versus.*]
 vers *m.* verse. [L. *versum.*]
 vêtir *v.* (*irr.* 51) clothe, dress (in, de). [L. *vestire.*]
 viande *f.* meat, flesh; viand. [L. *vivenda.*]
 vie *f.* life; biography: de sa vie, in his life, ever. [L. *vitam.*]
 vieil, *see* vieux.
 vieillard *m.* old man. [fr. vieux.]
 vieillir *v.* grow old, become aged, age. [fr. vieux.]
 Vienne *f.* Vienna.
 vieux, vieil (VII. 7) *adj.* old, not young, aged; *as noun*, old fellow or friend. [LL. *vetulum.*]
 vif *adj.* lively, vivacious, brisk, smart. [L. *vivum.*]
 *vil (68d) *adj.* vile, base, mean. [L.]
- *village (68f) *m.* village. [fr. ville.]
 *ville (68f) *f.* city: à la ville, in the city. [L. *villam.*]
 vin *m.* wine. [L. *vinum.*]
 vingt (76a) *num.* twenty. [L. *viginti.*]
 vingtaine *f.* a score, some twenty. [fr. vingt.]
 vingtième *num.* twentieth. [fr. vingt.]
 violette *f.* violet. [fr. L. *viola.*]
 *viril (68d) *adj.* virile, manly. [L. *virilem.*]
 *vis 74d) *f.* screw. [L. *vitem*, vine.]
 vis *m.* face: vis-à-vis de, face to face with, opposite to, fronting. [L. *visum.*]
 vite *adj.* quick; *as adv.* (XXXI. 9) quickly, rapidly, fast. [?]
 vivement *adj.* lively. [fr. *vif.*]
 vivre *v.* (*irr.* 32) live. [L. *vivere.*]
 voici *interj.* see here, here is or are or come, behold, lo. [vois and ci.]
 voilà *interj.* see there, there is or are or come, behold, lo. [vois and là.]
 voile *m. f.* veil; sail: bateau à voiles, sailing vessel. [L. *velum.*]
 voir *v.* (*irr.* 67) see, behold, view, look: voyons, let's see, see here, come now; y voir, see things, have eyes. [L. *videre.*]
 voisin *adj.* neighboring, near (to, de); *as noun*, neighbor. [L. *vicinum.*]
 voiture *f.* carriage, vehicle. [L. *vecturam.*]
 voix *f.* voice. [L. *vocem.*]
 volontiers *adv.* willingly, gladly. [fr. L. *voluntarie.*]
 volume *m.* volume. [L.]
 votre *pron.* (XIV.) your. [L. *vestrum.*]
 vôtre *pron.* (XXVII. 1, 2) yours. [L. *vestrum.*]
 vouloir *v.* (*irr.* 72; p. 114) wish, desire, want; be willing or in-

| | |
|---|---|
| <p>clined <i>or</i> pleased ; mean, intend : vouloir dire, mean, signify ; en vouloir à, have a grudge or spite against, lay something up against, lay something upon, aim at. [L. <i>velle.</i>]</p> <p>vous <i>pron.</i> you, to you. [L. <i>vos.</i>]</p> <p>voyage <i>m.</i> journey. [L. <i>viati- cum.</i>]</p> | <p>vrai <i>adj.</i> true, veracious, real, ac- tual, genuine. [fr. L. <i>verus.</i>]</p> <p>vraiment <i>adv.</i> truly, really, indeed, in fact. [fr. vrai.]</p> <p>y <i>adv. pron.</i> (XXIII. 5-8) there ; to it <i>or</i> them, etc. [L. <i>ibi.</i>]</p> <p>yeux (36<i>a</i>) <i>pl.</i> (II. 5) eyes. [L. <i>oculos.</i>]</p> |
|---|---|

II.—ENGLISH-FRENCH VOCABULARY.

ADDITIONAL ABBREVIATIONS : *n.* noun. *intr.* intransitive. *trans.* transitive.

- a, an, un.
 able, capable, bon, habile : be able, pouvoir *v.* (*irr.* p. 119.)
 about, (roundabout) : autour de, (nearly) environ, sur, quelque : run about, courir (*irr.* 52).
 above, dessus *adv.*, au-dessus de *prep.*
 absolutely, absolument.
 according to, d'après, selon.
 accordingly, aussi.
 acquaint : be acquainted with, connaître.
 acquire, acquérir (*irr.* 63).
 across *prep.* à travers.
 active, actif.
 adieu, adieu *m.*
 admirable, admirable.
 afraid : be afraid, avoir peur *or* crainte (XIII. 6).
 Africa, Afrique *f.*
 after *prep.* après ; *conj.* après que : after that (*conj.*), après que.
 afternoon, après-midi *m.*
 afterward, après, ensuite.
 again, encore, de nouveau.
 against, contre.
 age (grow old), vieillir.
 agitate (move), émouvoir (*irr.* 76).
 ago, il y a (XXX. 4c).
 air, air *m.*
 all, tout (XIV. 6) : at all, *see* at ; after all, après tout.
 allow, permettre (*irr.* 31).
 almost, presque, à peu près.
 aloft, en haut.
 alone, seul.
 along *prep.* le long de.
 aloud, 'haut.
 Alps, Alpes *f.*
 already, déjà.
- also, aussi.
 although, quoique (XXXIV. 1a), bien que, encore que.
 altogether, tout à fait, tout.
 always, toujours.
 America, Amérique *f.*
 amiable, aimable.
 among, parmi (XXVI. 4a), entre : from among, d'entre.
 amount, an infinite, *see* infinite.
 amuse, amuser : amuse one's self, s'amuser.
 ancient, ancien.
 anciently, anciennement.
 and, et.
 angry, fâché (at. contre ; on account of, de) : be *or* get angry, se fâcher.
 animal, animal *m.*
 another, un autre : one another, l'un l'autre, les uns les autres (XXVII. 7), se (XXIX. 8).
 answer *v.* répondre.
 answer *n.* réponse *f.*
 anxious, inquiet.
 any, de *with art.* (IV.), quelque : not any, ne . . . aucun *or* nul, ne . . . pas de.
 anything, quelque chose : not anything, ne . . . rien ; anything whatever, quoi que ce soit.
 appear, paraître (*irr.* 18).
 apple, pomme *f.*
 approach, (*trans.*) s'approcher de, se rapprocher de, (*intr.*) s'approcher.
 April, avril *m.*
 arise, se lever.
 arm (limb), bras *m.*
 army, armée *f.*
 around *prep.*, autour de.

- arrive, arriver (*with être*, XXVIII. 6a).
- as *adv.* (*before adj.*) aussi, (*after adj.*) que: as much *or* many, autant; as much *or* many as, autant que; as long as, tant que; as soon as, aussitôt que, dès que; as far as, jusque, jusqu'à (*prep.*); as for, as regards, quant à.
- as *conj.* comme, ainsi que, de, en; (since) puisque; (when) lorsque.
- ashamed: be ashamed, avoir honte (XIII. 6).
- Asia, Asie.
- ask, ask for, demander (of, à).
- at, à; en, dans; de; par: at all, du tout; not at all, ne . . . point; at once, sur le champ, tout de suite; at present, à présent; at the time of, lors de; at the house of, at some one's, chez.
- August, *août (14) *m.*
- aunt, tante *f.*
- Austria, Autriche *f.*
- await, s'attendre à.
- back: bring back, etc., *see* bring, etc.
- bad, mauvais: bad weather, mauvais temps.
- baker, boulanger *m.*
- ball (dance), bal *m.*
- basket, panier *m.*
- be, être (*irr.* p. 62); be (in respect to health), se porter; be (in respect to weather), faire * (XXXII. 9a): be all over, en être fait; be off with one's self, s'en aller; be better, se porter mieux, se remettre; be to, devoir (XXVI. 12*f.*).
- beat *v.* battre (XX. 3c).
- beautiful, beau (VII. 7).
- beauty, beauté *f.*
- because, parce que, puisque.
- become, devenir (*irr.* 60).
- bed, lit *m.*: go to bed, se coucher, aller se coucher.
- before *prep.* (previous to) avant, (in front *or* in presence of) devant; *with inf.* avant de.
- before *conj.* avant que, que . . . ne.
- beg, prier.
- begin, commencer, se mettre (*irr.* 31) à.
- behind, derrière.
- Belgium, Belgique *f.*
- believe, croire (*irr.* 26).
- belong, appartenir, être (to, à: III. 6).
- below *adv.* en bas.
- beneath *prep.* sous, au-dessous de; *adv.* dessous.
- besides *prep.* outre; *conj.* d'ailleurs.
- best *adj.* le meilleur; *adv.* le mieux.
- better *adj.* meilleur; *adv.* mieux: be better (in health), se porter mieux, se remettre (*irr.* 31), (be preferable) valoir mieux; love better, aimer davantage; like better, aimer mieux; find it better, trouver meilleur; get the better, l'emporter.
- between *prep.* entre.
- beyond *prep.* outre, par-dessus, au-delà de.
- big, gros.
- bird, oiseau *m.*
- bit, morceau *m.*
- black, noir.
- bless, bénir.
- blind *adj.* aveugle.
- blindly, aveuglément.
- blue, bleu.
- boat, bateau *m.*
- boil *v.* bouillir (*irr.* 64).
- bold, 'hardi.
- bonnet, chapeau *m.*
- book, livre *m.*
- boot, botte *f.*
- Bordeaux, Bordeaux *m.*
- bore *v.* ennuyer; be bored, être ennuyé, s'ennuyer.
- born, né; be born, naître (*irr.* 20; *with être*, XXVIII. 6a).
- both *pron.* tous deux, tous les deux, l'un et l'autre (XXVII. 7).
- both *conj.* et (XXXIV. 3); both . . . and, et . . . et.
- bottle, bouteille *f.*
- box, boîte *f.*
- boy, garçon *m.*
- brave, brave (VIII. 5c).

- bread, pain *m.*
 breadth, largeur *f.*
 break, rompre (XX. 3b), (the arm, etc.) casser.
 breakfast, déjeuner *m.*
 bring, apporter; bring back: rapporter.
 brother, frère *m.*
 brother-in-law, beau-frère *m.*
 brown, brun.
 Brussels, *Bruxelles (81c) *f.*
 build, bâtir.
 but *conj.* mais; *prep.* excepté: but little (with *v.*), ne . . . guère.
 butter, beurre *m.*
 buy, acheter (XXI. 3b).
 by (XXVIII. 3), par, de, à: by means of, moyennant; by dint of, à force de.
 cake, gâteau *m.*
 call *v.* appeler (XXI. 3c); call back, rappeler.
 can, pouvoir (*irr.* p. 119).
 cannot, ne pouvoir (*irr.* p. 119), ne saurais, etc. (XXXIV. 7b).
 capital (chief city), capitale *f.*
 captain, capitaine *m.*
 carriage, voiture *f.*
 carry, porter; carry away, emporter.
 case, cas *m.*: in case that, in case, au or en cas que.
 cat, chat *m.*
 cause *n.* raison *f.*
 cause *v.* (with *inf.*, XXXII. 9b) faire (*irr.* p. 150).
 century, siècle *m.*
 certainly, certainement.
 chair, chaise *f.*
 chamber, chambre *f.*
 chapter, chapitre *m.*
 cheap, cheaply, à bon marché, bon marché.
 cheese, fromage *m.*
 child, enfant *m.*
 China, Chine *f.*
 choose, choisir.
 church, église *f.*: to or at church, à l'église.
 citizen, citoyen *m.*
 city, *ville (68f) *f.*
 clean *v.* nettoyer.
 clear *v.*: clear out, s'en aller (XXIX. 7c).
 cloak, manteau *m.*
 close *v.* fermer.
 cloth, drap *m.*
 clothe, vêtir (*irr.* 51).
 coat, habit *m.*
 coffee, café *m.*
 cold, froid: be cold, feel cold, avoir froid (XIII. 6); be cold (weather), faire froid; grow cold, se refroidir.
 collar, col *m.*
 come, venir (*irr.* p. 145, with être, XXVIII. 6a), (happen) advenir, (arrive, get so far as) arriver, en venir; come! allons (XXVII. 8a); come back or again, revenir; come down, descendre. come in, entrer.
 comedy, comédie *f.*
 coming *n.* arrivée *f.*
 conceal, cacher.
 conceive, concevoir (*irr.* 65).
 conclude, conclure (*irr.* 29).
 conduct *n.* conduite *f.*
 conduct *v.* conduire (*irr.* 1); conduct one's self, se conduire.
 conquer, vaincre (XX. 3a).
 consequently, donc, *conséquentement (26a).
 constantly, constamment.
 constitutional, constitutionnel.
 contented, content.
 continually, continuellement.
 cook, cuisinière *f.*
 correctly (in tune), juste.
 Corsica, Corse *f.*
 country, pays *m.*, (one's or native) patrie *f.*, (as distinguished from the city) campagne *f.*: in the country, à la campagne.
 cousin, cousin *m.*, cousine *f.*
 cover *n.* (place at table) couvert *m.*
 cover *v.* couvrir (*irr.* 56).
 cow, vache *f.*
 create, créer.
 cruel, cruel.
 cruelly, cruellement.
 cry *v.* crier; cry out, s'écrier.
 cuff *n.* manchette *f.*

cup, tasse *f.*curse *v.* maudire (*irr.* 10).dance *v.* danser.Danube, Danube *m.*daughter, fille *f.*day, jour *m.*: day before yester-day, avant-hier *m.*; day after to-morrow, après-demain *m.*dead *adj.* mort.

deal: a great deal, beaucoup.

dear, cher (VIII. 5*c*).

dearly, chèrement.

decay *v.* déchoir (*irr.* 70).December, décembre *m.*Denmark, Danemark *m.*depart, partir (*irr.* 38).departure, départ *m.*depend, se fier (upon, à), dépendre
(on or upon, de).depot, gare *f.*describe, décrire (*irr.* 12).desire *v.* vouloir (*irr.* 72), désirer,
avoir envie de.die, mourir (*irr.* 62; *with* être,
XXVIII. 6*a*).

difficult, difficile.

difficulty, difficulté *f.*

dine, dîner.

dining-room, salon *m.*, salle à man-
ger *f.*dinner, dîner *m.*

dint: by dint of, à force de.

directly, sur le champ.

dish, plat *m.*displease, déplaire (*irr.* 24).dissatisfied, mécontent (*with*, de).

distrust, se défier de.

do, faire (*irr.* p. 150): do without,
se passer de.dog, chien *m.*door, porte *f.*

down-stairs, en bas.

dozen, douzaine *f.*draw, traire (*irr.* 21): draw near,
s'approcher (to, de).dress *n.* robe *f.*dressmaker, couturière *f.*drink, boire (*irr.* 27).

drive off or away, chasser.

dull, (tedious) ennuyeux, (stupid)
lourd d'esprit.during, pendant, durant: during
the past, during . . . past, depuis.duty, devoir *m.*

dwell, demeurer.

each, (*adj.*) chaque, (*n.*) chacun:
each one, chacun; each other,
l'un l'autre (XXVII. 7), se
(XXIX. 8).ear, oreille *f.*

earlier, plus tôt de meilleure heure.

early, de bonne heure: so early, de
si bonne heure; quite early, de
bien (or très) bonne heure.earth, terre *f.*

easily, facilement.

east, *est (76*a*) *m.*; the East, l'Ori-
ent *m.*

easy, aisé, facile.

eat, manger.

editor, rédacteur *m.*

Edward, Édouard.

egg, œuf (*pl.* *œufs: 61*a*) *m.*eight, *huit (76*a*).eighteen, *dix-huit (81*b*).

eighth, huitième.

eighty, quatre-vingts (XV. 2*b*).either *conj.* ou . . . ou, or), (nor
. . . either) non plus.either *pron.* l'un ou l'autre
(XXVII. 7).eleven, *onze (64*f*).

Elizabeth, Élisabeth.

else: nothing else, rien d'autre;
nothing else than, ne . . . rien
que.

elsewhere, ailleurs, autre part.

emperor, empereur *m.*

employ, employer.

empress, impératrice *f.*enemy, ennemi *m.*England, Angleterre *f.*

English, anglais, d'Angleterre.

enough, assez (V. 4*a*).entirely, tout à fait, entièrement,
tout.equally, également; equally . . .
and, aussi . . . que.

especially, surtout.

Europe, Europe *f.*even, même, (not excepting) jus-
qu'à, (*with gerund*) tout.

- evening, soir *m.*, soirée *f.* : in the evening, du soir.
 every, chaque, tout (XIV. 6*b*); every one, chacun; everybody, tout le monde; everything, tout, toute chose; every day, tous les jours; everywhere, partout.
 evil *adj.* mauvais.
 evil *n.* mal *m.*
 excellent, excellent.
 except, hors, excepté.
 exclaim, s'écrier.
 exercise *n.* exercice *m.*, thème *m.*
 extremely, extrêmement.
 eye, œil *m.* (*pl.* yeux 36*a*).
 fact : in fact, en effet.
 factory, fabrique *f.*
 fall, tomber (*with* être : XXVIII. 6*a*), déchoir (*irr.* 70); fall short, faillir.
 family, famille *f.*
 Fanny, Française *f.*
 far *adv.* loin : far from, (*with inf.*) loin de, (*with v.*) loin que; as far as, *see* as; so far as, *see* so.
 farewell, adieu *m.*
 farm, ferme *f.*
 farmer, fermier *m.*; farmer's wife, fermière *f.*
 fast *adv.* vite.
 father, père *m.*
 fear *v.* craindre (*irr.* 15), avoir peur.
 fear *n.* peur *f.*, crainte *f.* : for fear of, de peur *or* crainte de; for fear that, de peur *or* crainte que . . . ne.
 February, février *m.*
 feeble, faible.
 feel, sentir (*irr.* 40).
 few, peu (de : V. 4); a few, quelques (XIV. 6*c*); but few, peu; too few, trop peu; the few, les quelques.
 field, champ *m.*
 fifteen, quinze.
 fifth, cinquième, quint (XVI. 4*c*).
 fifty, cinquante.
 find, trouver : find one's self, se trouver; find again, retrouver.
 fine *adj.* beau (VII. 7); fine weath-
 er, beau, beau temps; a fine thing, beau.
 finish, finir.
 fire, feu *m.*
 first *adj.* premier : *adv.* pour la première fois.
 fish, poisson *m.*
 five, *cinq (72*c*).
 flee, fuir (*irr.* 47).
 flourish, fleurir (XIX. 3*b*).
 flower, fleur *f.*
 folks, gens *pl.*
 follow, suivre (*irr.* 33).
 foot, pied *m.*
 for *prep.* pour, de, (during) depuis : as for, quant à.
 for *conj.* car
 forget, oublier.
 fork, fourchette *f.*
 former, celui-là (*subst.*), ce . . . -là (*adj.*).
 formerly, autrefois.
 forty, quarante.
 four, quatre.
 fourteen, quatorze.
 fourth, quatrième : fourth part, quart *m.*
 fowl, poule *f.*
 franc, franc *m.*
 France, France *f.*
 Frances, Française *f.*
 Francis, Frank, François *m.*
 frank, franc (VII. 6*b*).
 frankly, franchement.
 freeze, geler.
 French, français, de France.
 Friday, vendredi *m.*
 friend, ami *m.*, amie *f.*
 friendship, amitié *f.*
 from, de, dès, d'avec, depuis.
 front : in front of, en face de; to the front of, au-devant de.
 fruit, fruit *m.*
 full, plein.
 fully, pleinement.
 garden, jardin *m.*
 gate, porte *f.*
 gather, (*trans.*) cueillir (*irr.* 46), (*intr.*) se réunir.
 general *n.* général *m.*
 Geneva, Genève *f.*

- gentleman, monsieur (XIV. 4), gentilhomme (*pl.* *gentils-hommes : 68*c*).
- German, allemand
- Germany, Allemagne *f.*
- get, obtenir (*irr.* 61): get up, se lever; get ready, s'apprêter
- gift, cadeau *m.*, présent *m.*, don *m.*
- girl, fille *f.*
- give, donner : give a present, faire (*irr.* 23) un cadeau.
- glass, verre *m.*
- glory, gloire *f.*
- go, aller (*irr.* p. 128), (go away) partir (*irr.* 38) : go away, s'en aller (XXIX. 7*c*), partir (*irr.* 38) ; go out, sortir (*irr.* 39) ; be going to (*with inf.*), aller (XXVII. 9*c*).
- God, Dieu *m.*
- gold, or *m.*
- good *adj.* bon (IX. 3) : good fortune or luck, bonheur *m.* ; good morning or day, bonjour *m.*
- grand, grand.
- grandfather, grand-père *m.*
- grandmother, grand'mère *f.*
- grandson, petit-fils *m.*
- great, grand : a great deal, beaucoup (V. 4).
- Great Britain, Grande-Bretagne *f.*
- greatly, beaucoup, grandement.
- grow, croître (*irr.* 19) : grow old, vieillir ; grow pale, pâlir ; grow cold, se refroidir
- grudge : have a grudge at, en vouloir à (XXIV. 6*f*).
- guide, guider, conduire (*irr.* 1).
- hail *v.* grêler.
- hair, cheveux *m. pl.*
- half *n.* moitié.
- half *adj.* (XVI. 4*a*) demi, demi- : half an hour, une demi-heure.
- hand *n.* main *f.*
- hand *v.* remettre (*irr.* 31).
- handkerchief, mouchoir *m.*
- handsome, beau (VII. 7).
- Hanover, Hanovre *m.*
- happen, arriver (*with être* : XXVIII. 6*a*), venir à (*with inf.*). happily, heureusement.
- happiness, bonheur *m.*
- happy, heureux, content.
- hard, dur, (difficult) difficile.
- hardly, à peine, ne . . . guère : I hardly know, je ne sache pas.
- Harriet, Henriette *f.*
- haste : make haste, se hâter, se dépêcher.
- hasten, se hâter, se dépêcher.
- hat, chapeau *m.*
- hate *v.* haïr (XIX. 3*a*).
- have, avoir (*irr.* p. 58) ; *as auxil.*, avoir or être (XXVIII. 5-8, XXIX. 3, XXX. 1*a*) ; have to, avoir à, être obligé de, falloir (XXX. 7).
- he, il (68*d*), lui.
- head, tête *f.*
- health, santé *f.*
- hear, entendre, ouïr (*irr.* 49).
- heart, cœur *m.*
- heaven, ciel (II. 5) *m.*
- hen, poule *f.*
- hence *adv.* d'ici.
- henceforth, désormais.
- Henrietta, Henriette *f.*
- Henry, Henri *m.*
- her *pron.* (XXII.) la, lui, elle (XXIII. 2) ; *poss* (XIV. 1-3) son ; hers, sien (XXVII. 1, 2).
- here, ici, -ci (XIII. 3, XXIV.) ; here is or are, voici.
- high, 'haut.
- highly, 'hautement.
- him (XXII.), le, lui.
- his (XIV. 1-3, XXVII. 1, 2), son, sien.
- history, histoire *f.*
- hold, tenir (*irr.* 61).
- Holland, 'Hollande *f.*
- home : at home, chez moi (etc.), à la maison ; go home, aller à la maison.
- hope *v.* espérer, (wish) souhaiter.
- hope *n.* espoir *m.*, espérance *f.*
- horrible, horrible.
- horse, cheval *m.*
- hot, chaud.
- hour, heure *f.* ; half an hour, une demi-heure (XVI. 4*a*).
- house, maison *f.* : at the house of, chez.

how, *comment* (*interrog.*, *relat.*, *exclam.*), *que* (XXV. 4*d*); how many *or* much, *combien*, (*exclam.*) *que de*.
 however *adv.* *quelque . . . que, si . . . que, pour . . . que, tout . . . que*.
 however *conj.* *cependant, toutefois*.
 human, *humain*.
 hundred, *cent* (XV. 2*b*, 6).
 hunger, *faim f.*; be hungry, *avoir faim* (XIII. 6).
 husband, *mari m.*

I, *je, moi*.
 idle, *paresseux*.
 if, *si* (29*b*; XXXIV. 1*b*), *quand, que*.
 ignorant, *ignorant*.
 ill *adj.* *malade*; *adv.* *mal* (XXXI. 8).
 ill *n.* *mal m.*
 ill-will: bear ill-will to, *en vouloir à*.
 immediately, *tout de suite*.
 impossible, *impossible*.
 in, *en, dans* (VI. 1*a*), *à* (VI. 4, XIII. 6*a*), *de*.
 indeed, *en effet*, (=to be sure) *il est vrai*.
 India, *Indes f. pl.*
 infinite: an infinite amount, *infiniment*.
 injure, *nuire* (*irr.* 4) *à*.
 ink, *encre f.*
 inside *adv.* *dedans*.
 instead of, *au lieu de*.
 instruct, *instruire* (*irr.* 2).
 interest *v.* *intéresser*; interesting, *intéressant*.
 interrupt, *interrompre* (XX. 3*b*).
 into, *en, dans* (VI. 1*a*, 4).
 introduce one's self, *s'introduire* (*irr.* 1).
 invite, *inviter*.
 iron, *fer m.*; *adj.* (=of iron), *de fer, en fer*.
 it, *il, elle*; *le, la*; *as indef. subj.* (XI. 2, XXIV. 2), *ce, il*.
 Italy, *Italie f.*
 its, *son* (XIV.), *sien* (XXVII. 1, 2), *en*.

James, *Jacques m.*
 Jane, *Jeanne f.*
 January, *janvier m.*
 Japan, *Japon m.*
 Joan, Joanna, *Jeanne f.*
 John, *Jean m.*
 join, *joindre* (*irr.* 17).
 journal, *journal m.*
 journey, *voyage m.*
 Julia, *Julie f.*
 Julius, *Jules m.*
 July, *juillet m.*
 June, *juin m.*
 just *adj.* *juste*.
 just *adv.*: have *or* had just (done anything), *viens or venais de* (XXXI. 11*b*).

keep, *tenir* (*irr.* 61), *garder*; (word *or* a secret) *tenir*; keep silent, *taire* (*irr.* 25); keep doing anything, *impf.* (III. 7*b*).
 kind, *adj.* *bon* (to, pour).
 kind *n.* *sorte f.*, *genre m.*
 king, *roi m.*
 kingdom, *royaume m.*
 kitchen, *cuisine f.*
 knife, *couteau m.*
 know, *savoir* (*irr.* p. 159), (be acquainted with) *connaître* (*irr.* 18); know how (*with inf.*) *savoir* (XXXIV. 7*a*); know to be, *savoir* (XXXIV. 7*a*).

labor *v.* *travailler*.
 laborious, *laborieux*.
 lack *n.*: for lack of, *faute de*.
 lady, *dame f.*; my lady, the lady, *madame* (XIV. 4); the young lady, *mademoiselle* (XIV. 4).
 lament, *se plaindre* (*irr.* 15).
 large, *grand*.
 last, *dernier* (VIII. 5*c*); at last, *en fin*.
 late, (tardy) *tard*, (deceased) *feu*; later, *plus tard*.
 lately, *dernièrement, *récemment* (26*a*).
 latter, *celui-ci, ce . . . -ci*.
 laugh *v.* *rire* (*irr.* 13).
 laugh *n.* *rire m.*
 law, *loi f.*

- lazy, paresseux.
 lead *v.* mener, conduire, (induce) amener.
 leaf, feuille *f.*
 learn, apprendre (*irr.* 30).
 learned *adj.* savant.
 least, *adv.* le moins (XXXI. 8); at least, au moins.
 leave, (*trans.*, abandon) quitter, (leave behind) laisser; (*intr.*, depart) partir (*irr.* 38).
 leg, jambe *f.*
 length, longueur *f.*
 lengthily, longuement.
 less *adv.* moins (XXXI. 8); the less, moins (XXXIV. 3).
 lesson, leçon *f.*
 lest, que . . . ne.
 let, laisser; *impv.* (VIII. 7c).
 letter, lettre *f.*
 Lewis, Louis *m.*
 library, bibliothèque *f.*
 lie *v.* (be false) mentir (*irr.* 41).
 life, vie *f.*: in all my life, de ma vie.
 like *v.* aimer, vouloir (*irr.* p. 114); like better, aimer mieux.
 like *prep. conj.* comme, en.
 lily, *lis (74d) *m.*
 listen, écouter; listen to, écouter; listen to reason, entendre raison.
 little *adv.* peu (de, V. 4, XXXI. 8); a little, un peu, un peu de; little by little, peu à peu, petit à petit; too little, trop peu de; but little (*with v.*), ne . . . guère (XII. 5).
 little *adj.* petit.
 live, (dwell) demeurer, (be alive) vivre (*irr.* 32).
 lively, vif; in a lively manner, vivement.
 London, Londres *m.*
 long *adj.* long (VII. 6b).
 long *adv.* (a long time) longtemps; longer, encore; any longer, plus longtemps; no longer, ne . . . plus (XII. 5); so *or* as long as, tant que.
 look *v.* (appear to be) avoir l'air; look at, regarder; look for, chercher.
 lose, perdre, manquer.
 loud *adj. adv.* 'haut.
 Louis, Louis *m.*
 Louisa, Louise *f.*
 love *v.* aimer; be loved, se faire aimer.
 love *n.* amour *m.f.*; in love with, amoureux de.
 low, bas; in a low tone, low (*adv.*), bas.
 Lyons, Lyon *m.*
 mad, fou (VII. 7).
 madam, madame (XIV. 4).
 maid, (servant) domestique *f.*
 make, faire (*irr.* p. 150); (cause to be) rendre.
 man, homme *m.*
 manner, manière *f.*; in a manner to, de façon à.
 manufacturer, fabricant *m.*
 many, beaucoup de (V. 4), bien de (*with art.*: V. 4b), maint; many a, maint; as many, autant de; how many, combien de, que de (XXV. 4c); so many, tant de; too many, trop de.
 March, *mars (74d).
 Maria, Marie *f.*
 marry, (*trans.*) épouser, se marier avec; (*intr.*) se marier; be married, se marier; newly-married (person), nouveau marié.
 Mary, Marie *f.*
 master, maître *m.*
 matter *n.* affaire *f.*; what is the matter with him, qu'a-t-il? (XIII. 6b).
 matter *v.* importer.
 May, mai *m.*
 may *v.*, *subj. pres.* (IX. 6b), pouvoir (*irr.* p. 119; XXV. 8f).
 maybe, peut-être.
 me, me, moi.
 mean *v.* vouloir dire (XXXIII. 7d).
 means: the means (of anything), de quoi, les moyens; by means of, moyennant, à force de; by no means, ne . . . nullement, ne . . . point.
 meanwhile, en attendant, cependant.
 meat, viande *f.*

- meet *v.* (*trans.*) rencontrer, (*intr.*) se rencontrer; go to meet, aller à la rencontre *or* au-devant de.
 merchant, négociant *m.*, (retail) marchand *m.*
 merely by, rien qu'à *or* que de.
 meter, mètre *m.*
 Mexico, Mexique *m.*
 midday, midi *m.* (XVII. 4b).
 midnight, minuit *m.* (XVII. 4b).
 might *v.*, *subj.* (IX. 6b), pouvoir (XXV. 8f).
 milk *n.* lait *m.*
 milk *v.* traire (*irr.* 21).
 million, million *m.*
 mine, mien (XXVII. 1, 2).
 minute *n.* minute *f.*
 misfortune, malheur *m.*
 Miss, Mademoiselle *f.* (XIV. 4), Mlle.
 miss *v.* faillir (*irr.* 50).
 mistake: be mistaken, se tromper.
 mock, (*trans.*) se moquer de.
 moderately, modérément.
 modest, modeste.
 Monday, lundi *m.*
 money, argent *m.*
 month, mois *m.*
 more, plus (XXXI. 8), plus de (V. 4); the more, plus (XXXIV. 3).
 moreover, d'ailleurs, de plus.
 morning, matin *m.*, matinée *f.*; good-morning, bonjour *m.*
 morrow, lendemain *m.*
 most, le plus (XXXI. 8), le plus de, la plupart de (*with art.*; V. 4b).
 mother, mère *f.*
 mountain, montagne *f.*
 move, mouvoir (*irr.* 76), (*with emotion, the feelings*) émouvoir (*irr.* 76), toucher.
 Mr., Monsieur *m.*, M. (XIV. 4).
 Mrs., Madame *f.*, Mme. (XIV. 4).
 much, (*with v.*) beaucoup, très, fort; (*with n.*) beaucoup de (V. 4); as much, autant de; how much, combien, combien de; so much, tant, tant de; too much, trop, trop de; very much, beaucoup; not much, ne... pas beaucoup, ne... guère.
 music, musique *f.*
 must, il faut *etc.* (XXX. 6, 7), devoir (*irr.* p. 124; XXVI. 12f).
 my, mon (XIV.).
 name, nom *m.*
 napkin, serviette *f.*
 near *adv.* près, auprès; too near, trop près.
 near, near to, *prep.* près, près de; go *or* draw near *or* near to, s'approcher de.
 nearly, à peu près.
 neat, *net (76a), (clean) propre.
 necessary: be necessary, falloir (*irr.* p. 141).
 need *n.* besoin *m.*
 neighbor, voisin *m.*, voisine *f.*
 neither *pron.* ni l'un ni l'autre (XXVII. 7).
 neither *conj.* ni (XXXIV. 3).
 nephew, neveu *m.*
 never, ne... jamais (XII. 4).
 nevertheless, néanmoins.
 new, nouveau (VII. 7), neuf.
 news *n.* nouvelle *f.* (*s. or pl.*).
 newspaper, journal *m.*
 next *adj.* prochain; next day, lendemain, jour suivant.
 next *prep.*, près; *conj.* puis.
 niece, nièce *f.*
 night, nuit *f.*
 nine, neuf (61a. 85c).
 nineteen, *dix-neuf (81b).
 ninety, *quatre-vingt-dix (81b).
 ninth, neuvième
 no *rep.* non.
 no, none, no one *adj. n.* ne... aucun, ne... nul (XIV. 6a. d. XXVII. 6), ne... pas *or* point de; no longer, ne... plus (XII. 5).
 nobody, no one, ne... personne (XII. 4).
 none, *see* no, *adj.*
 nor, ni (XII. 5).
 north, nord *m.*
 Norway, Norvège *f.*
 not, ne; ne... pas, ne... point, non, non pas; not any, ne... aucun, ne... nul, ne... pas de; not anything, ne rien; not ever,

- ne . . . jamais ; not any one, ne . . . personne.
- nothing, ne . . . rien (XII. 4).
- novel *adj.* nouveau (VII. 7).
- novel *n.* roman *m.*
- November, novembre *m.*
- now *adv.* à présent, maintenant ; *conj.* or ; now . . . now, tantôt . . . tantôt.
- nowhere, nulle part.
- null *adj.* nul.
- obey, obéir à.
- oblige : be obliged to, falloir (XXX. 7).
- obtain, obtenir (*irr.* 61).
- o'clock, heure *f.* (XVII. 4).
- October, octobre *m.*
- of, de (III. 1-3) ; en, à.
- off : be off or go off, s'en aller (XXIX. 7c).
- offer, offrir (*irr.* 53).
- officer, officier *m.*
- often, souvent (XXXI. 7).
- old, vieux (VII. 7), (so many years) âgé de ; too old, trop âgé ; be (so many years) old, avoir . . . ans (XVII. 5) ; grow old, vieillir.
- on, sur.
- once, une fois ; at once, (immediately) tout de suite, sur le champ, (at the same time) à la fois.
- one, un (XV. 2a), (*indef.*) on (XXVII. 4) ; no one, *see* no ; some one, *see* some ; one another, l'un l'autre (XXVII. 7), *see* XXIX. 8) ; one who, anyone who, quiconque, qui.
- only *adj.* seul.
- only *adv.* ne . . . que (XII. 5), seulement.
- open *v.* ouvrir (*irr.* 55), éclore (*irr.* 28).
- opposite to, vis-à-vis de.
- or, ou, soit (XXXIV. 3).
- order : in order to, afin de, pour ; in order that, afin que, pour que.
- ordinarily, ordinairement.
- other, autre (XXVII. 6, 7) ; others, other people than one's self, autrui (XXVII. 6a).
- otherwise, autrement.
- ought, devoir (*irr.* p. 124).
- our, notre (XIV. 1).
- ours, nôtre (XXVII. 1, 2).
- out of, hors de, hors.
- outside, dehors.
- over, sur, (above) au-dessus de, (beyond) par-dessus ; triumph over, triompher de ; be all over, c'en être fait.
- owe, devoir (*irr.* p. 124).
- own *adj.* propre.
- ox, bœuf *m.* (*pl.* *bœufs ; 61a).
- package, paquet *m.*
- page, (of a book etc.) page *f.*
- pain, mal (XIII. 6a), (grief) peine *f.*
- paint *v.* peindre (*irr.* 16).
- painter, peintre *m.*
- painting *n.* peinture *f.*
- paper, papier *m.*
- pardon *v.* pardonner (to [any one], à).
- parent, parent *m.*
- Paris, Paris *m.*
- pass *v.* passer.
- past : half past, etc., *see* XVII. 4 ; during . . . past, depuis.
- peach, pêche *f.*
- pear, poire *f.*
- peas, pois *m.*
- peasant, *paysan (37a) *m.*
- pen, plume *f.*
- pencil, crayon *m.*
- pending *prep.* pendant.
- people, (nation) peuple, (folks) gens, (*indef.*) on (XXVII. 4).
- pepper, poivre *m.*
- perceive, apercevoir (*irr.* 65), s'apercevoir de.
- perfectly, parfaitement.
- perhaps, peut-être, probablement.
- permit, permettre (*irr.* 31) à.
- persuade, persuade.
- picture, tableau *m.*
- piece, morceau *m.*
- pity *v.* plaindre (*irr.* 15).
- pity *n.* pitié : it's a pity, c'est dommage.
- place, lieu *m.* place *f.* ; take place, avoir lieu.
- plan *n.* projet *m.*

- plate *n.* assiette *f.*
 plaything, jouet *m.*
 please, plaire à (*irr.* 24); if you please. s'il vous plaît: please to (*impv.*), veuillez (XXIV. 6c); be pleased to, se plaire à.
 pleasure, plaisir *m.*
 pocket, poche *f.*
 poet, poète *m.*
 poetry, poésie *f.*
 point, point *m.*; on the point of, sur le point de.
 poor, pauvre (VIII. 5c).
 portrait, portrait *m.*
 possess, posséder.
 possible, possible.
 post, post-office, poste *f.*
 potato, pomme de terre *f.*
 poultry-yard, basse-cour *f.*
 pound, livre *f.*
 power, pouvoir *m.*
 praise *v.* louer.
 prepare, préparer.
 present *n.* cadeau *m.*, présent *m.*, don *m.*
 present *adj.*: at present, à présent, maintenant; be present at, assister à.
 presently, présentement.
 prettily, joliment.
 pretty, joli.
 priest, prêtre *m.*
 probably, probablement.
 project *n.* projet *m.*
 promise, promettre (*irr.* 31: to, à).
 protect, protéger.
 provide, pourvoir (*irr.* 69): provided that, pourvu que.
 prudently, *prudemment (26a).
 Prussia, Prusse *f.*
 punish, punir.
 pupil, (scholar) élève *m.*
 put, mettre (*irr.* 31); put off, différer.
 Pyrenees, Pyrénées *f.*
 quarter, quart *m.* (XVI. 4b).
 queen, reine *f.*
 quickly, vite.
 quite, tout, bien.
 ragout, ragoût *m.*
 railroad, railway, chemin de fer *m.*, voie ferrée *f.*
 rain *v.* pleuvoir (*irr.* 71).
 rain *n.* pluie *f.*
 rainy, pluvieux.
 raise, lever.
 rather, plutôt.
 read, lire (*irr.* 11).
 ready, prêt; get ready, s'apprêter.
 really, vraiment, réellement, en effet.
 realm, royaume *m.*
 reason *n.* raison *f.*
 recall, rappeler (XXI. 3c).
 receive, recevoir (*irr.* 65).
 recently, dernièrement, *récemment (26a).
 recognize, reconnaître (*irr.* 18).
 red, rouge.
 regard, regarder: as regards, quant à.
 rejoice, se réjouir.
 relative *n.* parent *m.*
 remain, rester.
 remember, (recall to mind) se rappeler, se souvenir (*irr.* 60).
 remove, ôter.
 render, rendre.
 repent, se repentir (*irr.* 42).
 reply, répondre.
 republic, république *f.*
 requirement, besoin *m.*
 resolve, se résoudre (*irr.* 36), résoudre.
 retire, se retirer.
 return, revenir (*irr.* 60), retourner, être de retour.
 Rhine, Rhin *m.*
 rich, riche (in, de or en).
 riches, richesse *f.*
 ridicule *v.* se moquer de.
 right *n.* droit *m.*
 right *adj.* droit: be right, avoir raison (XIII. 6a).
 rise, se lever.
 river, rivière *f.*, fleuve *m.*
 road, chemin *m.*, route *f.*
 romance, roman *m.*
 room, chambre *f.*
 rose, rose *f.*
 roundabout *adv.* alentour.
 run, courir (*irr.* 52); run away, se sauver.

Russia, Russie *f.*

sailboat, bateau à voiles *m.*

sailor, matelot *m.*

salt, sel *m.*

saloon, salon *m.*

same, même.

Saturday, samedi *m.*

say, dire (*irr.* p 155).

scarcely, ne . . . guère (XII. 5), à peine.

school, école *f.*; to or at school, à l'école.

score, vingt, (about twenty) vingtaine *f.*

sea, mer *f.*

seat one's self, s'asseoir (*irr.* 78).

second *adj.* *second (58*f.*), *deuxième (81*c.*).

second *n.* *seconde (58*f.*) *f.*

see, voir (*irr.* 67); see again, revoir.

seek, chercher; seek one's fortune, chercher fortune.

seem, sembler.

Seine, Seine *f.*

seize, saisir.

-self, -même (XXIII. 3*c.*).

sell, vendre.

send, envoyer (*irr.* 81); send back, renvoyer; send for, envoyer chercher.

sense: good sense, bon *sens (74*d.*) *m.*

September, septembre *m.*

servant, domestique *m f.*, bonne *f.*

serve, servir (*irr.* 44); serve as, servir de.

set, mettre (*irr.* 31); set out, partir (*irr.* 38).

seven, *sept (71*a.*, 76*a.*).

seventeen, *dix-sept (71*a.*, 81*b.*).

seventh, *septième (71*a.*).

seventy, *soixante-dix (81*b.*, *c.*).

several, plusieurs.

sew, coudre (*irr.* 34).

she, elle.

sheep, brebis *f.*

sheet, (of paper etc.) feuille *f.*

shepherd, berger *m.*

shoe, soulier *m.*

shoemaker, cordonnier *m.*

shop, boutique *f.*, magasin *m.*

short *adj.* court; short of (*with inf.*), à moins de.

show *v.* montrer.

shun, fuir (*irr.* 47), éviter.

shut, fermer.

sick, malade.

side, côté *f.*

signify, vouloir dire (XXXIII. 7*d.*).

silent: be silent, se taire (*irr.* 25).

silk, soie *f.*

silver, argent *m.*

simple, simple.

since *prep.* depuis; dès; *conj.* puisque, (since the time that) depuis que, depuis que . . . ne.

sincere, sincère.

sincerely, sincèrement.

sing, chanter.

sir, *monsieur (54*b.*, 73*c.*).

sister, sœur *f.*

sit, seoir (*irr.* 78); sit down, s'asseoir (*irr.* 78).

six, *six (81*b.*).

sixteen, seize.

sixth, *sixième (81*c.*).

sixty, *soixante (81*c.*).

sleep *n.* sommeil *m.*

sleep *v.* dormir (*irr.* 43).

sleepy: be sleepy, avoir sommeil (XIII. 6).

slow, lent.

slowly, lentement.

small, petit.

snow, neiger.

so *adv.* si, ainsi, le (XXIII. 3*e.*);

so much or many, tant de; so long as, tant que; so far as, tant que, que; so-and-so, tel, un tel; so that (in such a way that), de or en sorte que.

so *conj.* ainsi.

soft, doux (VII. 8), mol (VII. 7).

softly, doucement, bas (XXXI. 9).

soldier, soldat *m.*

solely, seulement.

solve, résoudre (*irr.* 36).

some, de *with art.* (IV.), en (XXIII. 7), quelque (XIV. 6*c.*), quelques uns (XXVII. 5), tel; some time, quelque temps; some one, somebody, quelqu'un

- (XXVII. 5); some men are, il y a des gens qui sont.
 something, quelque chose (XXVII. 5); something to . . . with, de quoi.
 sometimes, quelquefois.
 somewhere, quelque part.
 son, *fils (68c, 74*d*) *m.*
 soon, tôt, bientôt; as soon as, aussitôt que, dès que.
 sooner, plus tôt, (rather) plutôt.
 soup, soupe *f.*
 south, *sud (60*a*) *m.*
 Spain, Espagne *f.*
 Spanish, espagnol, d'Espagne.
 speak, parler (with, à).
 spite: in spite of, malgré.
 spoon, *cuiller (73*b*) *f.*
 start, partir (*irr.* 38).
 station, gare *f.*
 stay, rester.
 steamboat, bateau à vapeur *m.*, vapeur *m.*
 stew *n.* ragoût *m.*
 still *adv.* encore; still more, davantage; *conj.* pourtant.
 stocking, bas *m.*
 stop, s'arrêter.
 store, magasin *m.*
 story, récit *m.*, conte *m.*, histoire *f.*
 straight, droit.
 street, rue *f.*
 strike, frapper.
 strong, fort.
 studio, atelier *m.*
 successful, heureux.
 such, tel; such a, un tel; such-and-such, tel.
 suddenly, soudain, soudainement, tout à coup.
 suffer, souffrir (*irr.* 54).
 suffice, be sufficient, suffire (*irr.* 6).
 sugar, sucre *m.*
 Sunday, dimanche *m.*
 suppose, supposer, croire.
 sure, sûr.
 suspect, se douter de.
 Sweden, Suède *f.*
 sweet, doux (VII. 8).
 sweetly, doucement.
 sweetmeat, confiture *f.*
 Switzerland, Suisse *f.*
 table, table *f.*
 table-cloth, nappe *f.*
 tailor, tailleur *m.*
 take, prendre (*irr.* 30), (conduct) mener; take back (along with one), ramener; take off or away, ôter (from, à); take place, avoir lieu; take a walk, se promener; take care, avoir soin.
 tale, conte *m.*, récit *m.*
 talk, parler.
 tall, grand.
 task, tâche *f.*
 tea, thé *m.*
 teach, enseigner.
 teacher, maître *m.*
 tear *n.* larme *f.*
 tedious, ennuyeux, ennuyant.
 tell, dire (*irr.* p. 155), raconter; tell a lie, mentir (*irr.* 41).
 ten, *dix (81*b*).
 tenth, *dixième (81*c*).
 Thames, Tamise *f.*
 than, que (IX 4), de (XV. 9).
 that *pron.* ce, ce . . . là (XIII. 2, 3), celui, celui-là, cela (XXIV.); (*relat.*) qui, que, lequel (XXVI.); all that, tout ce que; that which, ce qui or que (XXVI. 10*a*).
 that *conj.* que, pour que, afin que.
 thaw, dégeler.
 theatre, théâtre *m.*
 thee, te, toi.
 their, leur (XIV.).
 theirs, leur (XXVII. 1, 2).
 them, les, leur (XXII. 5), eux, elles (XXIII.).
 theme, thème *m.*
 then *adv.* alors; *conj.* donc, alors, puis.
 there, là, -là (XIII. 3, XXIV. 1*a*), y (XXIII. 8); there (*demonstr.*) is or are, voilà; there is etc., il y a etc. (XXX. 4).
 they, ils *m.*, elles *f.*, (*indef.*) on (XXVII. 4).
 thine, tien (XXVII. 1, 2).
 thing, chose *f.*; other things, autre chose.
 think, penser, songer; think of (turn one's thoughts to), penser à; think about (have an opinion of), penser de; (be of opinion)

- croire (*irr.* 26) ; (think to be, regard as) croire.
 third, troisième, (third part) tiers.
 thirst, soif *f.* ; be thirsty, avoir soif (XIII. 6).
 thirteen, treize.
 thirty, trente.
 this, ce, ce . . . -ci (XIII. 2, 3), celui, celui-ci, ceci (XXIV.) ; this or that is, voici, voilà.
 thou, tu.
 though, *same as* although.
 thousand, *mille (68^f), *mil (68^l).
 three, trois.
 through, par, à travers.
 thunder *v.* tonner.
 Thursday, jeudi *m.*
 thus, ainsi, de la sorte.
 thy, ton (XIV. 1, 2).
 till, *conj.* jusqu'à ce que, que.
 time, (period) temps *m.*, (successive) fois *f.* (XVII. 7), (of day) heure *f.* ; in good time, de bonne heure ; at the time of, lors de ; at the same time, en même temps ; have time, avoir le temps.
 tire, fatiguer ; be tired, se fatiguer.
 tiresome, fatigant, ennuyeux.
 to, à (III. 4-6), en, dans ; de ; *with inf.*, à, de, pour.
 to-day, aujourd'hui.
 together, ensemble
 to-morrow, demain ; day after to-morrow, après-demain.
 too, trop ; too much or many, trop de ; too little or few, trop peu de.
 tooth, dent *f.*
 toward, vers, envers ; toward evening, vers le soir.
 town, *ville (68^f).
 tragedy, tragédie *f.*
 translate, traduire (*irr.* 1).
 travel, voyager.
 tree, arbre *m.*
 true, vrai.
 truly, vraiment, véritablement.
 trunk, malle *f.*
 trust *v.* se fier à.
 truth, vérité *f.*
 try, essayer.
 Tuesday, mardi *m.* ; Tuesdays, le mardi.
 tureen, soupière *f.*
 twelve, douze ; twelve o'clock, midi or minuit (XVII. 4^b) *m.*
 twentieth, vingtième.
 twenty, vingt (76^a).
 twice, deux fois, *bis (74^d).
 two, deux.
 ugly, laid, vilain.
 uncle, oncle *m.*
 under, sous.
 understand, comprendre (*irr.* 30).
 undertake, entreprendre (*irr.* 30).
 unhappiness, malheur *m.*
 unhappy, malheureux.
 united, uni ; United Provinces, Provinces-Unies ; United States, États-Unis.
 unless, à moins que . . . ne, sans que, hors que.
 until *conj.* jusqu'à ce que, en attendant que.
 upon, sur.
 up-stairs, en haut.
 us, nous.
 use *v.* user de, se servir (*irr.* 44) de ; used to, *impf.* (III. 7^b).
 use *n.* : make use of, se servir (*irr.* 44) de.
 usually, ordinairement.
 vain, vain.
 value : have the value of, valoir (*irr.* 73).
 vase, vase *m.*
 vegetable *n* légume *m.*
 velvet, velours *m.*
 Venice, Venise *f.*
 very *adv.* très, bien, fort ; very much, beaucoup.
 very *adj.* même.
 Vesuvius, Vésuve *m.*
 vie, le disputer.
 Vienna, Vienne *f.*
 village, *village (68^f) *m.*
 violet, violette *f.*
 voice, voix *f.* ; with louder voice, d'un ton plus haut.
 volume, volume *m.*, tome *m.*
 wait, attendre ; wait for, attendre.
 wake, (*trans.*) éveiller, (*intr.*) s'éveiller.

- walk, *marcher, se promener*; take a walk, *se promener*; go to walk, *aller se promener*.
- want, (desire) *vouloir* (*irr.* p. 114), (lack, be in need of) *falloir* (*irr.* p. 141; XXX. 8).
- war, *guerre* *f.*
- warm *adj.* *chaud*; feel *or* be warm, *avoir chaud* (XIII. 6); be warm weather, *faire chaud* (XXXII. 9*a*).
- watch *n.* (timekeeper) *montre* *f.*
- water, *eau* *f.*
- we, *nous*.
- weak, *faible*.
- weary *v.* *fatiguer*.
- weather, *temps* *m.*
- Wednesday, *mercredi* *m.*
- week, *semaine* *f.*
- weep, weep for, *pleurer*.
- well, bien (XXXI. 8); wish well, *vouloir du bien*; be as well, *valoir autant*.
- well-behaved, *sage*.
- well-satisfied, *content* (with, de).
- west, **ouest* (76*a*).
- what *adj.* *quel* (XIII. 4); *subst.* *qui, que, quoi* (XXV.), *ce qui or que* (XXVI. 10*a*).
- whatever, *quoi que, quel que, quel-que . . . que, quelconque*.
- when *adv.* *quand*, (in *or* at which) *où*; *conj.* *quand, lorsque, dès que, que*.
- whence, *d'où, dont* (XXVI. 7*b*).
- where, *où* (XXVI. 8).
- whereas, *tandis que*.
- wherewith, *de quoi* (XXVI. 6*a*).
- whether, *si* (XXXIV. 1*b*), *que*; whether . . . or, *soit . . . soit, soit que . . . soit que, que . . . ou que*.
- which *adj.* *quel* (XIII. 4), *subst.* *lequel* (XXV. 5), (*relat.*) *qui, que, lequel* (XXVI.); of which, *dont* (XXVI. 7); to *or* at which, *où*.
- while *conj.* *pendant que, tandis que*.
- white, *blanc* (VII. 6*b*).
- who, whom, *qui* (XXV.), (*relat.*) *qui, que, lequel* (XXVI.).
- whoever, *qui que, quel que, qui, quiconque* (XXVI. 9).
- whole, tout entier, tout.
- whose, *de qui, duquel, dont*, (to whom belonging) *à qui*.
- why, *pourquoi, que* (XXV. 4*d*).
- wicked, *mauvais*.
- wife, **femme* (26*a*) *f.*
- will, be willing *v.* *vouloir* (*irr.* p. 114; XXIV. 6*e*).
- William, *Guillaume* *m.*
- window, *fenêtre* *f.*
- wine, *vin* *m.*
- winter, **hiver* (73*b*) *m.*
- wise, *sage*.
- wish *v.* *vouloir* (*irr.* p. 114), *désirer*; (wish good-day etc.) *souhaiter*.
- with, *avec*, (by) *par, à, de*, (at the house of) *chez*.
- within *adv.* *dedans*; *prep.* *en*.
- without *prep.* *sans, à moins de* (*with inf.*); go *or* do without, *se passer de*; *conj.* (XXXIV. 5*b*), *sans que, hors que, que . . . ne*.
- without *adv.* *dehors*.
- woman, **femme* (26*a*) *f.*
- wood, *bois* *m.*
- wooden, *de bois* (V. 1*b*).
- wool, *laine* *f.*
- word, *parole* *f.*, *mot* *m.*; keep one's word, *tenir parole*.
- work *n.* (labor) *travail* *m.*, (production) *m.* *ouvrage*.
- work *v.* *travailler*.
- workman, *ouvrier* *m.*
- workwoman, *ouvrière* *f.*
- world, *monde* *m.*
- worse *adj.* *pire* (IX. 3); *adv.* *pis* (XXXI. 8).
- worst, le *pire* (IX. 3); *adv.* le *pis* (XXXI. 8).
- worth: be worth, *valoir* (*irr.* 73).
- write, *écrire* (*irr.* 12).
- wrong *n.* *tort*; be wrong *or* in the wrong, *avoir tort* (XIII. 6).
- yard *n.* (measure) *mètre* *m.*
- year, an *m.*, *année* *f.*
- yes, *oui, si*.
- yesterday, **hier* (73*a*); day before yesterday, *avant-hier*.
- yet *adv.* *encore*; *conj.* *pourtant, toutefois*.
- yonder *adv.* *là-bas*.
- you, *vous* (I. 9*b*, VII. 1*b*).
- young, *jeune*; young lady, *mademoiselle* (XIV. 4).
- your, *votre* (XIV.).
- yours, *vôtre* (XXVII. 1, 2).

FAMILIAR CONVERSATIONS.

The teacher is recommended to exercise the pupils thoroughly in the conversational phrases here given, which may be varied by substituting for the nouns used those contained in the accompanying vocabularies, thus familiarizing them with the ordinary phrases of every-day conversation as well as with a large number of useful words.

I. DANS LES MAGASINS.—IN THE SHOPS.

Je m'en vais en ville faire quelques emplettes ; voulez-vous m'accompagner ? I am going to town to make some purchases ; will you go with me ?

Volontiers. Attendez seulement un instant ; il faut que je change de robe. Willingly. Only wait a moment ; I must change my dress.

Très bien ; mais dépêchez-vous, et n'oubliez pas d'apporter votre portemonnaie. Very well ; but hurry, and do not forget to bring your purse.

Où allez-vous ? Where are you going ?

À un magasin de nouveautés ; le voici. Entrons. First to a fancy shop ; here it is. Let us go in.

Avez-vous des gants ? Have you any gloves ?

Madame* désire-t-elle des gants de Suède ou des gants glacés ? Do you wish undressed kid or glacé kid gloves ?

Montrez-moi des gants de Suède, numéro 6. Show me undressed gloves, No. 6.

En voici de très bons, et dans des couleurs fort à la mode. Here are some very good ones, and in very fashionable colors.

Je n'aime pas ces nuances jaunes ; n'en avez-vous pas de noirs ? I do not like these yellow shades ; have you no black ones ?

Madame n'ignore pas que les gants noirs s'usent plus vite que les gants de couleurs ? You know that black gloves wear out more quickly than colored ones ?

N'importe ; je vous prie de me mettre de côté ces deux paires ; je les essaierai plus tard. No matter ; please put aside these two pairs for me. I will try them later.

* The French shopkeeper almost invariably addresses his customers in the 3d person.

- Permettez-moi de vous faire voir ces gants clairs. C'est tout ce qu'il y a de plus joli pour soirée.
- Ce n'est pas la peine de me les montrer. Je n'en ai aucun besoin. Qu'avez-vous de nouveau en fait de broderies ?
- Comment madame trouve-t-elle ces mouchoirs brodés ? Il sont d'un genre tout à fait nouveau.
- Et qui me paraît être d'assez mauvais goût.
- Madame préférerait peut-être ces mouchoirs de dentelle.
- Ils sont ravissants, mais ils coûtent sans doute très cher.
- Mais du tout, madame, ce sont des mouchoirs d'occasion ; nous les vendons 10 francs (la) pièce.
- En ce cas j'en prends deux.
- Madame ne veut-elle pas jeter un coup d'œil sur ces foulards des Indes ?
- Merci, j'ai déjà tout ce qu'il me faut.
- Envoyez-moi tout cela, et n'oubliez pas d'y ajouter votre compte.
-
- Voilà le magasin de mercerie que je cherchais.
- Il me faut du fil et des aiguilles.
- Madame préfère des aiguilles anglaises ?
- Donnez-m'en de très fines. J'en ai besoin pour broder.
- Montrez-moi aussi des aiguilles à tricoter. Avez-vous du ruban de fil très large ? Ceci fera bien mon affaire.
- Ajoutez-y deux bobines de coton et un écheveau de soie noire,
- Let me show you these light gloves. Nothing could be prettier for evening wear.
- It is not worth while to show them to me. I do not need them at all. What new things have you in embroideries ?
- How do you like these embroidered handkerchiefs ? They are in quite a new style.
- And one which seems to me to be in rather bad taste.
- Perhaps you would prefer these lace handkerchiefs.
- They are charming, but they are doubtless very dear.
- Not at all, madame, they are bargains ; we are selling them for 10 francs apiece.
- In that case I will take two.
- Will you not glance at these India silks ?
- Thanks, I have everything I need already.
- Send me all these things, and do not forget to add your bill.
-
- Here is the thread and needle shop I was looking for.
- I want some thread and needles.
- Do you prefer English needles ?
- Give me some very fine ones. I want them for embroidering.
- Show me some knitting-needles too. Have you very broad tape ? That will do for me.
- Add two spools of thread and a skein of black silk.

| | |
|---|---|
| Faites du tout un paquet aussi petit que possible. | Put it all up in as small a package as you can. |
| À combien monte mon mémoire ? | How much is my bill ? I wish |
| Je veux le payer tout de suite. | to pay at once. I have no |
| Je n'ai pas de monnaie. Veuillez bien me changer ce billet de banque. | change. Please change this bank-note for me. |

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| le négociant, the merchant. | une bobine, spool. |
| le marchand, shopkeeper. | un peloton, ball. |
| le pharmacien, druggist. | un dé, thimble. |
| la pharmacie, drug-store. | une paire de ciseaux, scissors. |
| un épicier, grocer. | un passe-lacet, bodkin. |
| une épicerie, grocery, | du galon, braid. |
| un pâtissier, pastry-cook. | des portes et des crochets, hooks |
| la pâtisserie, cake-shop. | and eyes. |
| un joallier, jeweller. | des boutons, buttons. |
| un horloger, watchmaker. | une parure, set of ornaments. |
| un cordonnier, shoemaker. | un collier, necklace. |
| un teinturier, dyer. | un bracelet, bracelet. |
| un tapissier, upholsterer. | une bague, ring. |
| un libraire, bookseller. | une montre, watch. |
| un relieur, bookbinder. | une agrafe, clasp. |
| un papetier, stationer. | une boucle d'oreille, ear-ring. |
| une marchande de modes, milliner. | un flacon, smelling-bottle. |
| un banquier, banker. | un éventail, fan. |
| une boîte à ouvrage, workbox. | une ombrelle, parasol. |
| une aiguille à tapisserie, worsted needle. | un parapluie, umbrella. |
| une aiguille à repriser, darning-needle. | un ruban, ribbon. |
| un paquet d'aiguilles, paper of needles. | un livre broché, an unbound book. |
| du fil, thread. | un livre relié, a bound book. |
| une aiguillée, needleful. | la reliure, binding. |
| un écheveau, skein. | une mètre, metre. |
| | une livre, pound. |
| | l'argent, money. |
| | la monnaie, change. |

II. UN DÎNER.—A DINNER.

| | |
|---|--|
| Le dîner est servi. Allons nous mettre à table. | Dinner is ready. Let us sit down at the table. |
| Qu'est-ce qu'on va nous servir ? | What is there for dinner ?* |
| Voilà d'abord de la soupe. Voulez-vous du potage à la julienne ou de la soupe à l'oseille ? | First there is soup. Will you have julienne or sorrel soup ? |
| Donnez-moi du potage, s'il vous plaît. | Give me julienne, if you please. |
| Prenez-vous du sauterne avec votre soupe ? | Will you have sherry with your soup ? |
| J'en veux bien, si vous voulez m'en donner un tout petit verre. | With pleasure, if you will give me a very small glass of it. |
| Auguste, coupez-moi un morceau de pain. | Augustus, cut me a bit of bread. |
| Désirez-vous maintenant du poisson ? | Do you wish some fish now ? |
| Ce saumon a l'air d'être très bon. J'en prendrai volontiers un tout petit morceau. | This salmon looks very good. I will take a small bit. |
| Voilà un bon gigot. En voulez-vous ? Je peux vous en donner de très bien cuit. | Here is a fine leg of mutton. Do you want some ? I can give you some that is very well done. |
| Non, merci ; je ne mange jamais de mouton. J'attendrai le gibier. | No, thanks ; I never eat mutton. I will wait for the game. |
| Auguste, versez-moi de l'eau. | Augustus, pour me out some water. |
| En attendant ne voulez-vous pas prendre des légumes ? | While waiting will you not take some vegetables ? |
| Donnez-moi des petits pois et des asperges. | Give me some green peas and some asparagus. |
| Malheureusement il n'y a pas d'asperges à ce moment-ci, mais je peux vous offrir des artichauts excellents. | Unfortunately there is no asparagus now, but I can offer you excellent artichokes. |

* Literally : What are they going to serve us, or give us ?

- ✓ S'il n'y a pas d'asperges, il faut que je m'en passe; mais je déteste les artichauts. If there is no asparagus I shall have to do without it, but I dislike artichokes.
- ✓ Voulez-vous avoir la bonté de me passer le sel? Will you be kind enough to pass me the salt?
- ✓ (Voulez-vous qu'on vous apporte des cailles ou du lapin?) (Do you wish to have) quail or hare brought you?)
- Je préfère les cailles au lapin. I prefer quail to hare.
- Quelle salade voulez-vous avec votre caille? On nous sert du cresson et de la laitue. What salad will you take with your quail? There are cresses and lettuce.
- ~~Donnez-moi du cresson, s'il vous plaît, et dites à Auguste d'aller nous chercher une bouteille de vin rouge.~~ Give me some cress, if you please, and tell Augustus to get us a bottle of claret.
- ~~Voici une omelette aux confitures et des meringues à la vanille.~~ Here is a sweet omelette and some vanilla meringues. Will you have some?
- ✓ En voulez-vous? As for me, I never eat sweet dishes.
- ~~Quant à moi, je ne mange jamais de plats doux.~~
- ✓ Cette omelette est pourtant excellente. Je vous prie d'y goûter. This omelette is nevertheless excellent. I beg you to taste it.
- ✓ J'aime mieux prendre de ces fruits. I like better to take some of these fruits. Here are magnificent grapes, and these plums seem to me of the best.
- Voilà des raisins magnifiques, et ces prunes aussi me semblent être des meilleures.
- ✓ Maintenant donnez-moi une tasse de café noir. Now give me a cup of black coffee.
- ✓ Avez-vous bien dîné, monsieur? Have you dined well?
- Moi, j'ai admirablement dîné. Je vous fais compliment de votre cuisinière. Elle nous a servi un dîner on ne peut mieux. I have dined excellently. I congratulate you on your cook. She has served us a dinner which could hardly be surpassed.
- Merci, monsieur. Vous êtes bien complaisant pour moi. Thanks, sir. You are very kind.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| le dîner, the dinner. | les ris-de-veau, sweetbreads. |
| le déjeuner, the breakfast. | les légumes, vegetables. ✓ |
| le souper, the supper. | le chou, the cabbage. |
| le goûter, the lunch. | le navet, the turnip. |
| la soupe, the soup. | la carotte, the carrot. |
| le dessert, the dessert. | le chou-fleur, the cauliflower. |
| le café, the coffee. | les épinards, the spinach. |
| le thé, the tea. | les haricots verts, string-beans. |
| le chocolat, the chocolate. | les tomates, tomatoes. |
| la crème, the cream. | le céleri, the celery. |
| le riz, the rice. | un oignon, an onion. |
| l'œuf, the egg. | le persil, the parsley. |
| le blanc, the white of eggs. | le pâté, the meat-pie. |
| le jaune, the yolk " " | la tarte, the tart. |
| la coque, the shell " " | le fruit, the fruit. |
| œufs à la coque, boiled " " | les cerises, cherries. |
| œufs sur le plat, baked " " | les groseilles, currants. |
| un plat, a dish. | la pêche, the peach. |
| le bouillon, the bouillon. | la poire, the pear. |
| le bœuf, the beef. | un abricot, an apricot. |
| le rôti, the roast. | les fraises, strawberries. |
| le bifstek, the beefsteak. | les framboises, raspberries. |
| le veau, the veal. | les ananas, pineapples. |
| la côtelette, the cutlet. | les bananes, bananas. |
| le hachis, the mince-meat. | les figues, figs. |
| le mouton, the mutton. | les noix, nuts. |
| le gigot, the leg of mutton. | les amandes, almonds. |
| le jambon, the ham. | une glace, an ice. |
| le gras, the fat. | une gelée, a jelly. |
| le maigre, the lean. | les compotes, preserves. |
| une tranche, a slice. | les confitures, sweetmeats. |
| la sauce, the gravy. | la tartine, a slice of bread, with |
| le poulet, the chicken. | butter, jam, etc. |
| le canard, the duck. | les crêpes, pancakes. |

III. CHEZ LA COUTURIÈRE.—AT THE DRESSMAKER'S.

- ✓ Est-ce que c'est ici que demeure Madame des Trois-Étoiles ? Does Mrs. Blank live here ? ✓
- ✓ Oui, madame. Yes. ✓
- ✓ On m'a recommandé de m'adresser à vous pour me faire faire une robe. I have been recommended to apply to you to have a dress made. ✓
- Je ferai tout mon possible pour plaire à madame, et je crois que mes pratiques n'ont jamais à se plaindre de moi. I will do my best to please you, and I think my customers never have to complain of me.
- Que demandez-vous pour une façon de robe ? What do you ask for making a dress ?
- C'est selon la façon et l'étoffe. Quelle espèce de robe madame désire-t-elle ? That depends on the style and the material. What kind of a dress do you desire ?
- Une robe de mérinos très simple, et puis quelque chose d'habillé pour la soirée. A very simple cashmere dress, and then something more dressy for evening wear.
- Je vous engage beaucoup à prendre une robe de ce velours rouge foncé. C'est toujours élégant, et ça ne se chiffonne pas. J'y ajouterais des garnitures de soie d'une nuance un peu plus claire avec des passementeries. Ça sera une toilette ravissante. I advise you to take a dress of this dark-red velvet. It is always handsome, and does not easily grow shabby. I should add trimmings of silk of a rather lighter shade and of passementerie. That would make a charming costume.
- Et quel en sera le prix ? And what will the price be ?
- Madame l'aura pour 250 francs, avec les fournitures, bien entendu. You may have it for two hundred and fifty francs, with all the makings, of course. ✓
- Cela fera bien mon affaire. That will do very well. ✓
- Madame la désire naturellement à corsage collant. You wish it, of course, to have a tight-fitting waist. ✓
- Oui, mais ne me serrez pas la taille. J'aime pouvoir respirer à pleins poumons. Yes, but do not make the waist too tight. I like to be able to breathe with full lungs. ✓

| | |
|---|---|
| ✓ Je ferai bien attention à ce que la robe ne vous gêne pas. | I will take care that the dress does not incommode you. |
| Quant à la robe de mérinos, je m'en rapporte à vous. Je veux seulement qu'elle soit d'une façon simple et d'une couleur foncée. | As for the cashmere dress, I leave it entirely to you. I only wish it to be simply made and dark-colored. |
| Madame n'aime pas l'étoffe rayée ou en carreaux ? | Do you not like a striped or plaided stuff ? |
| N'importe. Je tiens seulement à ce qu'elle m'aille bien. | No matter. I only care to have it fit well. |
| Ne vous en inquiétez pas, madame. | Do not trouble yourself about that. |
| Je vous prie de m'envoyer les deux robes au plus tôt. | Please send me the two dresses as soon as possible. |
| Si madame veut les essayer lundi, elle les aura samedi sans faute. | If you will try them on Monday, you can have them Saturday without fail. |

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| un trousseau, a set of clothes. | le volant, the flounce. |
| la toilette, the dress. | un corsage montant, a high waist. |
| la coiffure, the head-dress. | “ “ décolleté, a low “ |
| un chapeau, a hat. | la doublure, the lining. |
| la forme, the shape. | les manches, the sleeves. |
| le bord, the brim. | une robe de chambre, a dressing-gown. |
| la coiffe, the lining. | un peignoir, a dressing-gown. |
| un chapeau-fermé, a bonnet. | une écharpe, a scarf. |
| le nœud, the bow. | un châle, a shawl. |
| la plume, the feather. | un manteau, a mantle. |
| un bonnet, a cap (lady's). | une amazone, a riding-habit. |
| une robe, a dress. | un manchon, a muff. |
| une robe de bal, a ball-dress. | un voile, a veil. |
| grande toilette, full dress. | la chaussure, all kinds of shoes. |
| la jupe, the skirt. | les bottines, ladies' boots. |
| la jupe de dessus, the over-skirt. | les souliers, shoes. |
| “ “ “ dessous, the under-skirt. | les brodequins, laced shoes. |
| la queue, the train. | |

des souliers tout faits, ready-made shoes.
le talon, the heel.
les pantoufles, slippers.

les bas, stockings.
un jupon, a petticoat.
un tablier, an apron.
une ceinture, a belt.

IV. CHEZ LE TAILLEUR.—AT THE TAILOR'S.

- | | |
|---|---|
| ✓ En quoi peut-on vous servir, monsieur ? | How can I serve you, sir ? |
| ✓ Je veux me faire faire un habit. | I want to have a coat made. |
| ✓ Charles, faites voir à monsieur des draps de toutes couleurs. | Charles, show the gentleman cloths in all colors. |
| ✓ Je ne veux voir que du noir. Ce drap-ci me semble bien bon. Quel en est le prix ? | I only want to look at black. This cloth seems very good. What is the price ? |
| ✓ Nous le vendons quinze francs le mètre. | We sell it for fifteen francs a metre. |
| ✓ C'est bien cher, à ce qu'il me paraît. | That seems to me very dear. |
| Je vous assure que ce n'est pas cher pour ce drap-ci ; tâtez-le donc un peu, comme c'est fin. | I assure you it is not expensive for that cloth. Just feel how fine it is. |
| Voulez-vous vous donner la peine de passer dans le fond du magasin ? On y prendra votre mesure. | May I trouble you to go to the end of the shop ? They will take your measure there. |
| Quand viendrez-vous l'essayer ? Il sera prêt dès ce soir. | When will you come to try it on ? It will be ready this evening. |
| L'habit vous va à merveille. | The coat fits you wonderfully well. |
| Il me semble qu'il y a un petit pli dans le dos. | It seems to me that there is a slight wrinkle in the back. |
| Il y a en effet une petite correction à faire. | There is indeed a slight change to be made. |
| Les manches sont trop étroites. Elles me gênent les bras. | The sleeves are too tight. They confine my arms. |
| Je les ferai plus longues et plus larges, si vous le désirez. | I will make them longer and looser if you prefer it. |
| Est-ce que monsieur n'a pas aussi besoin d'un pantalon ? | Do you not need a pair of trousers too ? |

| | |
|--|---|
| Non, mais vous pouvez me montrer des gilets de soie. | No, but you may show me some silk vests. |
| Je trouve le dessin de celui-ci très joli ; envoyez-le-moi. | I think the pattern of this one very pretty. You may send it to me. |
| Je veux que vous mettiez un collet de velours à mon pardessus d'hiver. | I want you to put a velvet collar on to my winter-overcoat. |
| Je l'enverrai chercher ce soir. | I will send for it this evening. |

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|------------------------------|---|
| un habit, a coat. | les boutonsnières, the button-holes. ✓ |
| un frac, a dress-coat. | des bretelles, suspenders. |
| le pantalon, the trousers. | le linge, the linen. ✓ |
| un redingote, an overcoat. ✓ | une chemise, a shirt. ✓ |
| un paletot, " " " ✓ | un col, a collar. ✓ |
| un gilet, a vest. | des manchettes, cuffs. ✓ |
| le collet, the coat-collar. | une cravate, a cravat. ✓ |
| les manches, the sleeves. | un chapeau, a hat. ✓ |
| les pans, the coat-skirts. | une casquette, a cap. ✓ |
| une couture, a seam. | des bottes, boots. ✓ |
| la doublure, the lining. | des bottes vernies, patent-leather boots. ✓ |
| les revers, the facings. | |
| une poche, a pocket. ✓ | les pantoufles, slippers. ✓ |

V. LA MAISON.—THE HOUSE.

| | |
|--|--|
| ✓ J'ai la plus grande envie de voir votre nouvelle demeure. | I want very much to see your new house. |
| ✓ Je m'y rends en ce moment. Venez avec moi. Je vous ferai voir toute la maison de la cave au grenier. | I am just going there. Come with me and I will show you the whole house from cellar to garret. |
| ✓ Vous avez une très belle façade. | You have a handsome front. |
| ✓ Prenez garde de glisser. On est en train de nettoyer le perron. | Take care not to slip. They are cleaning the steps. |

- De combien de pièces se compose le rez-de-chaussée ?
 How many rooms have you on the ground floor ?
- Nous avons deux salons et une salle à manger.
 We have two parlors and a dining-room.
- Que votre salon donne bien sur le jardin ! J'aime aussi ces fenêtres à grands carreaux. On doit avoir un coup d'œil magnifique du haut de la maison.
 How prettily your parlor looks on the garden ! I like these large-paned windows, too. One must get a magnificent view from the top of the house.
- Vous allez le voir plus tard. Maintenant regardez un peu la salle-à-manger. Comment la trouvez-vous ?
 You shall see it later. Now look at the dining-room. How do you like it ?
- Je trouve cette grande cheminée en bois de chêne admirable. Et à quoi vous sert cette petite chambre en face ?
 I think this great fire-place in oak very fine. What use do you make of this little room opposite ?
- Mon père compte en faire son cabinet de travail.
 My father is going to use it for his study.
- Il vous manque encore une bibliothèque.
 You have no library yet.
- Cela se trouve au premier. Ne voulez-vous pas monter ?
 That is on the second floor.*
 Will you not go up-stairs ?
- Quel bel escalier vous avez ! D'où viennent ces belles boiseries ?
 What a fine staircase you have !
 Where did you get these fine carvings ?
- Mon père les a fait faire exprès en Italie.
 My father had them made to order in Italy.
- Voilà la bibliothèque. De ce côté-ci se trouvent trois chambres à coucher et une petite salle-de-bain.
 Here is the library. On this side are three bed-rooms and a small bath-room.
- Vous avez de grandes chambres, et des cabinets de toilette très commodes.
 You have large rooms, and the dressing-rooms are very convenient.
- Au second nous avons encore trois chambres et une chambre d'enfant.
 On the third floor we have three bedrooms and a nursery.

* The French count as the first floor of a house what we call the second, namely, the one up the first flight of stairs.

- Il me semble que vous allez être très bien installée ici. Quelle est votre chambre à vous ? It seems to me that you will be very well off here. Which is your own room ?
- Je coucherai dans la chambre de devant au second. I shall sleep in the front room on the third story.
- Et quand est-ce que vous comptez déménager ? And when do you mean to move ?
- On va encore poser des parquets dans les salons, abattre quelques cloisons et faire quelques armoires dans les chambres à coucher. Mais nous comptons nous y installer vers la fin du mois prochain. They are going to lay floors in the parlors, and to knock down some partitions and make some cupboards in the bedrooms. But we expect to move in about the end of next month.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| la façade, the front of the house. | le plafond, the ceiling. |
| la porte, the door. | la cheminée, the fire-place. |
| le numéro, the number. | l'âtre, the hearth. |
| la sonnette, the bell. | le plancher, the floor. |
| le décrottoir, the scraper. | la mansarde, the attic. |
| le vestibule, the entry. | une poutre, a beam. |
| le mur, the wall. | une solive, a joist. |
| le cloison, the partition. | une gouttière, a spout. |
| l'escalier, the stairs. | un tuyeau, a pipe. |
| la rampe, the banisters. | un égout, a drain. |
| les marches, the steps. | la pierre, the stone. |
| un étage, a story. | la brique, the brick. |
| un appartement, a suite of rooms. | une ardoise, a slate. |
| une chambre, a room. | de la chaux, lime. |
| la serrure, the lock. | le mortier, the mortar. |
| le trou de serrure, the key-hole. | le plâtre, the plaster. |
| un verrou, a bolt. | un échafaud, a scaffold. |
| un gond, a hinge. | une planche, a plank. |
| la fenêtre, the window. | les frais, the expenses. |
| le châssis, the sash. | les impositions, the taxes. |
| un volet, a shutter. | le loyer, the rent. |
| une vitre, a pane of glass. | les locataires, the tenants. |
| un balcon, a balcony. | le propriétaire, the landlord. |
| une marquise, an awning. | le quartier, the neighborhood. |

VI. LE MOBILIER.—THE FURNITURE.

- ✓ Je viens de louer cet appartement meublé. Comment trouvez-vous mon salon ? I have just hired this furnished apartment. How do you like my drawing-room ?
- ✓ C'est une très belle pièce, seulement il lui manque un je ne sais quoi. On voit tout de suite que ce n'est pas vous qui en avez choisi les meubles. It is a fine room, but it lacks a certain something. One sees at once that you did not choose the furniture.
- ✓ Oui, je comprends parfaitement ce que vous voulez dire. Je compte y ajouter tout ce qu'il faut pour en faire un salon charmant. Comment trouvez-vous le tapis ? Yes, I understand perfectly what you mean. I mean to add everything that is necessary to make it a charming room. How do you like the carpet ?
- ✓ Je le trouve très bien. Les couleurs en sont peu frappantes, et le dessin très joli. I like it very much. The colors are not striking, and the pattern is very pretty.
- ✓ Eh bien ; passons aux meubles. Qu'en dites-vous ? Very well ; now for the furniture. What do you say to it ?
- ✓ J'aime beaucoup la forme de ces grands fauteuils, et ils sont fort bien sculptés. Quant au canapé, je le trouve assez laid, je l'avoue. I like the shape of these big arm-chairs, and they are handsomely carved. As for the sofa, I confess that I think it very ugly.
- ✓ Je crois que je ferai mieux d'en acheter un autre, quelque chose de plus léger. I think it will be better for me to buy another, something lighter.
- Je vous y engage beaucoup. Puis il vous faut quelques petites tables chargées de livres et de petits objets d'art. I advise it by all means. Then you need some small tables covered with books and bric-à-brac.
- Nous avons de très belles porcelaines du Japon ; si je les mettais sur cette étagère ? We have some very beautiful Japanese porcelains ; what if I should put them on this stand ?
- Certainement ; ça fera très bien. Do so ; it will look very well.
- J'ai encore un petit meuble en acajou que je mettrai entre les deux fenêtres. I have a small piece of furniture in mahogany which I shall put between these two windows.

Est-ce que vous n'avez pas d'instrument ? Have you not a piano ?

Oui, j'ai un piano à queue. Je crois qu'il fera bon effet de ce côté-ci. Nous avons encore quelques grands tableaux qui cacheront un peu cette vilaine tapisserie.

I have a grand piano. I think it will look well 'on this side. We have also a few large paintings which will serve to hide this ugly paper.

Mais que vos lustres sont magnifiques ! Tout cela doit donner une lumière éblouissante.

But how splendid your chandeliers are ! They must give a dazzling light.

Ne trouvez-vous pas que ces grands rideaux de damas assombrissent trop le salon ?

Don't you think that these great damask curtains darken the room too much ?

Mais du tout. Votre salon ne saurait être sombre avec ces grandes fenêtres, et je trouve que le bleu des rideaux convient parfaitement à votre tapis et à votre mobilier. Je suis sûre que lorsque vous aurez fait les petits changements dont nous venons de parler, vous aurez un salon tout à fait comme il faut.

Not at all. Your room could not be dark with these great windows, and I think that the blue in the curtains goes very well with your carpet and your furniture. I am sure that when you have made the slight changes of which we were speaking, you will have a drawing-room which is all that it should be.

Venez donc me voir la semaine prochaine. Vous verrez que j'ai profité de vos bons conseils.

Come and see me next week. You will see that I have benefited by your advice.

VOCABULARY.

le mobilier, the furniture.
 un meuble, a piece of furniture.
 un armoire, a cupboard.
 les rayons, the shelves.
 le tiroir, the drawer.
 la commode, the bureau.
 un miroir, a mirror.
 le lit, the bed.

le bois de lit, the bedstead.
 la paille, the straw-bed.
 un matelas, a mattress.
 un lit de plume, a feather-bed.
 un oreiller, a pillow.
 une taie d'oreiller, a pillow-case.
 un traversin, a bolster.
 un drap de lit, a sheet.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| la couverture, the blanket. | un vase, a vase. |
| le couvre-pied, the coverlet. | une bougie, a candle. |
| une toilette, a toilet-table. | un bec de gaz, a gas-burner. |
| un lavabo, a wash-stand. | une lampe, a lamp. |
| le pot à l'eau, the pitcher. | une allumette, a match. |
| la cuvette, the basin. | une service de porcelaine, a set of china. |
| un essuie-main, a towel. | un buffet, a sideboard. |
| un rideau, a curtain. | un plateau, a tray. |
| les stores, the shades. | la tasse, the cup. |
| le gland, the tassel. | la soucoupe, the saucer. |
| un calorifère, a furnace. | un bol, a bowl. |
| la bouche de chaleur, the register. | un sucrier, a sugar bowl. |
| le foyer, the fireplace. | les pincés à sucre, the sugar-tongs. |
| le garde-cendre, the fender. | la théière, the tea-pot. |
| les pincettes, the tongs. | la cafetière, the coffee-pot. |
| la pelle, the shovel. | la salière, the salt-cellar. |
| le tisonnier, the poker. | la poivrière, the pepper-pot. |
| le soufflet, the bellows. | la carafe, the decanter. |
| un écran, a screen. | la batterie de cuisine, the kitchen utensils. |
| un armoire à livres, a bookcase. | le four, the oven. |
| un coussin, a cushion. | le fourneau, the range. |
| un tabouret, a footstool. | la casserole, the saucepan. |
| un tableau, a picture. | la bouilloire, the kettle. |
| le cadre, the frame. | un baquet, a tub. |
| le verre, the glass. | un seau, a pail. |
| la gravure, the print. | un balai, a broom. |
| une aquarelle, a water-color. | un fer à repasser, a flat-iron. |
| la pendule, the clock. | |

VII. UN VOYAGE.—A JOURNEY.

| | |
|---|---|
| À quelle heure part votre train ? | What time does your train go ? |
| Je prends le train de midi et demi. | I shall take the half-past twelve train. |
| Ne voulez-vous pas que je vous conduise à la gare ? | Don't you want me to go to the station with you ? |

- Je vous en serai bien reconnaissante.
- Est-ce que je puis vous aider à faire vos malles ?
- Merci ; elles sont toutes prêtes. On est en train de les descendre.
- Eh bien, je vais vous chercher une voiture de place. Dites aux domestiques de charger les malles sur la voiture.
- Cocher, conduisez-nous à la gare de Lyons, et dépêchez-vous pour que nous ne manquions pas le train.
- Nous voilà enfin arrivés. Voulez-vous bien payer la voiture pendant que je vais prendre les billets ?
- Comptez-vous voyager en première classe ?
- Mais oui, on y est mieux, n'est-ce pas ?
- Il vous faut faire enregistrer vos bagages. Est-ce qu'ils sont tous ici ?
- Voyons un peu : deux malles, une valise, et un carton à chapeau ; c'est tout, n'est-ce pas ?
- J'ai encore un parapluie et un petit sac de nuit, que j'emporte avec moi.
- Vous avez assez de bagages comme ça, à ce qu'il me semble.
- Les wagons de première classe se trouvent de ce côté-ci. En voici un où il n'y a personne jusqu'à présent. Vous pouvez vous y installer à votre aise. Préférez-vous être sur le devant du wagon ?
- I shall be very grateful if you will.
- Can I help you to pack your trunks ?
- Thanks ; they are quite ready. They are carrying them down.
- Very well, I will go and get a cab. Tell the servants to put the trunks on the carriage.
- Driver, take us to the Lyons station, and hurry, so that we shall not miss our train.
- Here we are at last. Will you pay for the carriage while I get the tickets ?
- Do you mean to travel first class ?
- Yes, one is better off there ; don't you think so ?
- You must check (register) your baggage. Is it all here ?
- Let us see : two trunks, a valise, and a hat-box ; that is all, isn't it ?
- I have besides an umbrella and a little hand-bag, which I carry myself.
- You have quite enough baggage, it seems to me.
- The first-class carriages are on this side. Here is one where there is no one else as yet. You can settle yourself comfortably here. Do you prefer to ride forward ?*

* Literally, to be at the front of the carriage.

| | |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| Ca m'est égal. Je suis très bien ici. | It makes no difference to me. I am very well off here. |
| Au revoir! | Till we meet again! |
| Bon voyage. | I wish you a pleasant journey. |

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|---|---|
| un voyageur, a traveller. | un bateau à vapeur, a steamer. |
| une voyageuse, a female traveller. | le cabin, the cabin. |
| le voyage, the journey. | les quais, the quays. |
| un colis, a piece of baggage. | la douane, the custom-house. |
| une malle, a trunk. | l'agent de la douane, the custom-house officer. |
| un paquet, a package. | un hôtel, a hotel. |
| la gare, the station. | un café, a coffee-house. |
| la salle d'attente, the waiting-room. | le garçon, the waiter. |
| la salle des bagages, the baggage-room. | le tramway, the horse-railway. |
| le restaurant, the restaurant. | un omnibus, an omnibus. |
| le bureau des billets, the ticket-office. | le conducteur, the conductor. |
| le chef de gare, the station-master. | le contrôleur, the inspector. |
| le facteur, the porter. | une voiture de remise,* a hired carriage. |
| le chemin de fer, the railroad. | une voiture de place, a cab |
| la voiture, the carriage or car. | un fiacre, a cab. |
| le wagon, " " " " | la ville, the city. |
| le coupé-lit, the sleeping-car. | le bureau de poste, the post-office. |
| la locomotive, the engine. | la banque, the bank. |
| le départ, the departure. | la bourse, the exchange. |
| l'arrivée, the arrival. | les faubourgs, the suburbs. |
| le trajet, the trip. | la rue, the street. |
| la route, the course. | les places, the squares. |
| le halte, the stopping. | le pavé, the pavement. |
| un train express, an express-train. | le trottoir, the sidewalk. |
| un train omnibus, an accommodation-train. | le marché, the market. |
| l'indicateur des chemins de fer, the railway-guide. | le musée, the museum. |
| | le pont, the bridge. |
| | un hôpital, a hospital. |
| | la caserne, the barracks. |

* A *voiture de place* is a numbered public cab which can be taken on the street, and whose charges are regulated by a fixed tariff. A *voiture de remise* is a carriage hired from a livery-stable. A *fiacre* may be either.

VIII. UNE VISITE.—A CALL.

- ✓ Bonjour, monsieur. Good morning, sir.
- ✓ Bonjour, madame. Que je suis heureux de vous trouver chez vous ! Good morning, madame. I am happy to find you at home.
- ✓ Asseyez-vous près de la cheminée, je vous en prie. Vous devez avoir très froid. Il faut du courage pour sortir par le temps qu'il fait. Pray sit by the fire. You must be very cold. It takes courage to go out in such weather.
- ✓ N'est-ce pas qu'il fait depuis quelques jours un temps abominable ? On n'entend parler de tous côtés que de rhumes et de maux de gorge. Je redoute beaucoup ces brusques changements de temps. Has not the weather been very bad for several days ? One hears of nothing but colds and sore throats. I dread very much these sudden changes in the weather.
- Je ne crois pas que le froid soit de longue durée. I do not believe that the cold will last long.
- Tant que le vent soufflera du nord nous aurons probablement de la glace ; mais si le vent tourne au sud nous pouvons nous attendre à la pluie. Et comment vous portez-vous, madame ? As long as the wind blows from the north we shall probably have ice ; but if the wind changes to the south we must expect rain. And how do you do, madame ?
- Je me suis enrhumée la semaine dernière en sortant du théâtre, et il m'en reste un toux assez désagréable. I took cold last week in coming out of the theatre, and it has left me with a disagreeable cough.
- Que je vous plains ! J'espère que vous n'êtes pas poitrinaire. How I pity you ! I hope your lungs are not weak.
- Mais du tout. Ce n'est qu'un rhume de cerveau. Not at all. It is only a cold in the head.
- Je ne vois pas madame votre belle-mère. Est-ce qu'elle n'est plus à Paris ? I do not see your mother-in-law / Is she no longer in Paris ?
- Malheureusement elle se trouve très souffrante. Elle est au lit. Unfortunately she is very unwell. She has been in bed for ten

- depuis dix jours. Mais qu'y a-t-il de nouveau aujourd'hui ?
- On ne s'occupe à présent que du mariage de mademoiselle B.
- Comment ! elle va se marier ! J'ai de la peine à le croire.
- Il paraît que le futur est un garçon très distingué, mais absolument sans fortune.
- C'est bien singulier ce que vous me contez là. C'est une nouvelle à laquelle je ne m'attendais guère. Et à quand la noce ?
- Je n'en sais rien, et je ne serai certainement pas des invités.
- Il faut que je m'en aille. J'ai encore des courses à faire. Je vous prie de faire mes amitiés à madame votre belle-mère.
- Voulez-vous me faire le plaisir de venir dîner chez moi jeudi prochain ?
- Merci beaucoup. Je n'y manquerai pas.
- days. But what is the news to-day ?
- Every one is talking of the marriage of Miss B.
- What ! she is to be married ! I can hardly believe it.
- It seems that her intended is a clever fellow, but quite without fortune.
- What you tell me is very strange. It is a piece of news for which I was quite unprepared. And when will the wedding be ?
- I know nothing about it, and I shall certainly not be among the guests.
- I must go. I have still some errands to do. Pray give my regards to your mother-in-law.
- Will you come and dine with me next Thursday ?
- Thanks. I will not fail to come.

VOCABULARY.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| le grand-père, the grandfather. | le beau-père, the father-in-law. |
| la grand-mère, the grandmother. | la belle-mère, the mother-in-law. |
| le petit-fils, the grandson. | le beau-fils, the son-in-law. |
| la petite-fille, the granddaughter. | le gendre, " " |
| le parrain, the godfather. | la belle-fille, the daughter-in-law. |
| la marraine, the godmother. | la bru, " " |
| le filleul, the godson. | le beau-frère, the brother-in-law. |
| la filleule, the goddaughter. | la belle-sœur, the sister-in-law. |
| un époux, a husband. | un parent, a relation. |
| un mari, " " | un cousin germain, a first cousin. |
| une épouse, a wife. | le tuteur, the guardian. |
| une femme, " " | le or la pupille, the ward. |

| | |
|--|------------------------------------|
| les maladies, the diseases. | le soulagement, relief. |
| la fièvre, the fever. | la guérison, the cure. |
| le mal de tête, the headache. | la rechute, the relapse. |
| “ “ “ gorge, sore-throat. | l'agonie, the death-agony. |
| “ “ “ dents, the toothache. | la pluie, the rain. |
| “ “ “ cœur, nausea. | une pluie à verse, a pouring rain. |
| “ “ “ mer, sea-sickness. | un orage, a storm, a tempest. |
| la petite vérole, the small-pox. | le tonnerre, the thunder. |
| la rougeole, the measles. | l'éclair, the lightning. |
| une fluxion de poitrine, an inflammation of the lungs. | la neige, the snow. |
| les oreillons, the mumps. | la glace, the ice. |
| la douleur, pain. | la gelée, the frost. |
| | la chaleur, the heat. |

IDIOMATIC PHRASES.

A. IDIOMATIC USES OF CERTAIN COMMONER FRENCH VERBS.

ALLER (p. 128).

| | |
|---|---|
| Comment allez-vous ? | How are you ? |
| Je vais bien. Ça va bien. | I am well. All is well. |
| Cela ne me va pas du tout. | That does not suit me at all. |
| Cela ira, ça ira. | That will do. |
| Cette robe ne me va pas bien. | This dress does not fit me well. |
| Cette couleur ne va pas à l'autre. | This color does not match the other. |
| Cette clef ne va pas à la serrure. | This key does not fit the lock. |
| Ce domaine va à cent mille francs. | This estate will go off at a hundred thousand francs. |
| L'eau lui allait aux genoux. | The water came up to his knees. |
| La maladie va de mal en pire. | The sickness goes from bad to worse. |
| Cette affaire lui allait à bien. | This business turned out well for him. |
| Le commerce va bien. | Trade is lively. |
| Le terrain allait en pente. | The ground sloped. |
| Il est allé au-devant de moi. | He came to meet me. |
| J'y vais de vingt francs. | I have twenty francs in it. |
| Il y va de ma vie. | My life is at stake. |
| Il se laisse aller à toutes les passions. | He gives way to all his passions. |
| Tout s'en est allé en fumée. | It all passed off in smoke. |
| Le fleuve s'en allait grossissant. | The river kept growing larger. |
| Il s'en va midi. | It is going on noon. |
| Il va sur ses quatre ans. | He is going on four years old. |
| C'est un las d'aller. | He is a lazy fellow. |
| Il va à tout vent. | He changes with every influence. |
| Il va grand train. | He goes fast ; he lives high. |
| Au pis aller. | If worst comes to worst. |
| Allez-vous-en (p. 138). | Be off with you. |

| | |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Allons (p. 129). Va. | Come now. |
| Tous chemins vont à Rome. | All roads lead to Rome. |
| Cela va sans dire. | That is a matter of course. |

✓ AVISER.

| | |
|---|--|
| Avisez vous à ce que vous avez à faire. | Reflect upon what you must do. |
| Avisez-y bien ! | Think it over well. |
| C'est à vous d'aviser. | You are the one to find a way. |
| On ne s'avise jamais de tout. | One can never think of everything. |
| Il s'est avisé de venir me voir. | He had the audacity to come to see me. |
| Avisez-lui que je suis ici. | Let him know that I am here. |
| Je l'avisai dans la foule. | I saw him in the crowd. |

✓ AVOIR (p. 70).

| | |
|--|---|
| Merci beaucoup. Il n'y a pas de quoi. | Thank you. You are welcome. |
| Vous aurez beau parler, personne ne vous écoutera. | Talk as you will, no one will listen to you. |
| On a beau lui donner des conseils. | It is in vain to advise him. |
| Il a de quoi l'acheter (p. 123). | He has wherewith to buy it. |
| Elle aura lieu d'être bien jalouse. | She will have a right to be very jealous. |
| Je vous cherche, j'ai affaire à vous. | I am looking for you, I have business with you. |
| Il a son affaire. | He has what he wants ; he is suited. |
| Vous avez eu le dessus dans cette affaire. | You had the best of it in this matter. |
| Avez-vous des nouvelles de votre mère ? | Have you heard from your mother ? |
| Je n'aurai garde de lui dire cela. | I shall be careful not to tell him that. |
| Je n'ai que faire de cet argent. | I do not know what to do with this money. |
| Elle a deux petits enfants sur les bras. | She has two small children on her hands. |

| | |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| ✓ Il l'aura à bon compte. | He will get it cheap. |
| ✓ Il en aura pour son compte. | He will get what he deserves. |
| ✓ J'ai des affaires par-dessus la tête. | I am overwhelmed with business. |
| ✓ Je ne sais à qui il en avait. | I do not know whom he was vexed with. |

COURIR.

| | |
|--|--|
| ✓ Ce jeune homme court à sa perte. | This young man is rushing to destruction. |
| ✓ Il a couru toute la journée pour ses affaires. | He has been running about all day on business. |
| ✓ Sa plume courait sur le papier. | His pen flew over the paper. |
| ✓ Cet erreur court beaucoup dans le monde. | This error is very current in the world. |
| ✓ Il court des bruits sur lui. | There are reports in circulation about him. |
| ✓ Les maladies qui courent en ce moment. | The diseases which are just now prevalent. |
| ✓ Par le temps qui court. | In such weather. At such a time as this. |
| ✓ Ces garçons courent un lièvre. | These boys are hunting a hare. |
| ✓ Courir deux lièvres à la fois. | To try to do too many things at once. |
| ✓ J'ai couru toute la ville sans le trouver. | I have been all over town without finding him. |
| ✓ Il court tous les honneurs. | He competes for all honors. |
| ✓ Il court la mer. | He follows the sea. |
| ✓ Il va courir fortune en Amérique. | He is going to seek his fortune in America. |
| ✓ Cet homme court les bals et les théâtres. | This man frequents balls and theatres. |
| ✓ Cette aventure court la ville. | This adventure is talked of all over town. |

CREVER.

| | |
|------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| ✓ Ils se crèvent de travail. | They exhaust themselves with work. |
| ✓ Ils crèvent de rire. | They are bursting with laughter. |
| ✓ Cela nous crève le cœur. | That goes to our hearts. |

DIRE (p. 155).

| | |
|--|--|
| ✓ Que voulez-vous dire ? | What do you mean ? |
| ✓ Cela ne veut rien dire. | That signifies nothing. |
| ✓ À vrai dire. | In truth. |
| ✓ Pour ainsi dire. | So to speak. |
| ✓ Pour mieux dire. | Rather. |
| ✓ C'est à dire. | That is to say. |
| ✓ C'est beaucoup dire. | That is saying a great deal. |
| ✓ Cela va sans dire. | That is understood. |
| ✓ Voilà qui est dit. | That is a settled matter. |
| ✓ Qu'en dites-vous ? | What do you say to that ? |
| ✓ Il n'y a pas à dire là-dessus. | There is nothing to be said about it. |
| ✓ Il ne trouve rien à dire. | He finds nothing to blame. |
| ✓ Il me dit des injures. | He insults me. |
| ✓ Ce sont des on dit. | These are reports—rumors. |
| ✓ Il se dit votre parent. | He says he is related to you. |
| ✓ Elle a bien dit son morceau. | She sang her piece well. |
| ✓ Il commençait à lui dire des fleurettes. | He began to compliment her. |
| ✓ Elle a de beaux yeux qui ne disent rien. | She has fine eyes without expression. |
| ✓ Qui ne dit mot consent. | Silence gives consent. |
| ✓ Le bien faire vaut mieux que le bien dire. | Actions speak louder than words. |
| ✓ C'est un soi-disant grand homme. | He is a great man, according to his own account. |

DONNER.

| | |
|--|--|
| ✓ Cela donne à penser. | That is disquieting. |
| ✓ Il a donné dans la piège. | He fell into the trap. |
| ✓ Il est homme à donner dans tous les panneaux qu'on lui tend. | He is the sort of man to fall into every trap that is set for him. |
| ✓ Il donne tête baissée dans tous les projets. | He rushes blindly into all sorts of schemes. |
| ✓ Il ne sait où donner de la tête. | He does not know which way to turn. |
| ✓ Je vous donnerai sur les oreilles. | I'll box your ears. |
| ✓ Les fenêtres donnent sur le jardin. | The windows open on the garden. |

✓ Quel âge lui donne-t-on ?

How old is he supposed to be ?

✓ Cet écrit se donne sous votre nom.

This writing is supposed to be by you.

✓ Je vous le donne en trois.

I give you three guesses at it.

~~On lui a donné un poisson d'avril.~~

~~They made an April fool of him.~~

~~Il s'en donne à cœur joie.~~

~~He indulges himself to the full in it.~~

ÉCORCHER. = Hurt

Il crie avant qu'on ne l'écorche.

He cries out before he is hurt.

Cela m'écorche les oreilles.

That grates upon my ear.

~~Elle écorche le français.~~

~~She murders the French language.~~

~~Il écorche l'anguille par la queue.~~

~~He begins at the wrong end.~~

~~Il ne fait qu'écorcher le sujet.~~

~~He treats the subject very superficially.~~

✓ ENTENDRE.

Je ne l'entends pas ainsi.

I do not mean it so.

J'entends qu'on m'obéisse.

I intend to be obeyed.

Elle ne veut entendre à nulle proposition.

She will not assent to any proposal.

Je ne veux pas en entendre parler.

I will not hear of it.

Il entend à demi-mot.

He can take a hint.

Il ne veut pas entendre raison.

He will not listen to reason.

Je m'y entends bien.

I understand it perfectly.

Vous y êtes, à ce que j'entends.

You are concerned in it, as I understand.

✓ ÊTRE (see p. 9).

Êtes-vous des nôtres ? J'en suis.

Are you one of us ? I am.

Où en êtes-vous de votre ouvrage ?

How far along are you with your work ?

J'en étais là, lorsqu'elle entra.

I had done so much when she entered.

Où en est l'affaire ?

How does the affair stand ?

Il y est pour quelque chose.

He has some part in it.

Je n'y suis pour rien.

I have nothing to do with it.

Vous ne m'écoutez pas, vous n'y êtes plus.

You are not listening to me. You do not follow me.

Je n'y suis pour qui que ce soit.

I am not at home to any one.

- ✓ Nous sommes bien avec eux. ✓ We are on good terms with them. ✓
 ✓ J'en suis pour mon argent. ✓ I got nothing for my money. ✓
 ✓ Vous le voulez—soit! ✓ You wish it—be it so!
 ✓ Il en sera comme vous voudrez. ✓ It shall be as you wish.
 ✓ Il n'est plus à lui. ✓ He is no longer himself.
 ✓ C'est à moi de lui parler. ✓ It is for me to speak to him.
 ✓ Le malade est à l'agonie. ✓ The sick man is at the point of death.
 ✓ Il est toujours à se plaindre. ✓ He is always complaining.
 ✓ Cet homme est mal à son aise. ✓ This man is ill at ease. ✓
 Il est au bout de son latin. He has come to the end of his resources.
 Ces deux chiens en sont aux prises. These two dogs are fighting.
 ✓ Il en sera quitte pour cent francs. ✓ He will get out of it for a hundred francs.
 ✓ Elle est toujours en course. ✓ She is always out. ✓
 ✓ Il n'est pas au fait (or au courant) de cette affaire. ✓ He is not familiar with this business. ✓
 ✓ Il est fort mal dans ses affaires. ✓ He is very unfortunate in his business.
 ✓ Vous êtes de moitié dans cette affaire. ✓ You have a half-interest in this affair.

✓ FAIRE (p. 150).

- ✓ Il fait toujours le bien. ✓ He is always doing good.
 ✓ Je vais faire un voyage. ✓ I am going to take a journey. ✓
 ✓ Allez faire la chambre de madame. ✓ Go and put the lady's room in order.
 ✓ Ce bateau a fait naufrage. ✓ This boat has been wrecked.
 ✓ Ce banquier a fait faillite. ✓ This banker has failed.
 ✓ Cette femme fait la cuisine. ✓ This woman does the cooking.
 ✓ C'est à vous de faire les cartes. ✓ It is your turn to shuffle the cards.
 ✓ Ce garçon fera fortune (or son chemin). ✓ This boy will get on.
 ✓ Avez-vous fait vos malles? ✓ Have you packed your trunks?
 ✓ Il fait la médecine. ✓ He practises medicine.
 ✓ Il fait le commerce. ✓ He is in business.
 ✓ Il fait l'important. ✓ He puts on airs.
 ✓ Il fait le sot. ✓ He plays the fool.

| | |
|---|---|
| ✓ J'ai fait mes adieux. | I have said good-by. |
| ✓ Il fait la sourde oreille. | He turns a deaf ear. |
| ✓ Il a fait une lieue à pied. | He has walked a league. |
| ✓ Vous faites ce velours trop cher. | You charge too much for this velvet. |
| ✓ Il fait bonne mine à tout le monde. | He is friendly with every one. |
| ✓ Il ne fait que pleurer. | He does nothing but weep. |
| ✓ Vous faites dire à lui ce qu'il n'a jamais dit. | You make him out to say what he never said. |
| ✓ Il fait cher vivre à Paris. | It is expensive to live in Paris. |
| ✓ Il se fait tard. | It grows late. |
| ✓ Il s'est fait avocat. | He has become a lawyer. |
| ✓ Qu'est-ce que cela me fait ? | What does that matter to me ? |
| ✓ Ça ne fait rien. | No matter. |
| ✓ Je me fais faire une robe. | I am having a dress made. |
| Il m'a fait part de ce que vous avez dit. | He told me what you said. |
| Cette pièce fait fureur. | This piece is all the rage. |
| Il fait maigre pendant la carême. | He fasts during Lent. |
| Il a fait ses classes à Paris. | He studied at Paris. |
| Il fait le procès à chaque mot. | He criticises every word. |
| Elle m'a fait la morale pendant toute une heure. | She lectured me for a whole hour. |
| Il fait semblant de ne rien comprendre. | He pretends to understand nothing. |
| ✓ Il m'a fait bon accueil. | He received me well. |
| Faites-lui mes amitiés. | Give him my regards. |
| Je fais fond sur votre amitié. | I rely on your friendship. |
| Ne me faites pas des questions. | Don't ask me any questions. |
| Il se fait fort de réussir. | He feels sure of succeeding. |
| Il se fait jour à travers toutes les difficultés. | He makes his way through all difficulties. |
| Je me fais fête de vous voir. | It is a pleasure to me to see you. |
| On se fait à tout dans la vie. | One accustoms one's self to everything in life. |
| Je ne sais comment cela s'est fait. | I do not know how that happened. |
| ✓ Sa mémoire lui fait défaut. | His memory fails him. |
| ✓ C'est fait de moi. C'en est fait. | It is all up with me. It is all over. |
| Chemin faisant, je le rencontrai. | As I was going along, I met him. |

Il en fait à sa tête.

He does as he chooses.

Il fait la pluie et le beau temps
chez lui.

He is ruler in his own house.

✓ GARDER

Elle garde les malades pendant la
nuit.

She takes care of the sick during
the night.

Il garde le lit aujourd'hui.

He is keeping his bed to-day.

Gardez-vous de tomber.

Be careful not to fall.

Dieu m'en garde !

God forbid !

Il garde le silence.

He keeps silence.

Je la lui garde bonne.

I have a bone to pick with him.

✓ JOUER.

Est-ce que vous jouez aux cartes ?

Do you play cards ?

Il joue du violon.

He plays the violin.

Cette serrure ne joue pas.

This lock does not work.

Vous jouez bien votre jeu.

You play your cards well.

Il fait jouer toutes les passions.

He brings all the passions into
play.

Il joue sa vie à chaque instant.

He risks his life every moment.

Prenez garde ; il se joue de vous.

Take care, he is deceiving you.

Il vous a joué un vilain tour.

He has played you an ugly trick.

Il joue la comédie.

He is not in earnest.

Il se joue de toutes les difficultés.

He makes light of all difficulties.

✓ METTRE.

C'est un homme qui sait tout mettre
à profit.

He is a man who knows how to
turn everything to profit.

Cet argent me met à même de l'ache-
ter.

This money enables me to buy it.

Vous le mettez au rang des dieux.

You make a god of him.

Je l'ai mis à la porte.

I turned him out of doors.

Allez mettre les chevaux à la voi-
ture.

Go and harness the horses.

Il y a mis beaucoup de temps.

He took a great deal of time for
it.

Il me mit de sa partie de chasse.

He made me one of his hunting
party.

Je l'ai mis en fureur.

I made him furious.

| | |
|--|---|
| Il a mis bas son chapeau. | He took off his hat. |
| Je l'ai mis de côté. | I laid it aside. |
| Il a mis au jour toute l'affaire. | He has made public the whole business. |
| Allez mettre le couvert. | Go and lay the cloth. |
| Il se met en quatre pour ses amis. | He will take any trouble for his friends. |
| Vous vous mettez en colère à chaque instant. | You are always getting angry. |
| Elle s'est mis dans la tête de venir. | She has taken it into her head to come. |
| Il se met au-dessus de préjugés. | He rises above prejudice. |
| Je me suis mis en peine de vous. | I have been troubled about you. |
| Le feu s'est mis chez moi. | My house caught fire. |
| Elle se met très bien. | She dresses very well. |
| Je m'y mettrai demain. | I will set about it to-morrow. |

✓ MONTER.

| | |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| Est-ce que vous montez à cheval ? | Do you ride on horseback ? |
| Il est monté au ciel. | He has gone to heaven. |
| Cet homme va monter au théâtre. | This man is going on the stage. |
| La rivière a monté d'un pied. | The river has risen a foot. |
| Ce corsage monte trop. | This waist is too high-necked. |
| Le vin lui monte à la tête. | The wine has gone to his head. |
| La rougeur lui monte au visage. | He is blushing. |
| Le blé monte. | Wheat is rising (in price). |
| L'armée monte à 300,000 hommes. | The army consists of 300,000 men. |
| Ce mémoire monte bien haut. | This bill is very large. |
| J'ai oublié de monter l'horloge. | I forgot to wind up the clock. |
| Elle est en train de monter son chapeau. | She is trimming her hat. |
| Elle monte son violon. | She is tuning her violin. |
| Il a monté la tête à ce garçon. | He has turned this boy's head. |
| Il s'est monté contre nous. | He is vexed with us. |

✓ PERDRE.

| | |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Je l'ai perdu de vue. | I have lost sight of him. |
| Il a voulu me perdre auprès de vous. | He wanted to ruin me in your eyes. |

| | |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Sa réputation perd de jour en jour. | His reputation diminishes daily. |
| Il joue à se perdre. | He plays a losing game. |
| Il en perd le boire et le manger. | It is taking away his appetite. |
| Il y perd son latin. | He is wasting his breath. |

PORTER.

| | |
|--|--|
| Il porte la haine universelle. | He is the object of universal hatred. |
| Elle porte les cheveux longs. | She wears her hair long. |
| Il porte la barbe. | He wears his beard. |
| Ce soldat porte les armes au général. | This soldier presents arms to the general. |
| Elle porte le deuil de sa mère. | She wears mourning for her mother. |
| Il porte bien son âge. | He is well preserved. |
| Ce monsieur le porte haut. | This gentleman carries his head high. |
| Il m'a porté un coup mortel. | He struck me a deadly blow. |
| Ne portez pas la main sur lui. | Do not lay hands on him. |
| Cela vous portera bonheur. | That will bring you happiness. |
| Il vous a porté aux nues. | He praised you to the skies. |
| Il nous porte de l'amour. | He loves us. |
| Ne lui portez pas envie. | Do not envy him. |
| Les Français l'ont porté au trône. | The French set him on the throne. |
| Quelle tentation vous a porté à ce péché ? | What temptation drove you to this sin ? |
| Il porte son jugement sur ce tableau. | He passes judgment on this picture. |
| Portez-le sur votre liste. | Put him on your list. |
| Le coup de fusil a porté. | The shot was successful. |
| Sa vue porte bien loin. | He is very far-sighted. |
| La perte porta sur nous. | The loss fell on us. |
| Comment vous portez-vous ? | How are you ? |
| Il s'est porté à de honteuses actions. | He has committed shameful deeds. |

PRENDRE.

| | |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------|
| J'ai pris le deuil. | I have gone into mourning. |
| La gelée ne prend pas. | The jelly does not harden. |
| Elle prend de l'embonpoint. | She is growing stout. |

| | |
|--|---|
| Il a pris la clef des champs. | He has run away. |
| C'est à prendre ou à laisser. | You may take it or leave it. |
| Venez me prendre à mon hôtel. | Call for me at my hotel. |
| Il prend sur son sommeil pour travailler. | He trenches on his sleep in order to work. |
| Vous prenez tout au pied de la lettre. | You take everything literally. |
| Je vais prendre les devants. | I will go first. |
| Il prend du goût pour la littérature. | He begins to care for literature. |
| Il m'a pris en amitié. | He has taken a liking to me. |
| Un homme qui se noie se prend à tout. | A drowning man will catch at a straw. |
| Il s'en prend à la fortune. | He lays the blame of it on fortune. |
| Comment s'y prend-il pour faire ses thèmes ? | How does he set about doing his exercises ? |
| Est-ce qu'il l'a pris en bonne part ? | Did he take it well ? |
| J'ai pris à tâche de le faire. | I undertook to do it. |
| Cet enfant prend quatre ans. | This child is almost four. |
| Le feu a pris à la maison. | The house took fire. |
| Il faut prendre l'occasion aux cheveux. | You must take time by the forelock. |

RENDRE.

| | |
|---|--|
| Je me rends chez lui. | I am going to his house. |
| Je vais lui rendre visite. | I am going to pay him a call. |
| Où se rend ce chemin ? | Where does this road go to ? |
| Il se rend à la raison. | He yields to reason. |
| Elle a rendu l'âme. | She has given up the ghost. |
| Rendez-moi raison de ce que vous faites. | Account to me for what you are doing. |
| Je vous rendrai la pareille. | I'll pay you back in your own coin. |
| Je vous rends son discours mot pour mot. | I repeat you his speech word for word. |
| Ces soldats n'ont jamais rendu les armes. | These soldiers have never surrendered. |

REVENIR.

| | |
|------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Il est revenu de sa maladie. | He has recovered from his illness. |
| Il revient à vue d'œil. | He is visibly improving. |

Il en est revenu d'une belle.
Elle ne peut revenir de son trouble.

He has had a lucky escape.
She cannot get over her embarrassment.

Cela revient au même.
Il ne me revient rien de mes cent francs.

It comes to the same thing.
I get nothing for my 100 francs.

Il me revient qu'il est mort.
Revenons à nos moutons.

I hear that he is dead.
Let us return to our subject.

RIRE.

Il rit à gorge déployée.
J'ai ri aux larmes.
Il ne rit qu'au bout des dents
Je riaais dans ma barbe.
Il m'a ri au nez.
Cela rit à l'imagination.

He shrieks with laughter.
I laughed till I cried.
His laughter is forced.
I laughed in my sleeve.
He laughed in my face.
That is pleasing to the imagination.

Rira bien qui rira dernier.

He laughs best who laughs last.

SAVOIR (p. 159).

Il en sait bien long.
Je ne vous savais pas malade.
Il y manque un je ne sais quoi.

He knows a great deal about it.
I did not know you were ill.
An indescribable something is lacking to it.

Je vous en saurai gré toute ma vie.

I shall be grateful to you all my life.

Je ne saurais vous le dire.
Il sait bien son monde.
Il sait plaire à tout le monde.

I could not tell you it.
He understands his public well.
He knows how to please every one.

TENIR.

Je tiens beaucoup à le voir.
Il n'y tient pas.
Je vous tiendrai lieu de père.
Ils ne peuvent tenir tête à notre feu.
Le rouge tient mieux que le noir.
Elle est une blonde, elle tient de sa mère.

I want very much to see him.
He does not care for it.
I will be a father to you.
They cannot stand against our fire.
Red holds color better than black.
She is blonde, she takes after her mother.

| | |
|---|--|
| Il tient toujours le dé de la conversation. | He always leads in conversation. |
| Tiens, je vais te le dire. | See here, I will tell you. |
| Je tiens mon homme. | I have caught my man. |
| S'il ne tient qu'à moi. | If it only depends on me. |
| Qu'à cela ne tienne. | Don't let that make any difference. |
| De qui tenez-vous cette nouvelle ? | From whom have you this news ? |
| Je le tiens pour dit. | I regard that as settled. |
| Il ne peut se tenir de rire. | He cannot keep from laughing. |
| Le temps ne tiendra pas. | This weather will not last. |
| Ce parc tient à la forêt. | This park adjoins the forest. |
| Il ne sait à quoi s'en tenir. | He does not know what to depend on. |
| Un tiens vaut mieux que deux tu l'auras. | A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush. |

TOUCHER.

| | |
|--|---|
| L'année touche à sa fin. | The year draws near its end. |
| Le récit me touche au vif. | The story touches me to the quick. |
| Cela me touche de joie. | That fills me with joy. |
| Ce poète touche bien les passions. | This poet treats well of the passions. |
| Votre santé est un point qui me touche de bien près. | Your health is a matter which concerns me nearly. |
| Cet homme me touche de près. | This man is nearly related to me. |
| Nous touchons au succès. | We are on the point of success. |
| Je vais vous le faire toucher au doigt. | I will make it perfectly clear to you. |
| Touchez là. | Shake hands on it. |
| Ils se sont touchés dans la main. | They have come to an agreement. |
| Les extrêmes se touchent. | Extremes meet. |
| Il n'a pas encore touché son argent. | He has not got his money yet. |
| Il touche ses gages tous les quinze jours. | He receives his wages every fortnight. |

TROUVER.

| | |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| Je lui ai trouvé la fièvre. | I found that he had the fever. |
| L'avis fut trouvé bon. | The advice was thought good. |

| | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| J'ai trouvé bon de le faire ainsi. | I thought best to do it thus. |
| Cela est bien mal. Vous trouvez ? | That is very bad. Do you think so ? |
| Il trouve à placer son mot. | He always gets his word in. |
| Ils se sont trouvés à la promenade. | They met while walking. |
| La maison se trouva vide. | The house was empty. |
| Comment vous trouvez-vous ? | How are you ? |
| Je me trouve bien ici. | I am well off here. |
| Cette jeune fille se trouve mal. | This young girl feels faint. |

TIRER.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| Il tire cette affaire en longueur. | He is spinning out the business. |
| On ne peut le tirer de là. | It is impossible to make him change. |
| On en a tiré plusieurs exemplaires. | Several copies of it have been printed. |
| Il tire parti de tout. | He profits by everything. |
| Nous avons tiré au sort. | We drew lots. |
| Le malade tire à sa fin. | The sick man is near his end. |
| Il ne sait pas se tirer d'affaire. | He does not know how to get out of it. |
| Tirez-vous-en comme vous pourrez. | Get out of it as best you can. |
| Il tire le diable par la queue. | He is very hard up. |
| Il m'a tiré la langue. | He stuck out his tongue at me. |

VALOIR (p. 194).

| | |
|---|---|
| Cette robe ne vaut plus rien. | This dress is good for nothing. |
| Ils ne font rien qui vaille. | They do nothing worth speaking of. |
| Ce livre lui a valu l'admiration de tout le monde. | This book has gained him the admiration of every one. |
| Cette terre lui vaut dix mille livres de rente. | This estate brings him in 10,000 francs income. |
| Cette affaire ne vaut pas la peine d'y penser. | This affair is not worth a thought. |
| Ma montre vaut mieux que la vôtre. | My watch is better than yours. |
| Il ne sait pas se faire valoir. | He does not know how to make the most of himself. |
| Voulez-vous nous faire valoir que vous nous aimez ? | Do you want to make us believe that you love us ? |

| | |
|---|---|
| Autant vaut le dire que le penser. | It is as well to say so as to think so. |
| Je le dirai, vaille que vaille. | I will say it, come what will. |
| Le jeu ne vaut pas la chandelle. | The game is not worth the candle. |
| Monsieur vaut bien madame. | One is as good as the other. |
| Cet homme est un vaurien. | This man is a good-for-nothing. |

VENIR (p. 145).

| | |
|---|---|
| Il est venu au bout de ses desseins. | He succeeded in his plans. |
| Tout lui vient à souhait. | Everything turns out well for him. |
| Ils en sont venus aux injures. | They have come to insulting each other. |
| Il faut en venir là. | It is inevitable. |
| Je crains qu'il ne vienne de la pluie. | I fear it is going to rain. |
| C'était un va-et-vient continuel. | There was a continual coming and going. |
| J'ai fait venir cette robe de Paris. | I sent to Paris for this dress. |

VOULOIR (p. 114).

| | |
|---|---|
| Croyez-vous qu'elle lui veuille du bien ? | Do you think she wishes him well ? |
| Que voulez-vous dire ? | What do you mean ? |
| Je le veux bien. | I am willing. |
| Que me veut-il ? | What does he want of me ? |
| Je vous veux raisonnable. | I want you to be reasonable. |
| Il ne vous en veut pas. | He has no grudge against you. |
| Veillez bien vous asseoir. | Pray sit down. |
| Il veut cent mille francs de sa terre. | He asks 100,000 francs for his estate. |
| Ces enfants veulent être menés par la crainte. | These children have to be governed by fear. |
| Je me veux mal d'une telle faiblesse. | I am angry at myself for such a weakness. |
| Vous en voulez à mon argent. | You have designs on my money. |
| Ce que femme veut, Dieu le veut. | Woman's will is God's will. |

VOILÀ.

| | |
|--------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Tiens, vous voilà ! | So, there you are ! |
| Voilà qu'on me cherche. | There is some one looking for me |
| Connaissez-vous monsieur que voilà ? | Do you know that gentleman ? |
| Voilà qui est fait. | That is over and done with. |
| Nous voilà enfin arrivés. | Here we are at last. |
| Le voilà qui vient. | Here he is coming. |
| Voilà comme je vous aime. | See how I love you. |
| Voilà qui va bien. | That is going well. |
| En voilà assez. | That is enough of it. |
| Nous y voilà. | Here we are. |
| Voilà ce que c'est que de se marier. | See what it is to get married. |

IDIOMATIC USES OF CERTAIN COMMONER ENGLISH VERBS.

AFFORD.

| | |
|----------------------------------|--|
| I cannot afford it. | ✓ Je n'ai pas les moyens de l'acheter. ✓ |
| How much can you afford to give? | ✓ Combien êtes-vous à portée de donner ? ✓ |
| I cannot afford any more. | ✓ Je ne peux pas aller au delà. ✓ |

AGREE.

| | |
|--------------------------------|--|
| That agrees with me. | ✓ Cela me fait du bien. ✓ |
| They cannot agree. | ✓ Ils s'accordent comme chien et chat. ✓ |
| We have agreed to go there. | ✓ Nous sommes convenus d'y aller. ✓ |
| We are agreed upon this point. | ✓ Nous sommes d'accord sur ce point. ✓ |
| I agree ; let it be so. | ✓ J'y consens ; soit ! ✓ |

ANSWER.

| | |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| That will answer. | ✓ Cela fera mon affaire. ✓ |
| That will not answer at all. | ✓ Cela ne fera point mon compte. ✓ |
| Do not answer back. | ✓ Ne faites pas le raisonneur. ✓ |
| You must answer to me for it. | ✓ Vous m'en rendrez compte. ✓ |

ASK.

| | |
|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Some one is asking for you. | ✓ On vous demande. ✓ |
| What did he ask you ? | ✓ Que vous a-t-il demandé ? ✓ |

- He asked me all sorts of questions. ✓ Il m'a fait toute sorte de questions. ✓
 I asked him to come. ✓ Je l'ai prié de venir. ✓
 He has asked me to dine with him. ✓ Il m'a invité à dîner chez lui. ✓
 How much do you ask for this coat? ✓ Combien faites-vous cet habit? ✓

ATTEND.

- He does not attend to his business. ✓ Il ne fait pas attention à ses affaires. ✓
 I am attending to your business. ✓ Je m'occupe de votre affaire. ✓
 Who attends to the sick? ✓ Qui soigne les malades? ✓
 He attends all the lessons. ✓ Il assiste à toutes les classes. ✓
 She is going to attend this course in history. ✓ Elle va suivre ce cours d'histoire. ✓
 I will attend to you in a moment. ✓ Je serai à vous à l'instant. ✓

BE.

- How is he? ✓ Comment va-t-il? Comment se porte-t-il? ✓
 He is better. ✓ Il va mieux. Il se porte mieux. ✓
 It is all right. ✓ Ca va bien. ✓
 His business is in a bad way. ✓ Ses affaires vont mal. ✓
 He is now at my house. ✓ Il se trouve chez moi. ✓
 Your house is better than mine. ✓ Votre maison vaut mieux que la mienne. ✓
 It is vain for you to speak to him. ✓ Vous avez beau lui parler. ✓
 It is all over with me. ✓ C'en est fait de moi. ✓
 My life is at stake. ✓ Il y va de ma vie. ✓

BECOME.

- What has become of him? ✓ Qu'est-il devenu? ✓
 He has become a soldier. ✓ Il s'est fait soldat. ✓
 He has become bankrupt. ✓ Il a fait faillite. ✓
 This coat becomes your figure. ✓ Cet habit va bien à votre taille. ✓
 This hat is very becoming to you. ✓ Ce chapeau vous convient parfaitement. ✓
 The sick man is becoming worse and worse. ✓ Le malade va de mal en pire. ✓

BEHAVE.

| | |
|--|---|
| These children have behaved very well. | ✓ Ces enfants se sont très bien conduits. |
| He behaved like an honest man. | ✓ Il a agi en honnête homme. |
| He behaved very badly to me. | ✓ Il a très mal agi à mon égard. |
| Do not behave like a baby. | ✓ Ne faites pas l'enfant. |

BEAT.

| | |
|----------------------------------|---|
| She is beating the eggs. | ✓ Elle fouette les œufs. |
| He is beating about the bush. | ✓ Il tourne autour du pot. |
| I have beaten him two games. | ✓ Je lui ai gagné deux parties. |
| I cannot beat it into his brain. | ✓ Je ne peux pas le lui fourrer dans la tête. |

BREAK.

| | |
|--|--|
| The glass is broken. | ✓ Le verre s'est brisé. |
| They have broken their chains. | ✓ Ils ont brisé leurs fers. |
| He has broken his arm. | ✓ Il s'est cassé le bras. |
| You have broken your word. | ✓ Vous avez manqué à votre parole. |
| They broke in the door. | ✓ Ils enfoncèrent la porte. |
| He has broken his oath. | ✓ Il a violé son serment. |
| I have broken with my friend. | ✓ J'ai rompu avec mon ami. |
| He has to break his path through the snow. | ✓ Il faut qu'il se fraie un chemin à travers la neige. |
| He broke into tears. | ✓ Il fonda en larmes. |
| They broke up at midnight. | ✓ Ils se séparèrent à minuit. |
| The fog is breaking away. | ✓ Le brouillard se dissipe. |
| The meeting has broken up. | ✓ On a levé la séance. |

BRING.

| | |
|--|--|
| That will bring us happiness. | ✓ Cela va nous porter bonheur. |
| He has brought us the letters from the office. | ✓ Il nous a apporté les lettres de la poste. |
| Who will bring the children home? | ✓ Qui va ramener les enfants chez eux? |
| Bring in the dinner. | ✓ Servez le dîner. |
| He brought a case against us. | ✓ Il nous a fait un procès. |
| I want to bring it into fashion. | ✓ Je veux le mettre à la mode. |

He brought the whole matter to light. ✓ Il a mis en lumière toute l'affaire.
 She brings up her children badly. ✓ Elle élève mal ses enfants.

CALL.

Who is calling me ? ✓ Qui m'appelle ?
 I have called on her. ✓ Je suis allé la voir. Je lui ai fait
 une visite.
 I will call for you to night. ✓ Je viendrai vous prendre ce soir.
 He has called for his money. ✓ Il est venu chercher son argent.
 He often calls here. ✓ Il passe souvent chez nous
 They called him names. ✓ Ils lui disaient des injures.
 He called me a thief. ✓ Il m'a traité de voleur.
 The actor was called back five times. ✓ L'acteur a été rappelé cinq fois.

CARE.

He cares well for his patients. ✓ Il soigne bien ses malades.
 Take care not to lose it. ✓ Prenez garde de ne pas le perdre.
 I do not care. ✓ Je ne m'en inquiète pas. Ça m'est
 égal.
 I do not care to do it. ✓ Je ne tiens pas à le faire.
 I do not care for dancing. ✓ Je n'aime pas la danse.
 That is his care. ✓ Cela lui est à charge.
 Take care of this letter. ✓ Ayez soin de cette lettre.

CARRY.

Carry this book to your father. ✓ Portez ce livre à votre père.
 He has carried his point. ✓ Il a accompli son dessein.
 You carry the joke too far. ✓ Vous poussez trop loin la plaisan-
 terie.
 He has carried his motion. ✓ Il a fait adopter sa motion.
 He has carried off the great prize. ✓ Il a emporté le grand prix.
 They have carried the affair to a successful ending. ✓ Ils ont mené l'affaire à bonne fin.
 The French have carried the day against their enemies. ✓ Les Français l'ont emporté sur
 leurs ennemis.
 It is carrying coals to Newcastle. ✓ C'est porter de l'eau à la rivière.

CATCH.

| | |
|--|--|
| He has caught cold. | ✓ Il s'est enrhumé. ✓ |
| I do not catch your idea. | ✓ Je ne saisis pas votre idée. |
| The house caught fire. | ✓ Le feu a pris à la maison. |
| Try to catch the cat. | ✓ Tâchez d'attraper le chat. ✓ |
| My dress caught on the chair. | ✓ Ma robe s'est accrochée à la chaise. ✓ |
| He caught the typhoid fever in the hospital. | ✓ Il a pris le typhus dans l'hôpital. ✓ |

CUT.

| | |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| I have cut my finger. | ✓ Je me suis coupé le doigt. ✓ |
| He cut this coat badly. | ✓ Il a mal taillé cet habit. ✓ |
| He has cut my acquaintance. | ✓ Il a rompu avec moi. ✓ |
| The bird cuts the air. | ✓ L'oiseau fend l'air. ✓ |

DO.

| | |
|--|---|
| How do you do ? | ✓ Comment vous portez-vous ? Comment allez-vous ? ✓ |
| That will not do. | ✓ Cela ne va pas. Cela n'ira pas. ✓ |
| That will do. | ✓ C'est bien. Cela ira. Cela suffit. C'est tout. ✓ |
| That will do for me. | ✓ Cela me convient. Cela fera bien mon affaire. ✓ |
| He has done me a service. | ✓ Il m'a rendu service. ✓ |
| You will do me justice. | ✓ Vous me rendrez justice. ✓ |
| She does her whole duty. | ✓ Elle remplit tous ses devoirs. ✓ |
| I did my best. | ✓ J'ai fait de mon mieux. J'ai fait mon possible. ✓ |
| He did not do it on purpose. | ✓ Il ne l'a pas fait exprès. ✓ |
| She does credit to her master. | ✓ Elle fait honneur à son maître. ✓ |
| I cannot do without it. | ✓ Je ne peux pas m'en passer. ✓ |
| He is doing it wrong. | ✓ Il s'y prend mal. ✓ |
| His work is done. | ✓ Son ouvrage est fini. ✓ |
| The meat is well done. | ✓ La viande est bien cuite. ✓ |
| I have nothing to do with this business. | ✓ Je ne suis pour rien dans cette affaire. ✓ |
| What does he do with himself ? | ✓ A quoi s'occupe-t-il ? ✓ |
| What shall I do ? | ✓ Qu'est-ce que je vais devenir ? ✓ |

DRAW.

| | |
|---|---|
| Who drew this landscape ? | ✓ Qui a dessiné ce paysage ? |
| I cannot draw a circle. | ✓ Je ne peux pas tracer un cercle. |
| We are going to draw lots. | ✓ Nous allons tirer au sort. |
| He drew all her teeth. | ✓ Il lui a arraché tous les dents. |
| She has gone to draw water from the well. | Elle est allée puiser de l'eau dans le puits. |
| He draws his wages every month. | Il touche ses gages tous les mois. |
| He drew near him and said — | Il s'approcha de lui et lui dit — |
| Try to draw this man out. | Tâchez de faire parler cet homme. |
| He drew the attention of every one. | Il a attiré les regards de tout le monde. |
| He drew back from such a sacrifice. | Il recula devant un tel sacrifice. |
| The carriage drew up before the house. | La voiture s'arrêta devant la maison. |
| Has the contract been drawn up ? | Est-ce qu'on a dressé le contrat ? |

ENGAGE.

| | |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| He is engaged in business. | Il est dans les affaires. |
| He cannot see you, he is engaged. | Il ne peut pas vous voir, il est occupé. |
| She is already engaged. | Elle est déjà promise. |
| They are engaged (to be married). | Ils sont fiancés. |

FEEL.

| | |
|--------------------------|--------------------------------|
| I do not feel well. | Je ne me sens pas bien. |
| I feel for your sorrows. | Je prends part à vos chagrins. |
| Feel his pulse. | Tâtez-lui le puls. |

GET.

| | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| He got up at four o'clock. | Il s'est levé à quatre heures. |
| He cannot get a living. | Il ne peut pas gagner sa vie. |
| He is getting ready to go away. | Il s'apprête à partir. |
| He will get back to-morrow. | Il sera de retour demain. |
| He gets more and more naughty. | Il devient de plus en plus méchant. |
| He always gets the upper hand. | Il prend toujours le dessus. |
| I cannot get any money. | Je ne peux pas me procurer d'argent. |
| He got what he deserved. | Il a reçu ce qu'il a mérité. |

| | |
|--|--------------------------------------|
| I cannot get rid of him. | ✓ Je ne puis me débarrasser de lui. |
| He does not know how to get out of the difficulty. | ✓ Il ne sait pas se tirer d'affaire. |
| He will get on in the world. | ✓ Il fera son chemin. |
| He will get home to-morrow. | ✓ Il arrivera demain chez lui. |
| He is getting better. | ✓ Il se porte mieux. |
| I cannot get along without smoking. | ✓ Je ne peux pas me passer de fumer. |

GIVE.

| | |
|---|---|
| He gave me a handsome present. | ✓ Il m'a fait un cadeau magnifique. |
| You must give an account of what you have done. | ✓ Il faut rendre compte de ce que vous avez fait. |
| Give heed to me. | ✓ Faites attention à moi. |
| Give him my regards. | ✓ Faites-lui mes amitiés. |
| Give this to your uncle. | ✓ Remettez cela à votre oncle. |
| He gives his mind to doing it well. | ✓ Il s'applique à le faire bien. |
| The enemy gave battle the 20th of May. | ✓ L'ennemi livra bataille le 20 mai. |
| I have given up doing it. | ✓ J'ai renoncé à le faire. |
| He gives himself up to study. | ✓ Il se livre à l'étude. |

GO (p. 128).

| | |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| He has gone to walk. | ✓ Il est allé se promener. |
| I am going away to-morrow. | ✓ Je pars demain. |
| She has gone out of the room. | ✓ Elle est sortie de la chambre. |
| They go halves in this affair. | ✓ Ils sont de moitié dans l'affaire. |
| We must go to work. | ✓ Il faut nous mettre à l'ouvrage. |
| I do not know how to go about it. | ✓ Je ne sais pas comment m'y prendre. |
| Go away. | ✓ Allez-vous-en. |
| I will go for the book. | ✓ J'irai chercher le livre. |
| She has gone into mourning. | ✓ Elle a pris le deuil. |

HELP.

| | |
|------------------------------|--|
| May I help you to potatoes ? | ✓ Puis-je vous servir des pommes de terre ? |
| How can I help it ? | ✓ Que voulez-vous que j'y fasse ? |
| I cannot help (prevent) it. | ✓ Je ne puis pas l'empêcher. Je n'y puis rien. |

| | |
|---|--|
| I cannot help (doing) it. | Je ne puis m'en empêcher. C'est plus fort que moi. |
| It cannot be helped. | On n'y peut rien. Il n'y a rien à faire. |
| He did his best to help on the work. | Il a fait son possible pour avancer l'ouvrage. |
| He helped me out of a great difficulty. | Il m'a tiré d'un mauvais pas. |
| Help! help! | Au secours! A moi! |
| Heaven helps those who help themselves. | Aide-toi; le ciel t'aidera. |

IMPROVE.

| | |
|--|---|
| His health is much improved. | Sa santé s'est beaucoup améliorée. |
| These children have improved in their studies. | Ces enfants ont fait des progrès dans leurs études. |
| We must improve the opportunity. | Il nous faut profiter de l'occasion. |
| She is much improved in appearance. | Elle est beaucoup embellie. |
| He tries his best to improve himself. | Il fait son possible pour s'instruire. |

KEEP.

| | |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| He keeps a shop in Paris. | Il tient boutique à Paris. |
| You do not keep your word. | Vous ne tenez pas votre parole. |
| I shall keep my bed all day. | Je vais garder mon lit toute la journée. |
| Are you going to keep Lent? | Allez-vous faire carême? |
| Keep silence. | Gardez le silence. |
| Do not keep him waiting. | Ne le faites pas attendre. |
| We always keep New Year's day. | Nous fêtons toujours le jour de l'an. |
| I cannot keep him from doing it. | Je ne peux pas l'empêcher de le faire. |
| She keeps complaining. | Elle ne cesse pas de se plaindre. |
| He keeps saying the same thing. | Il est toujours à dire la même chose. |
| France keeps up an enormous army. | La France entretient une armée énorme. |
| She has kept her health wonderfully. | Elle a admirablement conservé sa santé. |

| | |
|------------------------------------|---|
| The laws must be kept. | Il faut observer les lois. |
| The police keep the town in order. | Les gendarmes maintiennent l'ordre dans la ville. |

LEAVE.

| | |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| He has left town. | Il a quitté la ville. |
| Are you going to leave ? | Est-ce que vous vous en allez ? |
| He leaves all his things lying about. | Il laisse traîner toutes ses affaires. |
| We leave to-morrow for Paris. | Nous allons partir demain pour Paris. |
| I give you all that is left of it. | Je vous donne tout ce qui m'en reste. |
| I leave it to you. | Je m'en rapporte à vous. |
| He has left off smoking. | Il a renoncé à fumer. |
| You have left me in the lurch. | Vous m'avez planté là. |

LET.

| | |
|------------------------------------|---|
| Let me look at it. | Permettez-moi d'y regarder. |
| Let him know that I am here. | Avisez-lui que je suis ici. |
| I will let you know. | Je vous le ferai savoir. |
| Let me alone. | Laissez-moi tranquille. |
| Who let you into the house ? | Qui vous a fait entrer dans la maison ? |
| He let me his house. | Il m'a loué sa maison. |
| He has let the cat out of the bag. | Il a découvert le pot aux roses. |

LOOK.

| | |
|--|---|
| Look at your watch and see what time it is. | Regardez l'heure à votre montre. |
| You look well. | Vous avez bonne mine. |
| He looks tired. | Il a l'air fatigué. |
| She always looks as if she had just come out of a bandbox. | Elle est toujours tirée à quatre épingles. |
| Our windows look out on the garden. | Nos fenêtres donnent sur le jardin. |
| She is looking for her music. | Elle cherche sa musique. |
| He looks very much like his uncle. | Il ressemble beaucoup à son oncle. |
| I will look through the book before giving it to you. | Je vais parcourir le livre avant de vous le donner. |

| | |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| Look out ! | Prenez garde ! ✓ |
| Look here ! | Tenez ! Tiens ! ✓ |
| He looks down upon every one. | Il regarde tout le monde de haut en bas. ✓ |
| I must look over my lesson again. | Il faut que je repasse encore une fois ma leçon. ✓ |
| How did he look when he heard that ? | Quelle mine a-t-il faite quand il a entendu cela ? ✓ |

MAKE.

| | |
|---|--|
| He cannot make up his mind. | Il ne peut pas se décider. ✓ |
| I have made up my mind to go. | J'ai pris mon parti d'y aller. ✓ |
| He is always making mistakes. | Il se trompe à chaque instant. ✓ |
| She made him happy. | Elle l'a rendu heureux. ✓ |
| I have made it up with my father. | Je me suis raccommodé avec mon père. ✓ |
| Make haste, I am waiting. | Dépêchez-vous, je vous attends. ✓ |
| Make yourself at home. | Faites comme chez vous. ✓ |
| Make yourself comfortable. | Mettez-vous à votre aise. ✓ |
| He makes fun of everything. | Il tourne tout en plaisanterie. ✓ |
| She is making believe not to see us. | Elle fait semblant de ne pas nous voir. ✓ |
| He has made a great deal of money. | Il a amassé beaucoup d'argent. ✓ |
| I cannot make myself heard. | Je ne peux pas me faire entendre. ✓ |
| He knows how to make the most of his goods. | Il sait faire valoir ses marchandises. ✓ |
| We must make the best of it. | Il faut en tirer le meilleur parti possible. ✓ |
| They are making much of him. | Ils font grand cas de lui. ✓ |
| I do not know what to make of it. | Je n'y comprends rien. ✓ |
| He has made away with his whole fortune. | Il a gaspillé toute sa fortune. ✓ |
| This fruit makes my mouth water. | Ce fruit me fait venir l'eau à la bouche. ✓ |
| I want to make up my accounts. | Je veux régler mes comptes. ✓ |
| This woman makes dresses. | Cette femme confectionne des robes. ✓ |

MARRY.

| | |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| This lady is to marry my son. | Cette dame va épouser mon fils. ✓ |
| He was married last week. | Il s'est marié la semaine dernière. ✓ |

| | |
|---------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| The bishop married them. | L'évêque les a mariés. ✓ |
| He has just married off his daughter. | Il vient de marier sa fille. ✓ |

MEAN.

| | |
|--------------------------------|---|
| What do you mean ? | Que voulez-vous dire ? ✓ |
| I meant to go there. | J'avais l'intention d'y aller. ✓ |
| I mean to be obeyed. | J'entends être obéi. ✓ |
| Does he mean it ? | Est-il sérieux ? ✓ |
| He means very well. | Il a de très bonnes intentions. ✓ |
| I did not mean to do it. | Je ne l'ai pas fait exprès. ✓ |
| This sarcasm is meant for you. | { Ce sarcasme s'adresse à vous. ✓ " " est à votre adresse. ✓ |

MIND.

| | |
|--------------------------------|---|
| These children do not mind me. | Ces enfants ne m'obéissent pas. |
| Mind your business. | Occupez-vous de vos affaires. |
| Don't mind what he says. | Ne faites pas attention à ce qu'il dit. |
| Never mind. | N'importe. Ce n'est rien. |
| I do not mind that. | Cela ne me fait rien. ✓ |
| Mind what you are doing. | Prenez garde à ce que vous faites. ✓ |

MOVE.

| | |
|---|--|
| He does not move from his place. | Il ne bouge pas de sa place. ✓ |
| They are going to move to-morrow. | Ils vont déménager demain. ✓ |
| He has moved one of his pawns (in chess). | Il a joué un de ses pions. ✓ |
| He will move heaven and earth to succeed. | Il remuera le ciel et la terre pour réussir. |

PAY.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| He paid me many compliments. | Il m'a fait beaucoup de compliments. |
| I am going to pay her a call. | Je vais lui faire une visite. |
| He wants to pay his bill. | Il veut régler son compte. |
| Pay attention to what I am saying. | Faites attention à ce que je vous dis. |
| He pays ready money for everything. | Il paie tout argent comptant. |

| | |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| He is paying attention to Miss B. | Il fait la cour à Mademoiselle B. |
| I will pay you up for this. | Je vous rendrai la pareille. |
| It does not pay. | Le jeu ne vaut pas la chandelle. |

PICK.

| | |
|---|---|
| She is picking currants. | Elle cueille des groseilles. |
| The cook is picking the chickens. | La cuisinière plume les poules. |
| The dog is picking a bone. | Le chien ronge un os. |
| This man picks quarrels with every one. | Cet homme cherche querelle à tout le monde. |
| He picks out his friends badly. | Il choisit mal ses amis. |
| Pick up the gentleman's handkerchief. | Ramassez le mouchoir de monsieur. |
| The key is lost; we must pick the lock. | La clef est perdue; il faut crocheter la serrure. |

PLAY.

| | |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| She plays the piano very well. | Elle joue très bien du piano. |
| Do you like to play cards? | Aimez-vous jouer aux cartes? |
| He plays false. | Il triche au jeu. |
| He always plays high. | Il joue toujours gros jeu. |
| We played three games. | Nous avons fait trois parties. |
| You played a mean trick on me. | Vous m'avez joué un mauvais tour. |
| The Cid is to be played to-night. | On va représenter ce soir le Cid. |
| Do not play the fool. | Ne faites pas le fou. |

PUT.

| | |
|--|---|
| This must be put an end to. | Il faut y mettre fin. |
| He put several questions to me. | Il m'a posé plusieurs questions. |
| Why did you put out the fire? | Pourquoi avez-vous éteint le feu? |
| Put on your hat. | Mettez votre chapeau. |
| I am going to put it off till another day. | Je vais le remettre à un autre jour. |
| I have put away my things in the cupboard. | J'ai serré mes affaires dans l'armoire. |
| He puts aside half his income. | Il met de côté la moitié de ses rentes. |
| He has put all his papers in order. | Il a rangé tous ses papiers. |
| This house is to be put up at auction. | On va mettre aux enchères cette maison. |

You put upon him too much. Vous avez trop abusé de lui ✓
 I should like to put it off forever. Je voudrais bien le renvoyer aux
 calendes grecques.

RAISE.

You cannot raise this weight. Vous ne pouvez pas soulever ce
 poids.
 He cannot raise any money. Il ne peut pas se procurer de l'ar-
 gent.
 They have raised the price of wheat. On a haussé le prix du blé.
 He raised his voice so as to be heard. Il éleva la voix pour se faire en-
 tendre.
 They have raised the siege. On a levé le siège. ✓
 This victory will raise the courage of the army. Cette victoire va ranimer le cou-
 rage à l'armée. ✓
 I raise vegetables in my garden. Je cultive des légumes dans mon
 jardin
 He pretends to raise the dead. Il prétend ressusciter les morts. ✓
 That raised our suspicion. Cela nous fit naître des soupçons.

RISE.

The sun rises at 6 o'clock. Le soleil se lève à six heures. ✓
 He cannot rise from his bed. Il ne peut pas se relever de son lit.
 A tempest rose. Une tempête s'éleva. ✓
 The army rose against its officers. L'armée se souleva contre ses of-
 ficiers.
 The water is rising in the pipes. L'eau monte dans les tuyaux. /
 He was not made to rise so high. Il n'était pas fait pour monter si
 haut.
 The Rhine rises in Switzerland. Le Rhin prend sa source en Suisse.

SET.

You can set your watch by mine. Vous pouvez régler votre montre
 sur la mienne.
 I am going to have these diamonds set. Je vais faire enchâsser ces dia-
 mants.
 He will not set a price for it. Il ne veut pas y mettre un prix.
 The doctor will set your arm. Le médecin vous remettra le bras.
 He set a trap for you. Il vous a dressé un piège. -

| | |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| She is setting you a bad example. | Elle vous donne un mauvais exemple. |
| We must set to work. | Il faut nous mettre à travailler. |
| His father has set him up in business. | Son père l'a établi dans le commerce. |
| Who set the house on fire. | Qui a mis le feu à la maison ? |
| He sets out to-morrow. | Il part demain. |
| The sun sets at seven o'clock. | Le soleil se couche à sept heures. |
| The fine weather is setting in. | Le temps se met au beau. |
| Have you set the day ? | Avez vous fixé le jour ? |

SLEEP.

| | |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Did you sleep well ? | Avez-vous bien dormi ? |
| I did not go to sleep at all. | Je ne me suis point endormi. |
| In what room does he sleep ? | Dans quelle chambre couche-t-il ? |
| He sleeps in the open air. | Il couche à la belle étoile. |

STAND.

| | |
|---|--|
| He stood opposite us. | Il se tenait en face de nous. |
| She is too weak to stand up. | Elle est trop faible pour se tenir debout. |
| He stood up to look at her. | Il se leva pour la regarder. |
| This boy always stands first. | Ce garçon est toujours au premier rang. |
| The house stands at the corner of the street. | La maison est située au coin de la rue. |
| I cannot stand the cold weather. | Je ne peux pas supporter le froid. |
| His hair stood on end. | Ses cheveux se dressaient sur sa tête. |
| He stood still for a few moments. | Il s'arrêta pendant quelques instants. |
| As matters stand. | Au point où en sont les choses. |
| The army stood firm against the assault. | L'armée tint bon contre l'assaut. |
| Do not stand on ceremony. | Ne faites pas de façons |

STRIKE.

| | |
|----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| It has struck noon. | Midi est sonné. |
| He struck me a cruel blow. | Il m'a porté un coup sensible. |
| An idea strikes me. | Il me vient une idée. |

| | |
|---|---|
| They struck off several copies of it. | On en a tiré plusieurs exemplaires. |
| It is a very striking color. | C'est une couleur qui saute aux yeux. |
| The workmen have struck. | Les ouvriers ont fait grève. |
| Your news has struck me down. | Vos nouvelles m'ont atterré. |
| He was struck with horror. | Il était frappé d'horreur. |
| Strike a match. | Allumez une allumette. |
| We could not strike a bargain. | Nous n'avons pu conclure le marché. |
| He surrendered without striking a blow. | Il s'est livré sans coup férir. |
| Has the tree already struck root ? | Est-ce que l'arbre a déjà pris racine ? |

TAKE.

| | |
|--|--|
| I am going to take a walk. | Je vais me promener. |
| The nurse will take the children to school. | La bonne conduira les enfants à l'école. |
| The sick man has just taken an airing. | Le malade vient de prendre l'air. |
| I cannot take your advice. | Je ne peux pas suivre vos conseils. |
| I take pleasure in seeing you. | Je me plais à vous voir. |
| He takes advantage of every moment of leisure. | Il profite de chaque instant de loisir. |
| You take advantage of his kindness. | Vous abusez de ses bontés. |
| I take several newspapers. | Je suis abonné à plusieurs journaux. |
| He has come to take leave of us. | Il est venu prendre congé de nous. |
| He does not take a joke well. | Il n'entend pas raillerie. |
| This boy has taken all the prizes. | Ce garçon a remporté tous les prix. |
| Who took him prisoner ? | Qui l'a fait prisonnier ? |
| He took a great deal of trouble to please you. | Il s'est donné beaucoup de peine pour vous plaire. |
| How long does it take to go there ? | Combien faut-il de temps pour y aller ? |
| Cain took his brother's life. | Cain a ôté la vie à son frère. |
| He took himself off when he saw us. | Il se sauva en nous voyant. |
| She cannot take her eyes off you. | Elle ne peut pas vous quitter des yeux. |

| | |
|--|---|
| He takes after his mother. | Il ressemble à sa mère. |
| We took shelter from the storm. | Nous nous sommes mis à l'abri de l'orage. |
| I have taken a liking to this child. | Je me suis épris de cet enfant. |
| She has taken a great fancy to him. | Elle s'est coiffée de lui. |
| Take care ! | Prenez garde ! |
| To take time by the forelock. | Prendre l'occasion aux cheveux. |
| He has taken it into his head to come. | Il s'est mis dans la tête de venir. |
| I should have taken him to be older. | Je l'aurais cru plus âgé. |

TIE.

| | |
|--|---|
| I am going to tie the dog to the carriage. | Je vais attacher le chien à la voiture. |
| Will you tie this ribbon ? | Voulez-vous nouer ce ruban ? |
| I cannot tie a knot. | Je ne peux pas faire un nœud. |
| The thief's hands must be tied. | Il faut lier les mains au voleur. |

TRY.

| | |
|--|--|
| Try to do it. | Tâchez de le faire. |
| I tried to please him. | J'ai cherché à lui plaire. |
| Have you tried on your dress ? | Avez-vous essayé votre robe ? |
| This thief must be tried. | Il faut que ce voleur soit jugé. |
| He is trying hard to learn it. | Il s'efforce à l'apprendre. |
| I tried my very best to get there early. | J'ai fait tout mon possible pour y arriver de bonne heure. |
| He did it to try your friendship. | Il l'a fait pour mettre à l'épreuve votre amitié. |

TURN.

| | |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| He has turned catholic. | Il s'est fait catholique. |
| You have turned over a new leaf. | Vous avez changé de vie. |
| He does not know which way to turn. | Il ne sait pas où donner de la tête. |
| She turned pale. | Elle pâlit. |
| He knows how to turn everything to advantage. | Il sait tout mettre à profit. |
| I will turn him out of the house. | Je vais le faire mettre à la porte. |
| He turned the tables on you. | Il vous a rendu la pareille. |

The princes have been turned out of France. On a chassé les princes de la France.

He turned aside from the right path. Il s'écarta du bon chemin.

WALK.

Are you going to walk ?

Allez-vous à pied ?

He has gone to walk (take a walk).

Il est allé se promener.

I have just walked ten miles.

Je viens de faire dix milles à pied.

He walks very fast.

Il marche très vite.

He is walking his horse.

Il a mis son cheval au pas.

They are walking up and down.

Ils se promènent de long en large.

They are walking arm in arm.

Ils se promènent bras dessus, bras dessous.

WANT.

Do you want to go there ?

Voulez-vous y aller ?

I want to see him very much.

J'ai grande envie de le voir.

Do you want anything ?

{ Avez-vous besoin de quelque chose ?

{ Vous faut-il quelque chose ?

The necessary books are wanting.

Il nous manque les livres nécessaires.

You are wanted.

On vous demande.

It wants ten minutes to six.

Il est six heures moins dix minutes.

GENERAL INDEX.

The references are to pages; but the numbers of subdivisions occurring on the page are added in parentheses where called for, in order to the ready finding of a reference.

All French and English words are to be looked for in the Vocabularies, and not in the Index.

- a, pron'n of, 4-5; when silent, 5 (14); when elided, 5 (15); its accent-marks, 5 (16).
abstract nouns, inclusive article with, 37 (5*b*).
accent of a word, 4.
accent-marks or written accents, 2-3:—*and see* acute, circumflex, grave, *and the different vowels*.
acute accent, 3-4:—*and see the different vowels*.
address, *vous* chiefly used in, 28 (9*b*); titles used, 73.
adjectives, gender, 46-9; number, 50-1; agreement, 46-7; place, when attributive, 51-2; difference of meaning, depending on difference of place, 52 (5*c*); comparison, 54-5; adverbs from, 143-5; adj. used as adverbs, 145 (9).
adverbs, made from adjectives, 143-5; adjectives used as, 145; comparison of adv., 145; classes, 148-9; adv. of quantity, and their construction with following nouns, 40-1; negative adv. and their uses, 65-7; position of adv., 150; adv. in adjective or noun construction, 40, 149 (2*b*).
age, mode of expression of, 83 (5).
ai, diphthong, pron'n of, 11; oi sometimes written for, 12 (44*b*).
aim, ain, nasal vowels, pron'n of, 14 (50*c*).
alphabet, 1-2.
am, an, nasal vowels, pron'n of, 13; exceptions, 15 (54).
antecedent, pronoun, of relative, 112 (2), 113 (4*a*), 123-4.
apostrophe and its use, 3.
articles, 27-8:—*and see* definite *and* indefinite.
aspirate h, 18-9.
au, diphthong, pron'n of, 11 (40).
auxiliaries making compound tenses of verb, 58, 132-3; of reflexive verb, 135 (3); making passive conjugation, 131; aux. of immediate future, 129 (9*c*); of immediate past, 146 (11*b*); causative aux., 151.
b, pron'n of, 15.
bodily conditions, expressions of, 70 (6).
c, pron'n of, 16; hard and soft values of, 16; cc, 16 (58*c*); use of cedilla with, 3 (7), 16; when silent as final, 16.
capital letters, use of, 1-2, 73 (4*c*).
cardinal numerals, *see* numerals.
carrying-on of a final consonant to following vowel, 25-6.
cases mostly wanting in French, 33.
causative verb-phrases, with *faire*, 151.
cedilla, 3 (7).
ch, digraph, pron'n of, 16; how treated in syllabication, 2 (4*c*).

- circumflex accent, 3 :—*and see the different vowels.*
- close and open sounds of *e*, 7.
- comparative of adjective, 54 · of adverb, 145 ; original comp., 54, 145 ; *de* after *plus*, *moins*, 77 (9).
- comparison of adjectives, 54–5 ; of adverbs, 145.
- compound forms of the verb, with auxiliaries, 58, 86 (5).
- conditional tense (or mode), 45, 125 ; derived from infinitive, 85–6.
- conditional perfect tense, 58 (6).
- conjugation of verbs, 57 etc. : of *avoir*, 57–60 ; of *être*, 62–3 ; negative conj., 65–7 ; of regular verbs, 85 etc. ; of irregular verbs, 113 etc.
- conjugations, the three regular, 85 ; a fourth, 85 (1*a*).
- conjunctions, 157–9 ; conjunction-phrases, 158–9.
- conjunctive and disjunctive pronouns, 102–10.
- consonants, pron'n of, 15–26 :—*and see the different letters.*
- countries and provinces, the article used with names of, 43–4.
- ct* final, pron'n of, 23 (76*a*).
- d*, pron'n of, 17 ; linking of, 26 (85).
- date, expression of, 82–3.
- dative case, represented by noun with *à*, 34 (4*a*) ; dative pronoun, 103 (5), 109.
- days of week, names of, 82.
- definite article, 27 ; combinations with *de* and *à*, 33–4 ; use in partitive expression, 36–7 ; inclusive use, 37–8 ; with names of countries, 43–4 ; of mountains, 45 ; with other proper names, 44–5 ; makes superlative from comparative, 54–5, 145 ; its repetition, 28 (7) ; 55 (5*b*) ; used for possessive, 73 (5*a*).
- demonstratives, adjectives, 69 ; pronouns, 111–3.
- diæresis, uses of, 3 (8).
- diphthongs, so-called, pron'n of, 11–2 ; real diphthongs wanting in French, 11 (38*a*) :—*and see the different letters.*
- disjunctive and conjunctive pronouns, 102–10.
- division of words into syllables, 2.
- double consonants, pron'n of, 15 (56*c*).
- e*, pron'n of, 5–8 ; mute *e*, 5–6 ; *e* acute and grave, 6–7 ; *e* circumflex, 7 (24) ; *e* before consonant in same syllable, 7–8 ; exceptional cases, 8 ; elision of, when final, 8 ; written to denote the soft sound of *g*, 17 (62*c*).
- é, *e* acute, 6–7 ; é or è before *ge*, 6 (20*c*) ; é final of a verb-form before *je*, 89 (c).
- ê, *e* grave, 6–7.
- ê, *e* circumflex, 7.
- eau, pron'n of, 11 (40).
- ei, diphthong, pron'n of, 11.
- ein, nasal vowel, pron'n of, 14 (50*c*).
- elision of final vowels, 3 (9) ; of *e*, 8 (26*c*) ; of *a*, 5 (15) ; of *i*, 9 (29*b*).
- em, nasal vowel, pron'n of, 13, 14 (50*e*, 53*a*), 15 (54).
- ement, pron'n of, 8 (26*a*).
- en, nasal vowel, pron'n of, 13 ; exceptional cases, 14 (50*e*, 52*a*, 53*a*), 15 (54).
- eu, diphthong, pron'n of, 11 ; in forms of *avoir*, 11 (41*b*).
- eun, nasal vowel, pron'n of, 14 (51).
- ex-, pron'n of, 24 (81*a*).
- exclamations ; use of *quel* in, 70 ; of *que* and *quoi*, 118 (4*c*).
- expletive *ne*, in dependent clauses, 159.
- f*, pron'n of, 17.
- feminine of adjectives, how formed, 47–9 :—*and see gender.*
- final consonants, pron'n of, 15 ; linking of, 25–6.
- first regular conjugation of verbs, 85, 87–9 ; its irregular verbs, 98–100.
- fourth regular conjugation (as sometimes reckoned), 85 (1*a*).

- fractional numerals, 80.
 future tense, 41; made from infinitive, 85-6; fut. of immediate action, 129 (9c).
 future perfect tense, 58 (6).
- g, pron'n of, 17-8; hard and soft values of, 17; double, 17; final, 17; when linked, 26 (85b); orthographic use of e and u after, 17-8; gn, pron'n of, 18.
 ge, è or é before, 6 (20c).
 gender, of nouns, 27; gender of adjective words, 27 (2); of articles, 27; gender-forms of adjectives, 46-9; of pronouns, 69-70, 72-3, 107-128.
 genitive case, represented by noun with *de*, 33 (1a); genitive pronoun, 109-10.
 gerund, 57 (3c, d).
 gn, digraph, pron'n of, 18; how treated in syllabication, 2 (4c).
 grammatical subject, *ce* or *il*, 63-4, 112.
 grave accent, 3 (5):—*and see the different vowels.*
- h, pron'n of, 18-9; mute or silent and aspirate h, 18-9; h in digraphs, 19 (64g); in syllabication, 2 (4f).
 hard c, 16; ch, 16 (59a); g, 17.
 hyphen, 4 (10); used in interrogative verb-forms, 29 (10b, c); in compound numerals, 77; before object pronouns, 104, 105 (9c).
- i, pron'n of, 8-9; accent, 9 (29a); elision of final, 9 (29b).
 im, nasal vowel, pron'n of, 13 (50); exceptions, 15 (54c).
 imperative, 49; made from present indicative, 86 (6); impv. use of present subjunctive persons, 52 (7c).
 imperfect indicative tense, 34-5; made from present participle, 86 (4).
 impersonal or indefinite subject, 63-4, 112, 139-40.
 impersonal verbs, 139-42.
- in, nasal vowel, pron'n of, 13 (50).
 inclusive article, 37 (5).
 indefinite article, 28.
 indefinite pronouns, 73-4, 127-8.
 indefinite or impersonal subject, *ce* or *il*, 63-4, 112.
 indirect object, pronoun forms for, 103 (5).
 infinitive, 57 (2); sign of, 57 (2b), 154 (4b); other prepositions and preposition-phrases governing, 154 (4, 5); future and conditional made from inf., 85-6.
 interrogatives, 70, 117-9, 149 (6a), 158 (2); form of interr. sentence, 28-9, 118-9; with negative, 67 (8); interr. paraphrases, 97 (8a), 119 (7); interr. used also as relatives, 121.
 intransitive verbs, auxiliary taken by, 132-3.
 irregular verbs of first conjugation, 98-100; irr. verbs in general, 113-4; their conjugation in detail, 114-198; alphabetical list, with references, 199-201.
- j, pron'n of, 19.
 je, pron'n of, after verb, 6 (18e).
- k, occurrence and pron'n of, 19.
- l, pron'n of, 19-20; liquid l, after i, 19-20; after i preceded by other vowels, 20 (68b); exceptional cases, 19, 20.
 letters, French names of, 1.
 linking or carrying-on of final consonants to following vowels, 25-6.
 liquid l, *see* l.
- m, pron'n of, 20-1; makes preceding vowel nasal, 12-5:—*see* nasal vowels.
 masculine and feminine, *see* gender.
 material, expressed by noun with *de*, 40.
 measure, *de* used in expression of, after noun or adverb, 40; after adjective, 83 (6).

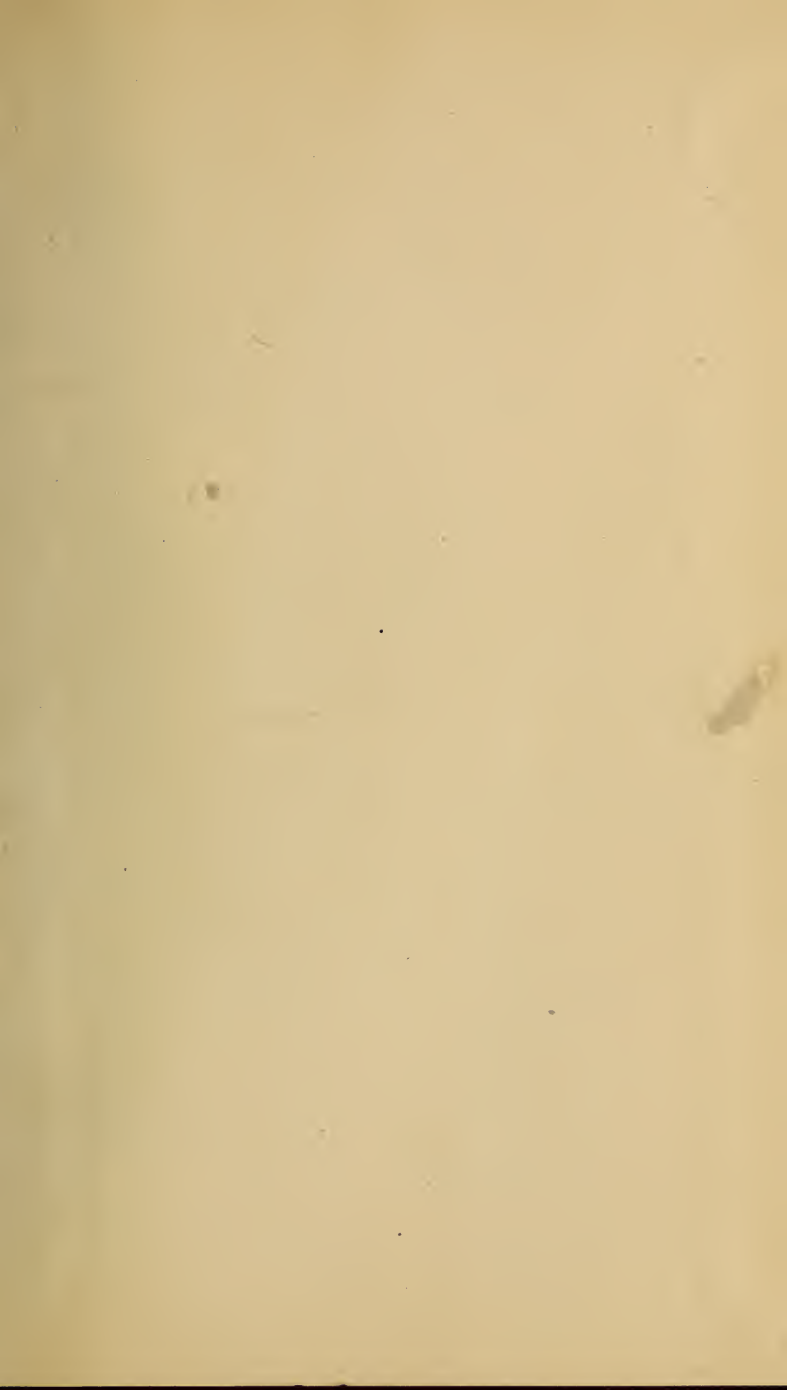
- mn**, pron'n after vowel, 14 (53*b*), 21 (69*a*).
- month**, day of, how expressed, 80 (3*a*); names of months, 82.
- mountain**, article used with the name of a, 45 (5*e*).
- mute e**, 5-6; after another vowel, 8 (28*a*), 10 (35), 12 (45).
- mute h**, 18-9.
- mute syllables**, restricted occurrence of, 6-7.
- n**, pron'n of, 21; makes preceding vowel nasal, 12-5 :—*see* nasal vowels.
- nasal vowels**, pron'n of, 12-5; **an**, **am**, **em**, **en**, 13; **on**, **om**, 13; **im**, **in**, **ym**, **yn**, **aim**, **ain**, **ein**, 13-4; **oin**, 14 (50*d*); **um**, **un**, **eun**, 14; exceptional cases, 14-5; carrying-on of their **n** when final, 26 (86*c*).
- negative conjugation**, 65-7.
- nouns**, gender, 27; number, 30-1; case, absence of, 33; case-relations as expressed by **de** and **à**, 33, 34; partitive noun, 36-7; inclusive sense of noun, 37.
- numerals**, 76-84; cardinals, 76-7; ordinals, 79-80; cardinals for English ordinals, 79-80; fractionals, 80.
- o**, pron'n of, 9; accent, 9 (31*b*).
- object-pronouns**, 103-5; place, 104-5.
- œ**, diphthong, before **il**, 11 (41*c*).
- œu**, pron'n of, 11 (41*a*).
- oi**, diphthong, pron'n of, 12; **oi** written for **ai**, 12 (44*b*).
- oin**, nasal vowel, pron'n of, 14 (50*d*).
- om**, nasal vowel, pron'n of, 13 (49).
- on**, nasal vowel, pron'n of, 13 (49); exception, 15 (54*b*).
- open and close e**, 7.
- ordinal numerals** :—*see* numerals.
- ou**, diphthong, pron'n of, 12; with following vowel, 12 (42*a*).
- p**, pron'n of, 21.
- participles**, 57-8.
- partitive sense of a noun**, 36; expressed by **de**, with or without article, 36-7; use or omission of article, 37 (3), 57, 67; of **de**, 37 (4), 67 (7*a*); **en** as partitive pronoun, 110.
- passive conjugation**, 131-2; English passive otherwise expressed in French, 127 (4*c*), 132 (4); expression of 'by' after passive, 132 (3).
- past anterior tense**, 58 (6).
- past definite tense**, so-called, 38 (7*c*) :—*see* preterit.
- past indefinite tense**, so-called, 58 (6*a*) :—*see* perfect.
- past or passive participle**, 57-8; compound tenses and passive made with, 58, 86, 131; form of participle in such combinations, 58 (5*b*), 122 (2*b*), 131 (1*b*), 133 (8), 135 (4).
- perfect tense**, 58 (6).
- personal pronouns**, 102-10; conjunctive and disjunctive, 102; subject, 102-3; object, 103-5; reflexive, 108; **en** and **y**, 109-10.
- ph**, digraph, pron'n of, 19 (64*g*); how treated in syllabication, 2 (4*c*).
- pluperfect tense**, indicative 58 (6).
- pluperfect tense**, subjunctive, use of, 34 (1*b*).
- plural of nouns**, how formed, 30-1; of adjectives, 46, 50-1.
- possessives**, adjective, 72-3; substantive, 126-7; rules for use, 73 (3, 5); replaced by article or personal pronoun, 73 (5*a*).
- possessive case**, *see* genitive.
- predicate**, form of personal pronoun in, 108 (3*d*, *e*); of interrogative, 118 (4*a*); of relative, 122 (2*a*).
- prepositions**, commonest, 33-4, 43; others, and preposition-phrases, 153-4; prep. followed by infinitive, 154.
- present participle**, 57; apparent use with **en**, or gerund, 57 (3*c*, *d*); certain tenses made from, 86 (4); also plural persons of present, 86 (4*a*), 114 (5*c*).

- present tense, indicative, its plural forms found from present participle, 86 (4*a*), 114 (5*c*); imperative found from it, 86 (6).
- present tense, subjunctive, 52; use of its persons as imperative, 52-3.
- preterit tense, 38; imperfect subjunctive found from it, 86 (7).
- principal parts of the verb, 85; formation of the other parts from them, 85-6.
- pronouns and pronominal adjectives, 69-74, 102-128; personal, 102-10; reflexive, 108, 135; possessive, 72-3, 126-7; demonstrative, 69, 111-3; interrogative, 70, 117-9; relative, 70 (5*b*), 121-4; indefinite, 74, 127-8:—*and see the different classes.*
- pronunciation, 4-26; of vowels, 4-10; of diphthongs, 11-2; of nasal vowels, 12-5; of consonants, 15-26:—*and see the different letters.*
- proper names, use of article with, 43-5; prepositions used with, 44.
- q, pron'n of, 21.
- quantity of French vowels, 4 (12).
- r, pron'n of, 21-2; final, 22; double, 22 (73*d*).
- reciprocal use of reflexive forms, 138.
- reflexive pronoun, 108 (4), 135 (2).
- reflexive conjugation, 135-8.
- regular conjugations of verbs, 85-97.
- relative pronouns and pronominal adjective, 70 (5*b*), 121-4; adverbs, 123, 149 (6*a*), 158 (2); relative not omitted, 124 (11).
- repetition, of article, 28 (7); of prepositions *de* and *à*, 34 (5).
- responsive particles, 149 (6*c*).
- s, pron'n of, 22-3; when as *z*, 22; final *s*, 22-3; *ss*, *sc*, *sch*, 22; linked or carried on, 26 (85*b*).
- s, lost, replaced by circumflex on vowel, 3 (6*c*).
- s added to 2d sing. impv. before *en* and *y*, 88 (10*a*), 129 (9*a*).
- sc, pron'n of, 23 (75*b*).
- sch, pron'n of, 23 (75*c*).
- second regular conjugation of verbs, 85, 90-2.
- silent e, h, syllables, *see* mute.
- soft sound of e, 16; of g, 17.
- ss, pron'n of, 23 (75*a*).
- strong forms of irregular verbs, 115 (4).
- subject-pronoun, its place, 102-3.
- subjunctive tenses, 52, 55; imperative use of subj. forms, 52-3; subj. present found from present participle, 86 (4); imperfect, from preterit, 86 (7).
- superlative, made from comparative, 54-5, 145.
- syllables, division of words into, 2.
- t, pron'n of, 23-4; final, 23-4; ti of endings before a vowel, 24; th, 76 (28).
- t, added to a 3d sing. before following pronoun, 29 (10*c*), 89 (9*b*).
- th, pron'n of, 24 (78); treatment in syllabication, 2 (4*c*).
- third regular conjugation of verbs, 85; as sometimes reckoned, 85 (1*a*), 190.
- time of day, expression of, 64 (4), 83.
- u, pron'n of, 9-10; after q and g, 9 (33); accent, 10 (34); written after g to denote its hard sound, 18 (62*f*); u and a following vowel, 10 (35).
- ue after c or g, before *il*, 11-2 (41*d*).
- um final in Latin words, 10 (33*c*), 14 (51*b*).
- um and un, nasal vowel, pron'n of, 14 (51).
- v, pron'n of, 24.
- verbs. conjugation of, *see* conjugation; auxiliaries, *see* auxiliaries; passive verbs, 131-2; reflexive, 135-8; impersonal, 139-42.—

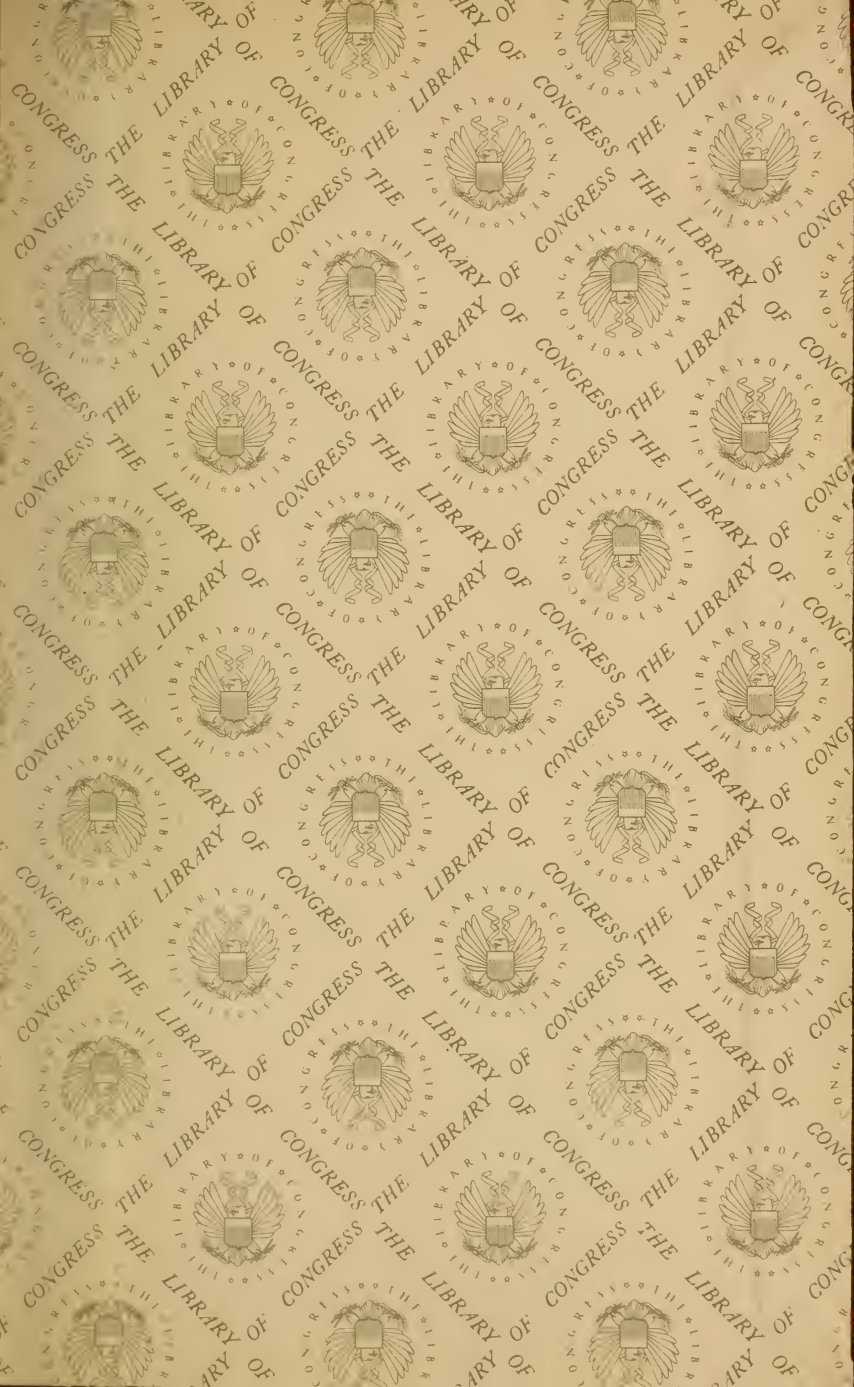
- and see the various tenses, modes, etc.*
- vowels, pron'n of, 4-15; simple vowels, 4-10; diphthongs, 11-2; nasal vowels, 12-5:—*and see the different letters.*
- w, pron'n of, 24 (80).
- weather, phrases describing, 141 (5), 150 (9a); impersonal verbs of, 140.
- week, names of its days, 82.
- x, pron'n of, 24-5; when linked, 26 (85b).
- y, pron'n of, as vowel, 10; between vowels, 10; as consonant, 25; interchange of i and y, 10 (37b), 100 (6).
- ym and yn, nasal vowel, pron'n of 13 (50b).
- z, pron'n of, 25.

JAN 16 1951

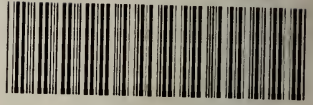
JAN 1







LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 003 128 391 7